SHURA'S WRATH

BOOK 06
PURE WHITE MAIDEN,
LING TIAN CITY

Mars Gravity

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Shura's Wrath

(网游之天谴修罗)

by

Mars Gravity

(火星引力)

Synopsis

To save his terminally ill little sister, Ling Chen enters the newly released virtual game world and joins a small gaming studio comprising entirely of women.

From now on walking upon his path towards the pinnacle.

An ancient, evil item almost forgotten by history, the “Lunar Scourge” helps forge his unsurpassable legend, and causes him to unknowingly step upon a path that is destined to be punished by the heavens, the way of the shura.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by WhatTranslate, Kaycee Liang, Sophia, Sylver135, Mr Voltaire @ Gravity Tales

Translation Edits by Allenwa,TheNo1Fan,Pebbles, xXmA5ta0f5hAd0WZzzXx, Niku @ Gravity Tales

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 501 - Have A Look For Yourself!

At that moment, time seemed to stop and everyone fell silent.

An incredibly pitiful cry suddenly destroyed this silence.

“Arghhhhhh!!!!”

The ground beneath Ling Chen’s feet cracked, and his feet sunk into the ground. However, the lower half of his body didn’t move, not even by a single step. Only the top half of his body leaned back. As for Murong Xiong Tian… as he cried out, his muscular body was blown away like a gigantic sandbag, and crashed into one of the firm walls with a ‘boom’.

The entire hall trembled, and the large chandelier in the middle of the hall violently shook, and almost fell. The wall that Murong Xiong Tian smashed into was filled with cracks. If it wasn’t nearly 1 metre thick, Murong Xiong Tian would have blown through it.

“Chief Murong…”

“This… This…”

Everyone had thought that Ling Chen would be pulverised into minced meat, and at the very least, he would be sent flying. However, no one expected that the one who would be blown away would be Murong Xiong Tian, not Ling Chen! Murong Xiong Tian had used his full strength, but the result was completely

incomprehensible.

A group of people quickly rushed over, trying to pull Murong Xiong Tian out. However, his body was stuck in the wall, and they simply couldn't move him.

The people nearest to Ling Chen stumbled back in fear. Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng's jaws dropped, unable to believe their eyes.

This was the person who had caused a disaster at the Long family's residence by himself... The person who had almost destroyed 4 of the 7 main forces by himself... The person who had killed the leader of the Blood Wolves, and defeated Murong Xiong Tian, Xuanyuan Sheng and Xuanyuan Dao... The person who the Long family had made a national fugitive...

Although many people had heard what had happened that night at the Long family's residence, and no matter how exaggerated the stories they heard were, everyone who saw Ling Chen blowing Murong Xiong Tian was so shocked that their hearts almost stopped beating. This was especially so for Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng, who knew just how terrifyingly strong Murong Xiong Tian was. At that moment they felt their scalps go numb, and their throats dried up as they shivered.

This person... Was he a person or a monster?! The sleeves on Murong Xiong Tian's right arm had become countless strips of cloth, and his entire right arm hung limp. Lines of blood also started to run down his arm, and soon, his entire right arm was stained with blood. His fingers were also bent unnaturally... each

of his fingers were completely broken. The web between his thumb and forefinger continuously dripped with blood.

He ignored the people trying to get him out, and he couldn't even feel his body. He weakly looked at Ling Chen, his eyes completely dim as he hoarsely muttered, "Impossible... Impossible..."

That night, his strength had far exceeded Ling Chen's and had only lost to Ling Chen because of his carelessness. He had felt incredibly humiliated, and frequently dreamt about taking revenge on Ling Chen. Today, he had finally found Ling Chen again, and challenged him to wash away his humiliation. However, he never thought that he would lose so badly in a competition of strength.

"Impossible? Why is it impossible?" Ling Chen walked forwards as he coldly smiled, "Murong Xiong Tian, you thought that my strength and body are far inferior to yours, and you only lost to me that night because you were careless, right? Haha... What a joke. You only focused on your carelessness, and didn't consider when I fought you, how many battles I had already fought. How many people I had already killed, how many injuries I had suffered and how much blood I had lost... "

"I'll tell you now-before I fought with you, I had already killed 2,000 people, many of whom were elite soldiers from the seven main forces. I had taken more than 300 bullets, and had 20 near-fatal injuries from the Blood Wolves. I had lost nearly half of my body, and I was so tired that I almost couldn't see. I was completely exhausted by that point, and was not even 10% as powerful as I would have been in my peak condition. It was then you appeared... That was my condition when I fought with you."

Murong Xiong Tian's eyes widened, and his face paled.

"Ha, even though I was close to death, I still beat you down. That's right, I was able to defeat you even when I was in such a weak state, so defeating you in my normal condition is extremely easy. And yet, you thought that you had lost because you were careless, and that you could easily defeat me otherwise... I simply can't understand where you got such self-confidence from. Competing with me in strength? The me from back could barely move anymore; of course I would seem weaker than you. However now... your strength is barely qualified to face off against me."

Ling Chen's words were incredibly arrogant, and didn't give Murong Xiong Tian any face. He didn't put the leader of the seven main forces in his eyes at all. Murong Xiong Tian's eyes dimmed, and he didn't say anything. Apart from the shame he felt, he was so furious that he couldn't even speak. With such strength, Ling Chen was entirely qualified to look down on him.

Everyone knew how powerful Murong Xiong Tian was. He was publicly acknowledged to be the strongest esper in China, and was a genius among espers. Before meeting Ling Chen, he had never lost to anyone except Xuanyuan Dao. To reach where he was today, he was not only talented, but incredibly hardworking.

However, how could his talent and effort compare to what Ling Chen had been through? Although Murong Xiong Tian was strong, he was still within the limits of a 'human'.

As for Ling Chen...

Although he had only spent 3 years in Heaven, he had wandered along the boundary between life and death for almost every second of those 3 years. He had to break through his limits time and time again by relying on his willpower and mental energy. He had endured pain that a normal person wouldn't suffer in a thousand lifetimes, and had continuously exceeded his limits in that sort of situation. Ling Chen had long since broken through the limit for humans.

At the same time, his body had been bathed in the medicinal baths made by the Mad Scientist, making it incredibly monstrous. The Mad Scientist was a terrifying person, and even now, Ling Chen feared him from the bottom of his heart. This fear was because of the Mad Scientist's peerless intellect and abilities. Any item from Heaven, if brought out, would be enough to send the medical world into an uproar.

While in Hell, Ling Chen continuously danced with the god of death, and crazily absorbed new skills and techniques...

How could a genius human compare with a monster whose body had been modified, and had faced death time and time again?

Murong Xiong Tian fell completely silent. It would take him a long time to recover from the psychological blow he had taken. Him saying 'there are people beyond, and heavens beyond heavens' to Ling Chen had been returned straight to him.

The hall fell deathly silent. Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng's foreheads were beaded with sweat. Although they knew that this was a national fugitive who the Long family was desperate to kill, they didn't dare to give the order to shoot him. This man had taken down Murong Xiong Tian with a single punch, and had thrown the entire Long family into chaos singlehandedly. The Su family couldn't deal with such a family. If they angered him, the consequences would be unimaginable. Right now, they could only pray that this person hadn't come to make trouble for them, so they could eventually calm him down and get him to leave... As soon as he left, they would inform the Long family, and it would be the Long family's matter.

Su Hong Cheng indicated with his eyes for the unconscious Murong Xiong Tian to be taken away. He deeply breathed in as he said, "To be able to defeat Murong Xiong Tian with a single punch at such a young age is simply incredible... incredible... I must say, although I'm a generation older than you, I wholeheartedly respect you. However, I must ask-why have you come to the Su family today? From memory, our Su family doesn't have any grievances with you... if you need our Su family to help with anything, especially for a young man like you, we'll be happy to help."

No one felt that it was strange for Su Hong Cheng to say such a thing... they could only try to get along with this monstrous young man amiably. They could not, under any circumstances, attack him. Otherwise, they would face disaster.

Ling Chen lightly smiled. Because he was Su'Er's father, he was more courteous with him, "Mayor Su is too courteous. Indeed, I don't have any grievances with the Su family, and I'm not here to make trouble for the Su family, nor do I need your help with

anything…”

Hearing Ling Chen say this, Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng let out a breath of relief… thank goodness he wasn’t here to make trouble for the Su family. Ling Chen continued to speak, “I came here because there was something I couldn’t tolerate.”

“Something you can’t tolerate?” Su Hong Cheng frowned.

“That’s right.” Ling Chen’s smile disappeared as his voice became cold, “I’ve admired princess Su’Er for a long time, and felt she’s an incredibly rare type of girl. Such a gentle and kind girl should receive all the happiness in the world, but I heard that Mayor Su wanted to marry her to trash like Xuanyuan Xue Yi… I simply couldn’t accept this, so I had to come and put an end to it. Otherwise, princess Su’Er’s entire life will be ruined.”

“Who… Who are you scolding!” Xuanyuan Sheng and Xuanyuan Xue Yi flew into a fit of rage, especially Xuanyuan Xue Yi. His face instantly darkened, and became incredibly sinister. As the successor to the Xuanyuan family, he had always been praised and respected, and had never been spoken to like this before.

Su Hong Cheng frowned, and he felt quite displeased as he coldly said, “Young man, your words are too excessive. No matter how you look at it, Xuanyuan Xue Yi is a one in a million young man, and has almost no flaws. In his generation, there are very few people who can compare to him. This is something everyone in Beijing knows. Even if one wanted to find fault in him, it would be incredibly difficult; What right do you have to talk about him in such a way? Moreover, Xuanyuan Xue Yi wholeheartedly loves

Su'Er, so why wouldn't I give my daughter to such a man?"

"One in a million? Almost no flaws? Hahahaha..." Ling Chen reacted as if he had heard the funniest joke in the world. He wildly laughed for a while, and laughed so hard that he bent backwards. Su Hong Cheng became even angrier as he coldly yelled, "What are you laughing about?!"

"I'm laughing at how some people can be so stupid." Ling Chen stopped laughing as his face instantly became grim, "Someone of your status shouldn't be an idiot. However, it seems that I was wrong. Ah, I can't be bothered wasting time with you. Have a look for yourself!"

As he spoke, Ling Chen expressionlessly raised his hand and loudly clicked. The 10 or so large screens around the hall instantly lit up.

Chapter 502 - The Famous Xuanyuan Xue Yi

As the screens lit up, everyone saw a man and 2 women wrapped together. They were tumbling around on the bed, making unsightly noises.

As if the creator of this video was afraid people's eyes would be tainted, the video had been mosaiced, but the scene was still unbearable to look at. Everyone was completely stunned, and some women cried out. Su'Er gasped and tightly covered her eyes with her hands.

Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng were dumbfounded. They were about to ask Ling Chen what was going on when suddenly one of the women spoke.

"Young master Xuanyuan... I heard... you're going to be engaged... to Mayor Su's daughter... tomorrow..."

The woman's voice was soft and weak, and incredibly seductive. The name she spoke caused everyone's head to buzz, and the voice that spoke next caused everyone's faces to fall.

"Heheheh... that's right... once tomorrow night's engagement party is over, the Su family's little beauty won't be able to escape. I've waited for this day for a long time."

Everyone could tell that this voice was Xuanyuan Xue Yi's! When the screen had lit up, Xuanyuan Xue Yi had felt a bit confused, and felt that the scene looked quite familiar. When the woman had

spoken, a look of horror appeared on his face.

Suddenly, every pair of eyes was fixed on him. Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng, who were about to ask what was happening, stood stunned. More and more unsightly scenes filled the screen as the dialogue continued.

“Then… after you have the Su family’s beautiful daughter… will you throw us away…”

“Of course not, you’re my little darlings. How could I give you up?”

“But she’s the Su family’s daughter; their only daughter. If her father or uncle found out, we…”

“Hahaha! You don’t need to worry about that at all! The beautiful Su’Er is reputed to be incredibly gentle and obedient; such a girl is easier to train than a kitten. When she falls into my hands, I’ll train her well, and make her do as I wish. When that time comes, she’ll be willing to join us in a foursome… Hahahaha… not only will she not tell her family, she’ll help me keep this secret. Plus, so what if the Su family finds out? The Su family only has a single heir, and after tomorrow, everyone will know that she’s mine. Even if I plan to keep her as a pet, what can they do to me? After a while, won’t the Su family belong to my Xuanyuan family? Hahaha…” .... Apart from the lewd sounds and dialogue from the video, the hall was completely silent. Everyone felt that this ‘birthday banquet’ was becoming more and more amusing. The man’s face in the video had long since been revealed, and it was Xuanyuan Xue Yi without a doubt. Everyone’s hearts

started to wildly thump-They had come with the intent to have fun at this banquet, but never in their wildest dreams did they think something like this would happen.

Something big had happened!

Ling Chen was expressionless, and he coldly gazed at Su Hong Cheng, waiting for his reaction. Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng's faces gradually darkened, and as they watched on, their bodies began to tremble.

However, the one who was trembling the most was, without a doubt, Xuanyuan Xue Yi. And it was out of fear, not anger.

"XUANYUAN XUE YI!!"

Su Hong Cheng's roar sounded like a peal of thunder, causing every person's body to shake. Right now, Su Hong Cheng was so angry that he felt as if his hair was going to stand... He had always greatly appreciated Xuanyuan Xue Yi, and had always praised him to one of the most outstanding young men in his generation. These years, he had been incredibly happy and relieved that he had found a good family for his daughter.

However, what he had just seen on that screen... He was too focused on the video to wonder why all of the screens had suddenly started to play this video. Instead, he watched as the Xuanyuan Xue Yi that he had appreciated so much make love with 2 other women on the night before his engagement party... Perhaps just his actions wouldn't have made Su Hong Cheng so angry. After all,

these young masters of such powerful families always had some bad habits. However, the words he said, especially regarding Su'Er, completely humiliated the Su family.

Su Hong Cheng's chest heaved, and he felt that his chest was about to explode, "... What a good Xuanyuan Xue Yi..." He had called Xuanyuan Xue Yi by his full name both times, and it wasn't just the affectionate 'Xue Yi' anymore. He glared at Xuanyuan Xue Yi's pale face as he furiously roared, "Give my daughter... and my Su family... and explanation for your words!!"

Xuanyuan Sheng was also dumbfounded. He simply wasn't prepared for such a turn of events. If his right arm was better, he would have slapped Xuanyuan Xue Yi. For Su'Er to publicly reject them, and with so many rich and powerful families present, the Su family had to give them an explanation or compensation. However, now it was their Xuanyuan family who had to give an explanation. The man in the video was indeed Xuanyuan Xue Yi; how could his father not recognise him? The things he did were enough to make the Su family furious, but the words he said were enough for the Su family to execute him on the spot... They had completely and utterly humiliated and offended the Su family.

Su Yi Cheng's face was as black as the bottom of a pan. He didn't say anything as he coldly stared at Xuanyuan Sheng and Xuanyuan Xue Yi. His piercing stare made it difficult for Xuanyuan Shen to even muster up the courage to meet his gaze. As for Xuanyuan Xue Yi, being stared at by so many people made it difficult for him to even breathe. Despite attaining quite some mastery over his body through martial arts, he couldn't stop his body from shaking... If this video was fake, with Xuanyuan Xue Yi's personality and mindset, he would have remained completely calm.

However, he knew better than anyone else that this video was real. If it was anyone else, seeing that a video of such a scene had been taken, and was now publicly displayed, they would also be scared stiff. Moreover, who was Xuanyuan Xue Yi? He was the successor to the Xuanyuan family, and had incredible abilities... and yet, he hadn't detected anyone recording him. This was what Xuanyuan Xue Yi was most shocked about.

"U-Uncle Su... this video... is fake... it's fake! Someone used CGI to make this video... how... how could I do such a thing and say such words!!"

Xuanyuan Xue Yi loudly tried to defend himself, but his words sounded extremely meek. This was because his current emotional state attested to his guilt. As the successor to the Xuanyuan family, if this video was fake, he would be incredibly furious. However, he looked as if he had taken a massive blow.

"Fake? Do you think I'm blind and deaf?" Su Hong Cheng's voice trembled, showing just how enraged he was.

Xuanyuan Sheng let out a long breath. With the current situation at hand, as well as the fact that they were on the Su family's territory, he could only lower his head, "Lil brother Su, it's actually not as serious as you think. Xue Yi's normally incredibly respectful to the Su family... those words... In that state, he was simply rambling, and had no idea what he was saying."

The Su family's numbers had started to dwindle since 3

generations ago, but they were still a powerful family. This was especially true for Su Yi Cheng-the military power he had was something even the Long family had to respect, so if Xuanyuan Sheng decided to take the hard approach, and enter into conflict with the Su family, it wouldn't be beneficial for either family.

Just as Su Hong Cheng was about to speak, a person hurriedly ran in. He was wearing the Su family's exclusive clothing, and no one stopped him. As soon as he entered, he yelled, "Sir, things are bad... hackers have taken over the family's media control centre, and we've completely lost control. All of the display devices have connected to China's news channel. The hackers are too skilled, and we're unable to take back control. We need sir to contact the 'Honker' Alliance to help... I'm afraid some of our Su family's private information will be leaked."

Su Hong Cheng was already quite angry, and he knew that the media control centre being taken over was because of Ling Chen. He impatiently waved his hand, "Alright, I got it; don't worry about this for now. Without my orders, no one's allowed to come in... wait!! What did you say? China's news channel?!"

Whoosh!!

The entire hall was sent into a frenzy. Xuanyuan Xue Yi looked stunned for a few seconds before his eyes widened and he paled even more.

"Hahahaha..." the only one who dared to laugh in this sort of situation was Ling Chen. He looked at the trembling Xuanyuan Xue Yi as he said in delight, "That's right, China's news channel,

which is the most viewed channel in all of China. Right now, it's the prime time for people to watch the news, and countless people just saw that video. Before, only a small circle of people knew young master Xuanyuan's name. However, from tomorrow onwards, all of China will know young master Xuanyuan's name, hahahaha..."

The screens suddenly turned grey with static, and after a while, they gradually lit up again. A panicked-looking news reporter appeared, and yelled, "Dear audience! Dear audience... we just suffered a severe attack from hackers, and our signal was hijacked, leading to a... serious incident. We profusely apologise, and we will strengthen our channel's security in future. We promise such a thing will not happen again. We are willing to bear all consequences, and those evil hackers..."

When everyone saw that familiar-looking news reporter, they completely understood what had happened... They realised that the unsightly video of Xuanyuan Xue Yi and the 2 women hadn't just been played here as a video, but had been broadcast on China's most viewed TV channel, and had been viewed by people all over China...

The way the people looked at Xuanyuan Xue Yi had completely changed-they were now all looks of pity.

Chapter 503 - The Sword That Ended A Lineage

Xuanyuan Xue Yi had essentially performed an AV show in front of all of China, and it was an extravagant threesome. After today, this matter would soon spread to the rest of the world.

From today onwards, almost every single person would know Xuanyuan Xue Yi's name. Following which, his life would be half-destroyed. His reputation had been completely annihilated, and despite being the young master of the Xuanyuan family, he wouldn't have the face to ever go out again. Furthermore, it was as if a tub of dung had been poured on the Xuanyuan family that had once seemed mysterious and powerful to outsiders.

Even Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng couldn't help but pity Xuanyuan Xue Yi. They also marvelled at how vicious the mastermind behind all this was... these methods were simply too cruel. Of course, the mastermind was Ling Chen-could he have some sort of irreconcilable hatred with Xuanyuan Xue Yi?

Could it be... that this was the beginning of his revenge against the Long family?

Xuanyuan Xue Yi looked like a duck that had been scared stiff by thunder, and didn't move an inch. He felt as if the world was spinning around him, and he was woken up by Ling Chen's wild laughter. His handsome face became as vicious as a demon's, and he destroyed his elegant image as he hoarsely roared, "Ling Chen! There are no grievances between us, and yet, you... you!!!"

The extreme shock and humiliation Xuanyuan Xue Yi felt caused him to be unable to even finish his sentence. The people near Ling Chen all subconsciously took a step back, trying to get as far away from him as possible. This sort of humiliation being broadcast to the entire country, and potentially the entire world, was even crueller than killing someone tens of times.

"Eh? There are no grievances between us?" Ling Chen spoke in a mocking tone, "How do you know there are no grievances between us?"

"I'll kill you!!"

This was the first time in his life Xuanyuan Xue Yi had lost control like this. He furiously roared as he jumped down from the stage and rushed towards Ling Chen. How could the Xuanyuan family's number 1 expert in the younger generation have ordinary skills? His agile body reached Ling Chen in an instant, and knocked everyone in his path away.

"Xue Yi, stop!!"

Xuanyuan Sheng roared out. He wasn't any less angry than Xuanyuan Xue Yi, but he had fought with Ling Chen twice, and knew just how monstrously powerful Ling Chen was. Just then, Murong Xiong Tian had lost to him pitifully, and although Xuanyuan Xue Yi was quite strong, he was nothing in front of Ling Chen.

Xuanyuan Sheng's right arm still hadn't fully recovered, and his body was still a bit weak. As such, he couldn't stop Xuanyuan Xue Yi at all. By the time he had yelled out, Xuanyuan Xue Yi was right in front of Ling Chen, and pulled at his waist as something flashed. He had pulled out a slim and flexible sword from around his waist. The people from the Xuanyuan family always carried a sword on them. In an era where cold weapons were completely suppressed by modern weapons, carrying a sword around openly would only attract unnecessary attention. As such, when they went out, they would always bring a flexible sword, with their belts acting as the sheathe.

As soon as the flexible sword appeared, it created a net of illusory swords which covered Ling Chen as Xuanyuan Xue Yi roared out. It seemed that Xuanyuan Xue Yi wanted to cut Ling Chen into pieces. Ling Chen coldly laughed, and surprisingly, held out his hand towards the approaching net of illusory swords... compared to how fast Xuanyuan Xue Yi's illusory swords were moving, Ling Chen's hand seemed incredibly slow. As his hands and the illusory swords were about to clash, everyone could already see Ling Chen's hand being split into a bloodied mess...

A hum sounded out...

The bloody scene didn't eventuate. Everyone heard a gentle hum as the vast net of illusory swords disappeared, and the true flexible sword appeared. It was about 1 metre long and less than 2 inches wide, and was incredibly lustrous. It contained a might that everyone could detect, and definitely wasn't forged from ordinary metals. Xuanyuan Xue Yi was holding the sword on one end, while the other end was caught between Ling Chen's fingertips.

Ling Chen had easily caught the flexible in between his fingertips, as if he was casually taking something out from this pocket. The countless illusory swords were like jokes in front of him.

Xuanyuan Xue Yi looked bewildered, as his eyes became as wide as plates-he was incredibly shocked. He subconsciously tried to jerk the flexible sword back, but found that the sword did not even budge. It was as if the sword wasn't caught between Ling Chen's fingertips, but was stuck under a heavy mountain.

Seeing the sweating Xuanyuan Xue Yi in front of him, Ling Chen suddenly recalled many memories that he didn't want to remember. Anger and resentment began to well up inside of him as he released the flexible sword and rushed towards Xuanyuan Xue Yi, kicking him in the abdomen.

He had kicked incredibly heavily, and Xuanyuan Xue Yi's body flew out as if he had been smashed by a hammer that was thousands of kilograms heavy. He flew 20 to 30 metres before crashing onto the stage.

"Xue Yi!"

Xuanyuan Sheng cried out and began to rush over. However, just as he took a single step, he saw something bright flash past. That light seemed quite familiar, and seemed to belong to the sword that never left Xuanyuan Xue Yi's side. It was travelling too fast, and seemed like a meteor. He was unable to do anything as it pierced towards Xuanyuan Xue Yi... It accurately pierced right between his legs.

Puchi…

Blood flew through the air, and a wail like a pig being slaughtered sounded out. Everyone who heard this felt their hearts seize and their scalps numb… Xuanyuan Xue Yi, who was stunned by Ling Chen's vigorous kick, was shocked back to his senses by the intense pain. His hands gripped the lower half of his body as he screamed and cried.

Everyone could clearly see a pool of blood gathering underneath his body…

"Xue… Yi!!" Xuanyuan Sheng frantically rushed over. Su Yi Cheng deeply frowned and said in a low voice to the people next to him, "Hurry and call over the military doctors."

"Dad… Dad… I… Ah…" Xuanyuan Xue Yi's bloodied hands tightly held onto Xuanyuan Sheng as he wailed, tears covering his face. Since he had become an adult, this was the first time he had cried, and he was crying so pitifully. Because of the pain from being pierced by the sword, he couldn't feel the lower half of his body.

This meant that he had lost the most important symbol to a man- this was something no man could bear. In future, no matter how high his status was, or how handsome he was, or how powerful he was, he would forever live in humiliation and would never be able to raise his head. Even a normal person could laugh at him and pity him. This successor to the Xuanyuan family would become their

shame, and the haloes around him would disappear forever... Xuanyuan Sheng's hands trembled as he ripped Xuanyuan Xue Yi's pants off. Seeing the bloodied mess, he felt as if he had been struck by a bolt of lightning... if Xuanyuan Xue Yi's genitals had simply been cut off, with the current medical expertise, there would be some hope in restoring them. However, Ling Chen had used an incredibly cruel technique when he had thrown the sword. Because of how fast the sword was travelling, no one saw it rapidly rotating as it sped through the air. When it reached Xuanyuan Xue Yi, it completely annihilated his genitals...

Hearing his son's cries of pain and despair, Xuanyuan Sheng's vision darkened and he almost fainted. In that moment, he almost started to weep as well.

Everyone present almost didn't dare to breathe. None of them had the courage to look at the smiling young man dressed in white... In front of so many people, in front of Xuanyuan Sheng, he had castrated Xuanyuan Xue Yi...

He had done this despite the Xuanyuan family's current leader being present; despite Xuanyuan Xue Yi being the successor to the Xuanyuan family!

There would now be irreconcilable hatred between this young man in white and the Xuanyuan family, and they would never be able to co-exist.

Moreover, despite facing the Xuanyuan family, he had still acted so unreservedly and without hesitation. Evidently, he didn't care about the Xuanyuan family hating him-in fact, it seemed like he

wanted them to hate him as much as possible.

What sort of enmity did he have with the Xuanyuan family for him to do such a thing? Even a madman would have no reason to act like this.

2 medical doctors from the Su family quickly rushed over. As soon as they entered, they were given a big fright from Xuanyuan Xue Yi's cries of despair. When they came over to Xuanyuan Xue Yi and examined his injuries, they looked at each other then looked at him pitifully, and took him away... when they passed Ling Chen, he did not move at all, as if he hadn't seen them taking Xuanyuan Xue Yi away. After all, he never planned to kill Xuanyuan Xue Yi.

How could allowing Xuanyuan Xue Yi to happily die get rid of the hatred that he had stored up within him for more than 10 years?

As he stood up, Xuanyuan Sheng's tear-stained face calmed down. He knew that his son's life was essentially over. His reputation had been destroyed, and even his body had lost the right to be called a man. Xuanyuan Sheng stood in front of Ling Chen, but did not go berserk or burst out in fury. His eyes were calm and dim as he slowly asked, "Ling Chen... if you wanted to take revenge, why not take it out on the Long family, as opposed to my Xuanyuan family... If you wanted to take revenge on the Xuanyuan family, why did you take it out on my son, as opposed to me... Xue Yi... He never attacked you in the past, so why did you attack him so cruelly..."

"Good question..." Ling Chen coldly nodded as he closed his eyes and slowly spoke, "My little sister Shui Ruo had no grievances with

the Long family or the Xuanyuan family. She was incredibly kind, and it was because of her, I didn't even go near the Long family for 6 years, despite how much I hated them. However..."

Ling Chen's body suddenly started to tremble as his expression became savage. He hoarsely roared, "Why did you people kill her?! Why?? Tell me why!! What did she do wrong?? Give me a reason!!"

Xuanyuan Sheng was completely dumbfounded. How could he not have known that Ling Chen's little sister Shui Ruo had died when the Long family attacked their home. He knew that because of this, Ling Chen had prepared to give up his life and attack the Long family to take revenge.

Chapter 504 - I Need A Hostage

Xuanyuan Sheng did not ask anything else, nor could he answer Ling Chen's question, as he slowly walked forwards. This incredibly powerful leader of the Xuanyuan family walked like an old man who was approaching his coffin, and had none of the spirit he had before.

When he walked past Ling Chen, he didn't stop, nor did he attack, and Ling Chen did not try to stop him either.

Xuanyuan Sheng wanted to dismember Ling Chen's body, but he couldn't defeat him even in his best condition, let alone now. With his right arm heavily injured, he simply wasn't his opponent. If he was a normal father, even if he knew it would result in his death, he would have attacked Ling Chen. However, he was the Xuanyuan family's leader. He used all of his willpower to stop himself from attacking, because he couldn't afford to die here. If he died, the family would descend into chaos, and he would lose any chance to take revenge for his son in future.

Despite being the leader of the Xuanyuan family, he had watched as his son was castrated before him. This sort of humiliation made him feel like breaking down, and he held it within him as he walked towards the door. Ling Chen did not say a single word, much less anyone else.

"Ling Chen, I won't forget this hatred from today. The Xuanyuan family... will await your revenge any time." He paused, then suddenly asked, "I hope you answer a question of mine... Murong Xiong Tian's strength and body have approached the limit for

humans, and he can't become any stronger. This is something all espers have agreed on since many years ago. As for you, your strength and body all surpass Murong Xiong Tian's. Moreover, your speed, eye sight, reaction speed... are all incomprehensible. Moreover, you're only in your twenties..."

Ling Chen: "....."

"I've never heard of a person like you before! No matter if it's in China, or in the entire world, there has never been such a person before. I want to know... are you a human or not?!"

Xuanyuan Sheng's question seemed quite strange. He was asking the person right in front of him if he was a human or not.

However, this question did not seem strange to Xuanyuan Sheng at all. He had even considered whether Ling Chen was some sort of man-made monster... an incredibly powerful cyborg made by an incredibly technologically advanced country... or a being from another world...

He was a martial artist, one of the very few martial artists left in the world, and one that stood at the peak. He was very clear as to how strong Ling Chen was... His strength was something that humans simply could not possess.

"Tell Long Zheng Yang and Long Tian Yun not to step outside. And you, before I change my mind, disappear from my sight. Otherwise, I might become interested in your left arm as well."

Ling Chen coldly laughed as he spoke. This was his answer for Xuanyuan Sheng; an incredibly harsh answer.

Xuanyuan Sheng didn't dally anymore, and immediately left.

The hall once again lapsed into silence.

A video of the Xuanyuan family's young master had been shown on China's news channel... Xuanyuan Xue Yi had been publicly castrated... Xuanyuan Sheng had walked off in humiliation... If Ling Chen said he was a demon, who would say otherwise?

With a demon so close to the everyone's hearts beat rapidly, and they held their breaths, as they were afraid they could catch the attention of this demon. All of them were desperate to leave and run as far away as possible, but with Ling Chen standing near the door, who would dare to walk towards him?

At this moment, Ling Chen spoke. He looked at Su Hong Cheng on the stage as he calmly said, "Mayor Su, shouldn't you be thanking me?"

Su Hong Cheng stared at Ling Chen dumbly.

"If I didn't come here, you would have inadvertently ruined your daughter's life. Would you agree?"

Hearing Ling Chen say this, Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng's foreheads erupted with cold sweat.

Thinking back to the video, Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng were so furious that they felt their heads were going to explode. Seeing Xuanyuan Xue Yi being castrated, these 2 men who wielded much power, who had greatly appreciated him before, felt quite delighted. If it wasn't for Ling Chen's sudden appearance tonight, the engagement party would have gone ahead smoothly, and they would have pushed their beloved Su'Er into a terrifying abyss.

Su Hong Cheng sincerely said, "Although I can't agree with some of your methods, but my Su family should indeed thank you."

"And... what else?" Ling Chen smiled, "You're a Mayor in China, and Chief Su holds great military power in China. As for me, I'm a national fugitive; the head of a terrorist organisation. Plus, I just severely injured an important person right in front of you. With your positions, you should be capturing me right away... No, you should be executing me on the spot.

Execute him on the spot? Su Hong Cheng's eyes twitched... of course Su Hong Cheng wanted to. This demonic young man was simply too terrifying. Just by looking at him, this young man made him, the Mayor of Beijing, feel incredibly suffocated. However, how could he not know that this man had singlehandedly turned the Long family upside down? He had also personally said that he had killed 2000 people from the Long family... This was despite the soldiers stationed at the Long family all being elites! There were even super elites from the seven main forces. Killing 2000 people was simply mind-blowing. That night, Murong Xiong Tian had been utterly defeated, Xuanyuan Sheng's arm had been ripped off, and Xuanyuan Dao had been heavily injured, and all while he had taken hundreds of bullets and had countless wounds on his body...

and just then, he had once again destroyed Murong Xiong Tian with a single punch.

Wanting to execute a monster like this? What a joke!

If someone accidentally shot, they would give this monster an excuse to massacre the entire Su family... If even the Long family had to pay a heavy price to stop him, how could the Su family stop him? He would simply obliterate their entire family!

Su Yi Cheng spoke, “What you said is quite true. With our positions, we should execute you on the spot. However, you showed us a great kindness in preventing this engagement from going ahead. As such, we won’t make things difficult for you. You can leave, and no one here will stop you.”

Su Yi Cheng’s words gave the Su family a way out... Execute Ling Chen? They simply didn’t dare to try. Let him go? If the Su family let a national fugitive go, what would everyone say? As such, Su Yi Cheng gave the Su family a justification for letting Ling Chen go.

To the Su family, as well as everyone else present, they were desperate for this demon to leave... Of course, that was everyone except Su’Er. What caused them to be overjoyed was that Ling Chen smiled and calmly replied, “Since the Xuanyuan family’s people have left, there’s no reason for me to stay. Since Chief Su and Mayor Su are so magnanimous, not leaving now would be rude of me. I hope to see you again.”

After speaking, he turned and started to walk away.

Ling Chen's words were a misdirection: he had made everyone believe that he had come here to take revenge on the Xuanyuan family, and had nothing to do with the Su family.

Su'Er opened her mouth and couldn't help herself from taking a step forwards as she watched Ling Chen leave.

Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng let out a sigh of relief. They looked at each other, and felt as if a massive burden had been lifted off their shoulders.

The guests also wiped the cold sweat off their brows... the demon was finally leaving.

Ling Chen pushed open the half-opened door, and the instant he stepped out of the hall, the sound of hundreds of guns being loaded rang out. Hundreds of guns pointed at his head, and all of them were heavy machine guns. Hundreds of metres away, there were 10 snipers positioned at different locations with many red dots pointing at his forehead and temples.

Outside the hall, the densely gathered machine guns caused the guests' faces to fall. Some of the women covered the mouths, holding back their cries of fear. Ling Chen's eyes narrowed, and half-turned around as he coldly asked, "This is what you meant by no one stopping me when I left?"

This group of people had been called here by Su Yi Cheng to deal with Ling Chen. However, because Ling Chen had no intention to

make things difficult for their Su family, these people were not needed. Su Yi Cheng hurriedly ordered, “Immediately lower your guns and retreat. No one’s allowed to stop him!”

This command was issued by Su Yi Cheng, and it was like an imperial decree. Immediately, the sounds of guns being put away sounded out as all of the soldiers outside took 2 steps back, creating a path for Ling Chen. The red dots on Ling Chen’s head also disappeared. Ling Chen harrumphed, and told around, and looked at Su’Er in the eyes… and saw a look of worry and reluctance to see him leave. Ling Chen’s mouth lifted up into a smile.

Whoosh!

A gust of wind suddenly rose up as Ling Chen stepped back into the hall at in incredible speed. He was simply too fast, and no one even saw him clearly. All they saw was a white blur flash past, and in an instant, he had reached the stage.

“Ahhh!!”

Cries of shock sounded out as everyone looked over to the stage. Ling Chen was standing behind Su’Er with a cold smile on his face. One hand was on her arm, while the other was around her neck. Su’Er’s timid eyes trembled, and seemed to be filled with tears. Evidently, she was utterly terrified.

“What are you doing? Let her go!!” Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng were horrified, and yelled out.

“What am I doing? What are you doing?” Ling Chen calmly asked.

Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng immediately realised why he had done this. Su Yi Cheng hurriedly replied, “We’ll definitely let you safely depart; the people at the door won’t attack you, no matter what… just let her go!”

“Haha…” Ling Chen coldly laughed, “Right now, they won’t attack me. However, when I’m walking through them, all Chief Su needs to do is make a gesture, and I’ll be shot into a hornet’s nest. Wouldn’t that be a sad death. I don’t think your Su family’s soldiers’ flashy equipment is just for show.” “… I’ll immediately tell them to retreat to somewhere where you can’t see them!” Su Yi Cheng was so worried that his entire forehead was covered with sweat, and he wanted to slap himself… why hadn’t he asked them to retreat when he asked Ling Chen to leave?

“Retreat? To somewhere where I can’t see them? So that they can launch a surprise attack on me?” Ling Chen continued to coldly smile. He stroked Su’Er’s neck with his fingers, feeling her soft skin. The ticklish feeling caused Su’Er to squirm, and Su Yi Cheng and Su Hong Cheng became so scared that they began to tremble.

“I swear on my honour, as well as the Su family’s future…”

“Swear? The thing that’s worth the least in the world is promises…”

“What do you want then?!”

“Very simple,” A mysterious look appeared in Ling Chen’s eyes, “I need a hostage to guarantee my safety as I leave.”

Chapter 505 - Leaving The Su Family's Residence

The Long family hadn’t publicised the fact that Ling Chen was Ling Tian-In fact, they didn’t dare to publicise it, and had tried to keep the information from being spread.

Ling Tian was like a god to Chinese players, and held the same status as the respected Eve. Because of Ling Tian’s existence, China had been elevated to a new position on the international stage, and players all over the world were familiar with his name. Even players in the west began to discuss who was superior between him and Eve. Never had such a person appeared in China’s history before.

As such, Ling Tian was now the glory of China, and held an incredible position within the hearts of the Chinese players. If Ling Tian issued a call for action within the game, the effects would be unimaginable. This was especially so after his trip to the East Ocean Continent-Ling Tian had almost become a hero to every Chinese player. The conflict between China and Japan was had to reconcile, and the enmity between them had grown deeper and deeper. No one had ever caused Japan to suffer like this before.

If the Chinese players found out that Ling Tian was actually the Ling Chen who the Long family had made a national fugitive, the consequences would be unimaginable. However, what was certain was that no matter how powerful the Long family was, if the news that Ling Tian was Ling Chen was spread, everything would be out of their control. Moreover, the reason for the Long family’s disaster was that they had sent people to attack Ling Tian after

discovering his real life identity... Causing them to draw Ling Chen's hatred, resulting in a bloody catastrophe.

Currently, the families close to the Long family, such as the Xuanyuan and Su families, believed that the Long family had attacked Ling Chen because they discovered that he was the one who attacked them 6 years ago. If people found out that the Long family's disaster was a result of Long Tian Yun's selfish revenge on Ling Chen for events that happened in the game, the Long family would suffer incredible shame.

Ling Tian and Su'Er had both belonged to Heart's Dream, which had once been the number 1 guild on the Guild Rankings-this was something the Su family had been delighted about. If the Su family had known Ling Tian was Ling Chen, they wouldn't have been worried at all. In fact, they probably would have laughed out loud.

However, because they didn't know, Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng had been sweating bullets the entire time... they only knew that this young man was a madman and a demon! He was capable of doing anything, and he could kill someone as casually as chopping cabbage. Seeing that Su'Er had fallen into the hands of this demon, these 2 men who held incredible statuses and had been through many storms felt their bodies erupt in sweat, and they trembled as their hearts almost jumped out of their throats.

"Hostage? If you need a hostage, you can take me... I'm a much better hostage than my daughter, so please release her!" Su Hong Cheng threw away the gun that he had kept hidden, and raised his hands into the air as he walked towards Ling Chen.

“There’s also me…” Su Yi Cheng also threw his gun away, “If you need a hostage, we’re much better than a little girl. Plus, we don’t know any martial arts, so with your skills, we won’t be able to even resist. With the two of us, you should be satisfied, right… Hurry up and let her go, and we’ll go with you.”

“Dad… Uncle…”Su’Er’s eyes became red, and the tears that she had tried to keep in started to fall, “Don’t worry about me… I’ll be fine…”

She was more sure than anyone that the person behind her wouldn’t hurt her.

“Stop.” Seeing that Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng were walking closer, Ling Chen coldly spoke. He then slowly and expressionlessly said, “Chief Su, Mayor Su, I don’t have much patience. From this moment onwards, follow my instructions carefully. I don’t want to hear any nonsense, nor do I want to see you do anything stupid. Otherwise, I’ll immediately do something you don’t want to see. I always keep my word.”

Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng immediately reacted as if they had been frozen, and didn’t dare to move an inch. Their mouths opened and closed, but they couldn’t say anything, afraid that Ling Chen really would do the unthinkable. They could only plead Ling Chen with their eyes… There was not a hint of threatening or warning in their eyes. He had killed more than 2000 people at the Long family’s residence, and had publicly castrated the Xuanyuan family’s eldest son-what wouldn’t he dare to do to their princess Su’Er? Was there anything that he didn’t dare to do?

“Provide a spacious car for me within 30 seconds; it’d be best if it was a SUV. Park it at the entrance to the hall... remember, you only have 30 seconds.”

As soon as Ling Chen spoke, Su Hong Cheng didn’t dare to dally at all. He immediately grabbed the micro-transmitter on his collar as he yelled, “Got it? Hurry up and drive my car to the banquet’s entrance! Hurry!!”

Ling Chen calmly laughed, and started to walk with Su’Er down from the hall. His hands didn’t leave her neck, but he walked slowly. Evidently, he didn’t want to make Su’Er too uncomfortable. Su’Er’s eyes were watery, and she looked at her father and uncle the entire time, but was unable to tell them the truth. She hoped they wouldn’t be too worried about her.

Under Ling Chen’s warning, Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng didn’t dare to say anything or come closer. They hesitantly followed behind Ling Chen at the same distance, and their backs were completely soaked. Seeing Su’Er fall into ‘danger’, their hearts seemed to hang in the air. They were so worried that they didn’t even think of the obvious-Ling Chen had been able to take down thousands of soldiers by himself, so how could a mere 300 people threaten him at all?! Why would he need a hostage? The guests all frantically retreated as Ling Chen walked past them, afraid that they would be caught up as well.

When he reached the door, he saw that a black Land Rover was parked there-it was Su Hong Cheng’s own car. Ling Chen coldly yelled out, “Open the door!”

“Quickly! Open the door!” Su Hong Cheng was terrified, and hurriedly gave the order as well.

A man wearing a dark-coloured army uniform walked up and opened the front door and back door of the car, then retreated.

A few hidden snipers raised their sniper rifles. When the red dots appeared on Ling Chen’s head, Su Hong Cheng exploded in fury, “Bastards! Who told you to raise your guns! Put them down! Throw all of your weapons onto the ground! Without my command, no one’s allowed to pick up their weapons!!!”

The soldiers stared in shock for a few moments... Weapons were half of a soldier’s life, and their profession required them to keep their weapons on them no matter if they were eating or sleeping. It was the first time they had been ordered to throw down their weapons.

However, how could they dare to disobey Su Hong Cheng? The sound of guns being thrown to the ground filled the air... loading, aiming, firing were all actions they were incredibly familiar with. However, they had never been trained to throw down their guns before, creating a chaotic scene. Only when the sounds of sniper rifles being dropped in the distance could be heard, Su Hong Cheng wiped the sweat off his forehead. However, his legs continued to tremble... If Ling Chen had thought that he was trying to launch a sneak attack, and then taken his anger out on Su’Er, the Su family would have to flood the world with tears.

If they lost Su’Er, their Su family’s lineage would be completely finished. There would be no one to inherit all of their property and

reputation.

Within the deathly silence, Ling Chen didn't speak as he brought Su'Er to the car. He gently pushed in into the seat behind the driver's seat, then heavily closed the door. During this entire process, Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng didn't dare to say a single word. After closing the door, Ling Chen looked at the 2 men as he slowly said, "Before, I said in front of all of you that Su'Er's a very good girl. I can't bring myself to hurt such a wonderful girl, so after I've reached a safe place, I'll arrange for her to be brought back safely. As such, you don't need to worry. Haha, there's no need for me to waste time and lie to you, right?"

Ling Chen's words caused Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng to relax a little.

"Princess Su'Er has a weak personality; half of it is because of her nature, and the other half is because of the environment she grew up in... the main reason is because she's lacked a sense of security. I'm sure, as her relatives, you know why this is. I'm saying all of this because what Su'Er needs is someone who can give her a sense of security and protect her for the rest of her life... Not a filthy piece of trash like Xuanyuan Xue Yi, who only looks excellent on the outside!

"Just then, I could see that you truly care for princess Su'Er from the bottom of your hearts. However, it's a pity that you're unable to understand Su'Er's true thoughts. Many of your decisions are selfish ones, and don't allow for any resistance. I hope you can properly reflect after today's events and try to understand what she wants and what's truly best for her. I hope you don't find her a

second Xuanyuan Xue Yi!”

Just like that, Ling Chen showered China’s third highest Senior Official and the Mayor of Beijing with words of rebuke. He was furious that they had wanted to marry Su’Er to Xuanyuan Xue Yi, and had been so pleased at themselves... If Su’Er hadn’t encountered him, this engagement party would have gone through, and such a pure and flawless girl would have been ruined.

Hearing Ling Chen rebuke them like this, they didn’t become furious, but instead inwardly heaved a sigh of relief... From Ling Chen’s words, they could tell that he truly cared about Su’Er, and understood her more than even them. This further proved that he wouldn’t harm Su’Er.

“We’ll remember your words. About today’s matters... after Su’Er safely returns, we’ll apologise to her.” Su Hong Cheng said as he sighed. Miraculously, he wasn’t thinking about Su’Er’s safety anymore, but about the events that had transpired today.

“I trust that you’re a man of your word.” Su Yi Cheng only said one sentence. Just then, although Ling Chen’s words were quite sharp and harsh, they released much of the tension in the atmosphere.

Ling Chen gave a slight nod, then entered the car and closed the door. The engine roared to life, and the car started to drive off at an unhurried pace, then accelerated and sped away, leaving everyone’s vision.

Chapter 506 - Can That Person Be Me

“Chief, should we give chase?”

“Chase? Chase, my ass! All of you stay here; not a single person’s allowed to leave!”

The massive play had finally come to an end, and all of the guests had sweat all over their foreheads, and felt that they had a new lease on life. After Ling Chen left, they all hurriedly said their goodbyes and left as quickly as they could. Chao Ying and Chao Xi also said their goodbyes to Su Hong Cheng and the others, then left. Their gazes also contained traces of shock and fear, and Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng could only stiffly smile... how could they notice that their bodyguard had disappeared?

“Don’t worry, that girl will be fine.” Su Hong Cheng patted Su Yi Cheng’s shoulder as he sighed. Ling Chen gave him the feeling that he would never hurt Su’Er.

“Mmm.” Su Yi Cheng nodded, and also calmed down. His mind started to become clear, and he started to replay what had happened. He looked up towards the gates and said in a low voice, “Big bro, did you feel... that Su’Er and that Ling Chen seemed to know each other...”

“You also felt that?” Su Hong Cheng wasn’t surprised by Su Yi Cheng’s words, “Her reaction after being taken hostage was too strange. Only now did I realise that Ling Chen was wreaking havoc in the Long family’s residence despite there being thousands of

soldiers there. How could our Su family's soldiers stop him? What would he need a hostage for? Now that I think about it... it was as if Ling Chen was trying to take Su'Er out on purpose. Although Su'Er seemed a bit teary, she didn't look scared at all..."

"Forget it, just let it go. As long as Su'Er comes back, it doesn't matter. When she comes back, we can ask her. If she wants to tell us, that's good, and if she doesn't, then we'll drop this matter. After all, that young man's background is simply too sensitive. If they really know each other, then not only will Su'Er not be in any danger, but she'll be in the safest place in China."

"Haha," Su Hong Cheng nodded, then exclaimed, "However, this time, he really did us a great favour. Who knows where this monstrous young man came from and what his background is?"

.....

Stars filled the sky, and the evening wild gently blew.

It was night time during winter, so there weren't many people in the outskirts of the city. The black SUV's lights illuminated the area next to a small path, and a man and girl leaned against the car, sitting on the soft grass.

"I haven't seen the stars in so long... just like how I haven't seen big brother Ling Tian for so long." The girl gazed at the sky, a bit spaced out. Indeed, she hadn't gone out at night for a long time, and it had been a long time since she had looked up at the stars with Qi Qi and made wishes.

“Did you miss me then?” Ling Chen also half-raised his head as he smiled.

The girl lowered her head, and after quite a while, she replied in an extremely soft voice, “Mmm…”

If she had the courage, she would have said, “I missed you every day.”

“I missed you as well…” Ling Chen half-closed his eyes as his voice became softer. He said the words that Su’Er had wanted to say, “I missed you… every day.”

Su’Er’s heart slightly trembled, and felt an incredibly blissful feeling, which made her heart feel warm and sweet. It was quiet all around them, and only the sound of the car’s engine could be heard. After a few moments, Su’Er secretly looked at Ling Chen as she said in a small voice, “Big brother Ling Tian, I’m really happy… you came…”

Ling Chen smiled and replied, “Su’Er, tell me honestly-if I didn’t come today, would you have stayed silent and gone along with whatever your family wanted?”

Su’Er fell silent for a few seconds, then nodded.

Ling Chen shook his head and bitterly smiled, “Ahh, you’re too obedient.”

“My dad, mum and uncle all treat me very well.” The evening breeze suddenly became colder, and Su’Er wrapped her arms around herself as she slowly said, “Since I was little, I was my family’s hope. No matter if it was my dad or uncle, they placed the future of the Su family on my shoulders. They always gave me whatever I wanted, and never let me suffer at all. They were afraid that I would be negatively influenced by others, so I rarely went out when I was younger, and I never approached strangers. Mum almost never left my side, and took care of me with all she had…

“After mum passed away, I was sad for a long time, and felt quite scared after losing my biggest support. After that, dad and uncle treated me even better, and did whatever they could for me… I could tell that dad and uncle really did put all of their hopes on me, so I never wanted to let them down. Everything they’ve given me has always been the best of the best, and I always believed that they knew best for me. As such, even if I was unwilling, I couldn’t refuse… I didn’t want to disappoint them. Afterwards, my aunty became my mum, and she treated me even better than before. Everyone treated me really well, so I… so I…”

“Your dad and uncle put a lot of effort into arranging this marriage for you, so you didn’t want to disappoint them, right?” Ling Chen asked as he sighed.

“Mmm…” Su’Er curled up as she softly replied, “At that time, dad and uncle often talked to me about Xuanyuan Xue Yi. They said his looks, character, background, reputation and skills were all excellent. Apart from Long Tian Yun, there was no one in Beijing who could compare to Xuanyuan Xue Yi. In fact, Xuanyuan Xue Yi would be able to protect me even better than Long Tian

Yun. Afterwards, they told me that the Xuanyuan family also approved of this marriage. I could see how happy and excited dad, uncle and aunty looked so... even though I didn't even know Xuanyuan Xue Yi at that time, and couldn't even remember what he looked like, I could only nod my head."

"It was because you didn't have anyone you liked at the time," Ling Chen said, "But not too long ago, Qi Qi told me that our Su Su had someone she liked. In that case... why would you still have agreed to this marriage if I didn't come?"

Su'Er looked up and stole a glance at him as she softly replied, "Long ago, I decided... if you came today, even if dad, uncle and aunty became sad, I would bravely refuse... if you didn't come, I... I..."

If I didn't matter to you, and you weren't willing to come for me, then where would I find the reason and courage to refuse...

"Big brother Ling Tian, in a few months, it will be my 16th birthday. Can... Can you come to my birthday banquet..."

Ling Chen could clearly remember the nervousness in Su'Er's message... as well as the longing.

The cold wind blew, and Su'Er shivered. With Ling Chen's body's constitution, even if he was wearing a t-shirt and shorts, he wouldn't feel uncomfortable. However, Su'Er was only a delicate girl, and she rarely spent time outside. Ling Chen inched closer to her as he caringly asked, "Are you cold?"

“Mmm…”

“Let’s go back into the car then.”

The car’s engine hadn’t stopped running, and with the air conditioner on, it was around 20 degrees Celsius in the car. The two of them climbed into the back seats, and sat next to each other. In just a while, Su’Er’s body warmed up.

The lights inside the car automatically turned off, and Su’Er put her hands on her knees. Her entire body became tense as she lowered her head… they were in a dark, enclosed space, and she could hear Ling Chen’s breathing, which made her face flush and heart race. This was the first time she had interacted so intimately with a man before, and it was the man who she liked… apart from the sound of the car’s engine, there was nothing else disturbing them.

“Su Su…”

“Ah…” It was as if there was a little deer running around in Su’Er’s heart, causing it to rapidly thump. Her cheeks became red, and was given a small fright when Ling Chen suddenly spoke.

Ling Chen turned to face her. It was quite dark, but Su’Er could still feel his gaze on her, and her head fell even lower, “Ever since the first time I saw you, I was sure that no matter what our relationship was in future, I would never be able to forget you… The purity and gentleness in your eyes are able to move every

person's heart. Those who see you are unable to forget about you, and will want to protect you... including me.

"As such, if Su Su wants to find a person to be with her forever, to protect and cherish her forever... can that person be me?" Ling Chen used an incredibly soft voice as he spoke.

A wave of warmth flowed through Su'Er's heart, spreading throughout her entire body. He raised her head, and looked in front of her... She felt as if she had returned to her dreams, and the yearning she had felt every day.

"Su Su, you don't have to be in a hurry to reply. Let me say a few other things before you reply, alright?"

Ling Chen's words made Su'Er feel as if all of this was a dream. She had never expected this to happen, and felt as if her heart was going to explode. She had never felt such bliss and happiness before, and felt as if time had stopped... Only a single figure remained within her heart, as well as the beautiful phrase he had just uttered.

Can that person... be me...

Did you know? I've always wanted that person to be you...

Su'Er didn't reply-perhaps, she didn't know how to reply. Ling Chen leaned back against the headrest as he breathed out and said, "Su Su, do you really understand me? Deep down, am I a good

person or a bad person…’

Ling Chen slowly stretched out his right hand and placed it in front of Su’Er’s hazy eyes, “Did you know, to most people in the world, I’m an evil demon. This hand has been stained with so much blood that you can’t even imagine. The number of people I’ve killed isn’t in the tens, or hundreds, or even thousands… it’s probably in the tens of thousands. If you collected all of their corpses, you could create a mountain. In China, even the most terrifying mass-murderer would only have killed a fraction of the number of people I’ve killed.”

Chapter 507 - A Promise For A Lifetime

It was impossible for Ling Chen to remember how much blood his hands had been stained with. However, he was certain that it was in the tens of thousands.

In Hell, Ling Chen had trembled when he had taken his first life, but gradually he became numb to the sensation. In the end, killing became as casual to him as eating or sleeping, and the smell of blood became as familiar as the smell of fresh air. Life after life had ended at his hands, and pools of blood had formed because of his hands. In his eyes, taking a life was almost the same as plucking a blade of grass out of the ground.

That was until he had met Shui Ruo. Shui Ruo's purity and loveliness had caused him to realise his filth and evil in his body, which was stained with blood. He didn't dare to get too close to her for fear of dirtying her too... Afterwards, he had made a vow not to kill, and had never killed anyone for the next 6 years. On the night Shui Ruo had passed away, he had gone berserk, and had massacred 2000 people... it was the most he had ever killed in a day.

Despite not having killed for 6 years, his hands were still covered with blood and sin. And Su'Er... She was as pure as Shui Ruo... How could his evil body have the right to touch her...

Ling Chen closed his eyes and continued to speak, "Just like tonight, in front of all of you, I gave the cruellest punishment for a man to Xuanyuan Xue Yi... in that hall, all men and women were scared soulless, and tried to get as far away from me as possible. No

one even had the courage to look at me. In their eyes, I'm just a savage demon... Perhaps, having killed all those people, I really am a demon..."

"Big brother Ling Tian, you're not allowed to say such things!"

Su'Er, who had listened in silence, suddenly said in a loud voice as she raised her head. Ling Chen was stunned-It was the first time he had heard Su'Er speak so loudly before.

Even Su'Er was given a fright by how loud she yelled. She hurriedly lowered her head, and looked at her hands on her knees, "Even if other people don't understand big brother Ling Tian... The big brother Ling Tian I know is kind and can make others laugh easily. When I see him no matter how unhappy or pressured I feel, I forget about all of it, and subconsciously I want to get closer to him. This sort of feeling can never be fake. How can someone who gives such peace and comfort be a bad person!"

"The first day we met, big brother Ling Tian gave us incredibly precious things without hesitation. I could feel that big brother Ling Tian did not expect anything in return at all. When Heart's Dream was first established, we were always holding big brother Ling Tian back, but you always took us with you, and never complained or asked to leave. Whenever we needed big brother Ling Tian, or were being bullied, you would always put down everything and come to us.

"Because of big brother Ling Tian, our tiny Heart's Dream became the number 1 guild on the Guild Rankings. The number 1 spot on the Heaven Rankings also belonged to our Heart's Dream...

We had never dared to dream of this sort of glory before. All of this was brought by big brother Ling Tian through his hard work, while we only enjoyed the benefits. We were unable to give big brother Ling Tian anything, or do anything for Heart's Dream...

"Big brother Ling Tian, you probably didn't know, but although we didn't interact for very long, you became incredibly important to all of us...

"Facing the entire Yan Huang Alliance by yourself, easily defeating the Sword Emperor, monopolising all of the Rankings, and making Heart's Dream the number 1 guild in China... At that time, we all felt that we were dreaming... Such a person really existed, and was right beside us... He was working hard together with us...

"That night, I thought that it was the most terrifying moment in my life. However, a person descended from the skies and rescued me from that nightmare. When he saved me, in order to prevent me from getting hurt, he used his own body to shield me from the ground... He used a gentle voice to comfort me, and stayed with me before dad and aunty arrived... He was afraid that I would be cold, so he put his own clothes around me, then quietly left. He didn't leave his name, and even changed his voice on purpose. He only left a figure that I would never forget... How could someone like him be a bad person?!

"Big brother Ling Tian is the best, strongest, and most perfect person, and is the only... Only... Only person who can make me secretly think about him every day... I won't allow anyone to say that big brother Ling Tian is a bad person, even if it's big brother

Ling Tian himself!”

After saying so much, Su’Er’s face became incredibly red. Ling Chen stared in shock for a while, and his eyes became a bit hazy. He laughed as he replied, “I was so cruel, and killed so many people… You really don’t mind?”

Su’Er lowered her head and softly replied, “I only know that you’re my big brother Ling Tian. Just that is enough… even if you’re a national fugitive and have killed many people… Even if you’re an incredibly evil person… Even if your real identity is a beggar, or a thief, or a bandit… I don’t mind. As long as it’s big brother Ling Tian, he’ll forever be perfect to me.”

Ling Chen took in a breath, feeling an ache in his heart.

Su’Er’s reply was so similar to what Shui Ruo had said…

“What if I like many girls… What if I not only wanted to protect Su Su, but also other girls as well… Su Su wouldn’t like such a bad person, right?” Ling Chen said with some conflict in his eyes.

“Big brother… big sister Dia Wu… loves you so much… even as much as I do… she did so much for you… big brother… you must find her… and be with her…”

“As well as Qi Qi and Su Su… they’re all so cute and kind and pretty… they’re all good enough for big brother… and all like big brother a lot… big brother can’t give them… to other people… I’m

sure big brother will like them as well... and also big sister Bing Yao...”

When Shui Ruo had passed away, this was one of the 3 promises she had made him promise. By doing this, she had made a decision that would have been incredibly difficult for him to make. Only when Shui Ruo passed away did Ling Chen realise how beautiful it was to be able to see someone and have them by one’s side. As such, no matter how selfish it was, or how immortal it was, he didn’t want to let go.

Hearing this, Su’Er fell silent for a while.

Ling Chen felt a bit conflicted. He knew that girls didn’t like their other half liking other girls. What’s more, Su’Er came from a prestigious background, and was one in a million in almost all aspects. How could a girl like her... Just as Ling Chen was about to speak again, Su’Er quietly said, “Did you know, big brother Ling Tian... Qi Qi secretly likes you as well. After getting to know you, and with how attractive you are, we simply couldn’t help but fall for you. However, Qi Qi’s illness is quite severe, and she always believed that she didn’t deserve to love and be loved. She was worried that if you liked her... she would one day cause you to be sad. Qi Qi is my best sister, and she’s liked big brother Ling Tian for a long time, and she was the first person to know that I liked big brother Ling Tian. However, neither of us openly said it... When we were younger, we vowed to be good sisters forever...

“Also, Qi Qi and I both knew that big brother Ling Tian already had someone in his heart. Ruo Ruo wasn’t big brother Ling Tian’s real sister, but someone who he loved to death. However, despite

knowing this, Qi Qi and I couldn't help but fall for big brother Ling Tian."

Su'Er looked up, and her entire face was red, but had a charming smile on her face, "Back then, we would fantasise that big brother Ling Tian would be a fickle person and like me and Qi Qi as well, and domineeringly make us his, just like how domineering he was towards the Yan Huang Alliance... How great would that have been. That way, big brother Ling Tian could still be with Ruo Ruo, while we could be with big brother Ling Tian and still be good sisters. However, those were just our fantasies, and could never become reality.

"So it turns out that such a wonderful fantasy could become reality." Su'Er became red as a pomegranate, and spoke as soft as a mosquito buzzing, but had a happy smile on her face.

Ling Chen was stunned. This was a completely unexpected answer. He thought that there was only one girl in the world who was so silly, which was Shui Ruo. Shui Ruo was so silly that she loved him to the extreme, to the point that she casted away her pride. She simply didn't want him to live with any regrets. As for Su'Er... she was also hopelessly in love.

"Su Su..." Ling Chen called out her name, but wasn't able to say anything.

"I, Su'Er... Want big brother Ling Tian to be by my side forever. This is my answer to big brother Ling Tian's answer, as well as... The wish I want to fulfil." Su'Er clasped her hands in front of her as she smiled and softly said, "Big brother Ling Tian, can you fulfil

this wish for me?”

“Of course!” Ling Chen decisively replied. How could he give any other answer?

“Then… let’s pinky promise.” Su’Er, who felt she was filled with happiness, happily smiled and lifted up her arm. She extended the pinky on her right hand, “This is a promise for a lifetime, and neither of us can go back on it.”

Ling Chen also smiled and stretched out his pinky, entangling it with Su’Ers… softly, yet firmly.

The moon and stars outside the car didn’t seem as bright, but the night had never seemed so beautiful to her before… It was so beautiful that she felt intoxicated, and didn’t want to wake up from this blissful dream.

Chapter 508 - Many First Times

“Big brother Ling Tian, do you like Qi Qi as well?”

“Qi Qi’s the daughter of Xiao Zhan, the Alliance Master of the most powerful underground faction, the Battle Alliance. She’s the little sister of the Alliance Master of one of the top 10 guilds in the game. Her father and big brother are all extremely loving towards her, and one would think that with such a background, a girl would be filled with wickedness, and would be arrogant and domineering... However, the first time I met her, she completely overturned my expectations. The Qi Qi that I saw was playful and cute, and I especially liked her smile and laugh, which made me want to get closer to her. This impression stayed with me even after I came to know her more. Moreover, Qi Qi’s so pretty, and her figure, is also ridiculously good. Her personality is one that anyone would like, and even a blind man would like her.

“No only Qi Qi, but also you, Su Su, and Meng Xin. You’ve all completely overturned my expectations of women from upper-class families, and caused me to see what it meant by ‘birds of a feather, flock together’. You all have incredibly powerful families, but you’re all so pure and flawless. It’s no wonder you can be good friends and good sisters. I’m sure that apart from you three, there aren’t any girls like you in all of Beijing’s upper-class society.”

“In that case, no matter if it’s Qi Qi or big sister Meng Xin, big brother Ling Tian likes them all?”

“I...”

“Hehe… so big brother Ling Tian was having ideas about big sister Meng Xin as well… so greedy!”

“I didn’t say that…”

“I don’t believe it! Big sister Meng Xin’s so pretty, and even my own looks added with Qi Qi’s can’t compare to hers. That day, big sister Meng Xin took off her veil in front of big brother Ling Tian… after seeing big sister Meng Xin’s true appearance, I don’t believe that big brother Ling Tian wouldn’t fall for her.”

“……”

“Big brother Ling Tian’s so domineering and smart. I sure that even if it’s big sister Meng Xin, big brother Ling Tian will make her his. Qi Qi and I… will wholeheartedly support you!”

After making the most beautiful promise of a lifetime, Su’Er’s heart had been completely melted, and had the marvellous feeling of ‘I already belong to big brother Ling Tian’. All of the restraint, anxiousness and embarrassment were gradually dissolved, and she moved closer to Ling Tian as she began to speak more.

“Big brother Ling Tian, can you tell me… your story?” Su’Er looked up and gently blinked as she gazed at this man who she would be with forever.

“My… story?” “Mmm… we’ve known big brother Ling Tian for so long, but we don’t know anything about your past. Big sister

Meng Xin said that you're definitely someone with a lot of stories, and the things you've experienced greatly surpass anything we can imagine. Otherwise, you wouldn't be so powerful. We've secretly asked Ruo Ruo before... She would always lightly smile, but wouldn't tell us anything. Afterwards, big sister Meng Xin told us not to ask about this anymore. She said that Ruo Ruo's smile... caused her heart to ache..."

Ling Chen: "....."

"Big brother Ling Tian definitely had a very sad and painful past. I want to... know more about my big brother Ling Tian, and want to help carry some of that pain with him, so... So..." Su'Er's voice became softer and softer. She felt a bit conflicted-she wanted to know everything about Ling Chen, but she didn't know if this was right or not. Shui Ruo's heart-breaking smile told them that Ling Chen's past was definitely a dark one, one that he wouldn't want to bring up or think about. Perhaps her asking would result in many scars being ripped open.

My past...

Ling Chen felt a bit surprised. After leaving Heaven and Hell, and returning to the normal world, he had only told his past to one person, which was Shui Ruo. However, he didn't tell her his true identity... although it was possible that Shui Ruo guessed it, but just didn't say it out loud.

Although his years in Heaven and Hell had been unimaginably dark, they had given him a body, mental energy, and strength that surpassed humans' limits. They gave him the power to protect the

important people around him, as well as followers and comrades who would never leave him... as well as lovers. As such, those years weren't that painful for him. After hearing that Dia Wu was still alive, he had even less of a reason to escape from the past-perhaps the only thing he didn't want to face was his true identity.

"Su Su..." Ling Chen smiled, "We have a promise to be together forever. In that case, you should know everything about me... it's just that I haven't fulfilled one of my greatest desires, though I believe that day won't be too far away. Can you wait until I've fulfilled that desire... when that time comes, I'll tell you everything about my past, alright?"

"Mm!" Su'Er vigorously nodded. She was quite satisfied with this answer, and she clasped her hands together in front of her chest as she closed her eyes and gently said, "Big brother Ling Tian's desire is my desire. For this, I'll work hard..."

She knew that Ling Tian's greatest desire was linked to what he was doing in the game. This was because Ling Tian spent almost all of his time in the game, searching for those mysterious things.

The night grew deeper, and the moon became brighter and brighter. Soon, it had been 2 hours since they had left the Su family's residence. During this period of time, no one had come to disturb them. Afterwards, it was mostly Su'Er talking about her childhood, how she had met Qi Qi, Meng Xin's past... and many other things. The amount of things Su'Er talked about tonight exceeded the total amount of things she had said to Ling Chen in the past-because her heart was now Ling Chen's and could completely open up to him. This sort of change was simply

miraculous.

“Big brother Ling Tian, I should go back now... otherwise dad and the others will be incredibly anxious.”

Finally, Su’Er somewhat reluctantly asked to go home. Although she didn’t want to part with Ling Chen, she had been out for too long. She couldn’t imagine just how worried her family was. As such, she had to go back to put their minds at peace.

Indeed, it was getting quite late, and if they didn’t go back soon, the Su family would be incredibly worried. Ling Chen didn’t try to selfishly keep Su’Er, and asked, “Do you know how to drive?”

Su’Er’s face became slightly red as she somewhat embarrassedly replied, “No...”

After all, Su’Er had just turned 16, and had been too young to drive. Moreover, she was the daughter of the Su family-whenever she went out, she would have a top-class military chauffeur driving her.

“Alright, I’ll take you back.” “Eh? But if you go back... it’ll be very dangerous. And... and...” An expression of deep worry appeared on Su’Er’s face.

“Haha...” Ling Chen laughed as he placed his hand on the seat in front of him, and lightly jumped as he flipped into the driver’s seat, “Don’t worry, your father and uncle aren’t idiots. I’m sure

that after we left, they realised we know each other. They won't worry about your safety, otherwise they would have sent people to chase after us already. It's possible that they even misdirected the Long family-otherwise, it's unlikely that the Long family wouldn't have found us after so long... Mm, I'm sure the thing your family's most worried about is that a man like me would eat up a little girl like you."

Su'Er stared in confusion for a moment before her entire face became bright red.

The car started to drive back to the Su family's residence.

It was unclear whether the Su family had misled the Long family, or if the Long family had chosen not to act. On the way back, Ling Chen didn't encounter any obstructions, and the entire trip was incredibly smooth. Ling Chen couldn't help but wonder why this was the entire time.

Half an hour later, the car stopped at an unassuming corner of the Su family's courtyard... this was a blind spot in the Su family's surveillance.

"Alright, we're here; you can go home now."

Ling Chen parked the car, got out, and opened the door for Su'Er. He held Su'Er's hand as he helped her out of the car. Su'Er's little hand was white and tender, like a warm piece of jade. Ling Chen smiled, "Feeling hot?"

Su’Er tried to take her hand away, but found that she couldn’t. She could only allow Ling Chen to continue holding it. The evening breeze was quite cold, but the hand Ling Chen was holding became warmer and warmer. Su’Er lowered her head as she once again blushed, softly saying, “This… This is the first time I’ve held a man’s hand…”

The current Su’Er looked even more delicate and cute than a little doll, causing a mad desire to hug her spring up within Ling Chen. He could feel that Su’Er’s hand was becoming warmer and warmer. He lowered his head as he softly said, “I don’t want just Su’Er’s first time in holding hands… There are many other first times that I want…”

As he spoke, he suddenly pulled Su’Er into his embrace, causing her to cry out. Ling Chen stopped hesitating and put both of his arms around her as he kissed her on her tender lips.

“Ah…”

Before Su’Er could say anything, her lips had been sealed.

As Su’Er felt incredibly disorientated, she could feel a fiery warmth of her lips, and could smell a man’s scent. Su’Er’s mind became blank, and by the time she realised what was happening, she could feel her heart melting. The sensation on her lips caused her heart to rapidly beat, and her body froze in anxiety as she tightly closed her eyes.

Chapter 509 - A Big Fright

A young girl's lips were incredibly soft. After their lips first touched, Ling Chen couldn't satisfy himself, and greedily kissed her petal-like lips. His actions became more intense, as if he wanted to devour all of her. Su'Er's breathing became rougher, and her heart began to beat incredibly quickly. She tried to close her mouth out of embarrassment, but in the end, she couldn't resist Ling Chen's enticement, and timidly opened her mouth.

Ling Chen's tongue snuck into her mouth, and found her delicate tongue. He first gently swirled his own tongue around it, then gently sucked. Su'Er, who had never been kissed before, trembled as if she had been shocked by lightning. A bit of Su'Er's saliva was sucked into Ling Chen's mouth, and tasted unexpectedly sweet, making Ling Chen desire more. He tightly wrapped his arm around her waist as he explored every inch of her mouth. Her sweet saliva continuously flowed into Ling Chen's mouth, and some leaked out from her mouth, looking like a silver line under the moonlight.

Ling Chen couldn't resist but wrap his tongue around hers, passionately and greedily kissing her. With her mouth sealed, Su'Er rapidly breathed with her nose in protest, in utter embarrassment and in happiness. Under Ling Chen's intense 'attack', her neck was raised high, and subconsciously returned the kiss as the hot air from her nose blew onto Ling Chen's face. Her small body became hotter and hotter, and forgot about how cold the night was. Her delicate arms hugged Ling Chen tightly, intoxicated in the pleasures between a man and a woman. As they kissed, she remembered the first time they met, and those scenes played themselves in her head as she felt her entire being melting.

“Ah…”

Su’Er gently cried out, and her body stiffened. Her head swayed, as if she wanted to move her lips away, and she started to squirm. She started to breathe rapidly… Because Ling Chen’s big hands had naughtily made their way to Su’Er’s chest, and gently groped over her clothing, which wasn’t very thick. That strange stimulation made Su’Er want to go crazy.

As if he felt the resistance in Su’Er’s body, Ling Chen’s hands quietly departed. Su’Er secretly let out a breath of relief, but immediately after, an even louder moan came out of her lips… Ling Chen’s fiery hands had reached inside her clothing, and were groping around unrestrainedly.

“Ah… big brother… Ling Tian…” Su’Er mumbled, her mouth still sealed by Ling Chen’s mouth. Her body squirmed as Ling Chen’s hands moved around, causing her face to become incredibly red.

A lump of softness entered Ling Chen’s hand, and felt incredibly glossy. Su’Er’s breasts weren’t that large-after all, she was still quite young-but their shape was simply flawless, and they felt incredibly smooth, as if they had been covered with sweet spring water. The two small beans were rubbed around by Ling Chen’s palms, and soon started to stick up.

Su’Er’s moans caused Ling Chen to become even more excited. He started to feel annoyed by the clothes obstructing him, and he flipped his hands and lifted them… although it was winter, Su’Er wasn’t wearing much, as she had been in the warm hall before being brought out by Ling Chen. As such, Su’Er’s clothes, from the

outside to inside, were lifted up by Ling Chen in an instant.

Under the moonlight, Su'Er's topless upper body was exposed to Ling Chen. Her body leaned against him and curled into him, and from Ling Chen's perspective, her waist was incredibly slim and appealing. Her breasts were like 2 jade-white bowls cupped onto her chest, and the 2 dots exposed in the air were a light pink colour, looking like pure gemstones.

Ling Chen's tongue continued to greedily wrap around Su'Er's small tongue, and his hands once again stretched out towards her chest. He gently held her breasts in his hands, and the suppleness made him unwilling to let go. His hot breath almost made this beautiful, statue-like girl melt.

Su'Er's eyes became hazy-she had never been so embarrassed in her life before. However, the subconscious resistance that her body put up gradually decreased, allowing Ling Chen to play with her beautiful body. She gently closed her eyes as she leaned forwards, allowing Ling Chen more access to her body.

……"

A cold gust of wind blew over, causing Su'Er's topless body to shiver. This caused Ling Chen's actions to pause, and he came back to his senses, unreluctantly taking his hands off her chest and wrapped his arms around her. He gently hugged her against his body, her soft breasts sticking to his chest.

"Su Su… are you cold?" Ling Chen looked down at the kitten-like

girl pressed against his body as he gently asked.

After experiencing that passionate kiss, Su'Er's face was red as a rose, and her face was beaded with sweat. Her long eyelashes batted and her delicate lips parted as she panted for breath. She looked so beautiful that Ling Chen found it difficult to breathe.

Su'Er gently shook her head and lay in his embrace, so embarrassed that she couldn't look at him.

"I'm sorry... for scaring you... and allowing you to get cold..." Ling Chen said apologetically, as he blamed himself. Su'Er was simply too cute, and smelled and tasted like a delicious dessert. He simply couldn't resist tasting her.

Su'Er once again shook her head as she mumbled, "As long as it's big brother Ling Tian... I don't mind what you do to me... actually... I quite liked it... As long as big brother Ling Tian wants Su'Er... Su'Er will forever belong to big brother Ling Tian alone..."

Ling Chen was so touched that he felt a warmth within his heart. He pulled Su'Er's clothes back on, then put his suit around her... The night had grown colder, and Ling Chen was afraid that Su'Er would catch a cold. He put his arms around her as he said softly, "Let's go, I'll take you home."

"Mmm..." Su'Er obediently replied as she lovingly leaned against Ling Chen, unwilling to get up.

Tonight, Su'Er definitely wouldn't be able to sleep.

.....

After an hour without any news, Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng, who had been relatively calm, couldn't help but start to worry. After 2 hours passed, they started to pace back and forth at the entrance to the hall. Every few seconds, they would stand on their toes and look to the distance. An hour ago, Murong Xiu had started to cry, and hadn't stopped since.

Could it be that Su'Er, she... no! No way! That person definitely wouldn't hurt Su'Er!!

Terrifying thoughts repeatedly surfaced in their minds, and they repeatedly cast them away, and no one said anything. After standing outside and braving the cold wind for so long, they had started to shiver, but no one was willing to go back inside. There were tens of military personnel standing around them as they also silently waited.

"Miss Su'Er... Miss Su'Er is back!!"

This cry sounded like a peal of thunder, and Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng almost jumped up. They turned around, and saw Su'Er walking over with a white suit draped around her.

"Dad, uncle, aunty... I..."

Seeing their faces that were almost blue from the coldness, Su'Er's tears started to fall before she could finish her sentence.

"Su'Er..." Murong Xiu emotionally cried out, and stumbled as she rushed up and pulled Su'Er into her embrace. In just an instant, she was sobbing her heart out. Although she wasn't Su'Er's biologicaly mother, after being together all these years, she already treated her like her own daughter. Her worried heart was finally at rest.

"Girl... whew, it's good that you're back, it's good that you're back." Su Hong Cheng gripped the corners of his clothes as his pale face gradually regained its rosy texture. The burden on his chest lifted as he gave a sigh of relief.

"Girl, are you alright? Are you hurt anywhere? It's cold outside, so let's go in to talk." Just as Su Yi Cheng finished speaking, he gave a loud sneeze.

After entering the warm hall, before the 3 seniors had recovered from the cold, they started to rapidly fire questions at her. After confirming that she was completely fine, they finally calmed down.

"Did he drop you back?" As Su Yi Cheng asked this question, he suddenly realised something shocking... Su'Er hadn't walked over from the main entrance or the back entrance, but from her room! The Su family's security was incredibly tight-being able to bring Su'Er back to her room, undetected, was an almost-impossible feat! That Ling Chen... was a monster among monsters.

“Mm.” Su’Er replied in a small voice.

“Girl, I want you to answer me truthfully. You and that Ling Chen… have you known each other for a long time?” In the end, Su Hong Cheng couldn’t help but ask that question… he could already guess what the answer was, but he still wanted to hear it from Su’Er’s mouth. Moreover, the white suit around Su’Er’s shouldres… was evidently the one Ling Chen had worn.

Su Yi Cheng and Murong Xiu also held their breaths, waiting for Su’Er’s reply.

If Ling Chen hadn’t warned her, she would have been given a big fright. Su’Er rarely lied, especially to her family, and she looked down as she softly replied, “Mm…”

“When did you get to know each other?” Su Yi Cheng deeply frowned. Su’Er rarely interacted with strangers, and was quite afraid of strangers, especially males. How could she know such a terrifying and dangerous person? Suddenly, he thought of something as he uncontrollably yelled, “At the banquet, you said you liked someone… could that Ling Chen… be the person you like?!”

“This… This…” Su Hong Cheng was so scared that he started to stutter… after coming back, Su’Er didn’t look frightened at all, and her eyes looked a bit hazy, as if she had experienced great joy… the more he thought about it, the more likely it seemed, causing him to break out in cold sweat.

“That’s impossible; it’s definitely impossible. Yi Cheng, don’t be silly.” Murong Xiu immediately denied it, “She even rejected Xue Yi, how could she… she…”

After saying half of the sentence, Murong Xiu suddenly stopped speaking… she had wanted to say ‘how could she like such a person’… but when Ling Chen’s figure appeared in her mind, she was unable to say it. That person had torn through the Long family’s defensive lines, turning the Long family upside down. He had annihilated the Long family’s seven main forces, defeated Murong Xiong Tian with a single punch, and publicly castrated Xuanyuan Xue Yi in front of Xuanyuan Sheng… Apart from this person, who could do such a thing?

Moreover, he was incredibly young, and seemed to be in his early twenties! Which young man in China could compare to him? Even Long Tian Yun and Xuanyuan Xue Yi couldn’t be compared with him… Moreover, his looks and demeanour weren’t ordinary either.

For an extraordinary person like him, there were only people who weren’t good enough for him; there was no one he wasn’t able to go for. His attractiveness to women was simply irresistible. Which young girl wouldn’t fall for such a strong man who could protect them forever? Su’Er liking him… would be completely normal!

However, he was someone who was enemies with the Long family, and was a national fugitive!

Chapter 510 - The Unconscious Tian Tian

Facing her relatives' surprised questions, Su'Er didn't become anxious or nervous. Instead, she silently lowered her head.

She wasn't afraid of her family knowing; in fact, she was considering telling them herself. Before today, Su'Er's feelings towards Ling Chen had been quite conflicted. She wanted to be with him, but almost couldn't see the possibility of them being together... However, tonight, when their pinky fingers had interlocked and made that promise, a stunning change had taken place within her heart. She wouldn't allow anything to destroy that dream-like promise.

Su'Er's silence was, undoubtedly, an affirmation that the person she liked was indeed Ling Chen. This silence sounded deafening to Su Hong Cheng, Su Yi Cheng and Murong Xiu.

A disaster. This was a disaster.

"Girl, y-y-you couldn't really have... Fallen for... Ling Chen?" Su Hong Cheng felt his scalp go numb, and he stuttered, finding it difficult to breathe. The things Ling Chen had done at the Long family's residence, as well as his current situation were all things he was familiar with. Apart from that, he was also an incredible man-let alone the younger generation, there was most likely no one in all of China who could compare to him... However, he was the arch-enemy of the Long family! The hatred between them could never be resolved.

If Su'Er was together with him... the Su family's future... Su'Er's head hung even lower. However, this time, she gave a soft "mm".

Hearing this confirmation, the 3 people's faces darkened.

Su Yi Cheng let out a long sigh as he heavily said, "Girl, Ling Chen is an incredibly attractive person, but... do you really know him? Do you know what sort of person he is? Do you know where he's from? What his identity is? How many people he's killed? He's currently the person the Long family wants to kill the most, and everyone in China knows he's a national fugitive... If you really like him, then cut him off. It's impossible for you to be with him."

"That's right... he's someone the Long family wants to kill, and he even... To the young master of the Xuanyuan family... If the Long family and Xuanyuan family found out about the relationship between you two, then our Su family would be dragged into it as well. Your uncle's quite right; it's impossible for you to be together." Murong Xiu worriedly said.

Su'Er's head hung low as she listened to them. She could understand their perspectives, and them saying this was quite normal... Opposing the Long family, and especially to such an extent, meant that it would be difficult for Ling Chen to even reside in China. In the end, he would probably be killed by them-it was simply a matter of time. As such, they had to strongly oppose this relationship before anything came of it.

Su'Er slowly stood up from her chair. She didn't seem agitated, instead, she was abnormally calm. Her head remained lowered as

she softly replied, “Did you know, that night when I was kidnapped… It was him who rescued me.”

Su Hong Cheng and the others were stunned… That night, when Su’Er had been rescued, they had spent much effort to track down the person who saved her, but their efforts were for nought. Su Hong Cheng’s expression became complicated as he sighed, “So it was him. No wonder why we couldn’t find him no matter how hard we looked. However, even if…”

“Dad, aunty, uncle.” Su’Er suddenly spoke in a small voice, shocking Su Hong Cheng… For all her life, Su’Er had been incredibly obedient, and when they spoke, she would always quietly listen and nod. She had never cut them off before. Never.

This was the first time she had cut him off halfway through a sentence.

Su’Er looked at her feet as she mumbled, “We promised that after he fulfilled his greatest wish, we should be together forever. As long as he doesn’t cast me away, my heart will always belong to him. If he is safe and well, I will be safe and well. If he leaves, I will follow him. Even if he’s a national fugitive and is hated by many people, I’ll carry that burden with him. If he really is a complete and utter bad person…” Su’Er’s gently laughed, “Then I’ll be a bad person as well.

“Since I’ve decided on this, what sort of person he is doesn’t matter. As long as he doesn’t leave me…”

Su'Er walked off, leaving her relatives staring at her in complete shock.

Su Hong Cheng had watched his daughter grow up, and thought that there was no one who understood her better than him. However, at that moment, he realised that he didn't understand his daughter at all.

Normally, she was incredibly obedient, quiet, timid, easily embarrassed, and didn't know how to refuse. No matter what they said, she would always nod and follow their wishes.

However, her words just then showed her unswerving and unyielding determination.

When someone who had always been incredibly meek became incredibly resolute towards something... That most likely meant that thing was more important than their lives.

"What should we do?" Su Yi Cheng helplessly asked. Su'Er's words made it clear that no matter how they tried to convince her, they would not be able to change her mind.

"Ai... what's going on... Well, we definitely can't let the Long family and Xuanyuan family find out about this. Otherwise, the consequences will be unimaginable." Su Hong Cheng massaged his temples, his heart feeling incredibly chaotic. .....

The table was filled with the packaging of countless snacks-this was the deed of Tian Tian.

Because they had underestimated Tian Tian's appetite, Gui Ya and the others had rushed out to buy snacks when she had yelled that she was hungry. However, the snacks they had bought had been devoured by her in an instant, forcing Gui Ya to go out again... and again, and again. By the time the packaging covered the entire table, the 6 people in the room were sweating.

My goodness, does this little ancestor have a bottomless stomach?

"Why isn't big brother back yet?"

Tian Tian grabbed a big handful of pea crisps and tossed them into her mouth as she chewed and spoke. Her crystal-like eyes continuously gazed out the window. After Chao Ying and Chao Xi had returned, she had been standing at the window, waiting for Ling Chen to come back. More than 2 hours had passed, but luckily there were snacks, so she wasn't too upset. She was only a bit worried about Ling Chen's safety.

"He should be coming back soon. Master really likes Tian Tian, so I'm sure he wouldn't be willing to leave you for too long." Chao Ying said as she sweetly smiled.

"You can't say that for sure. Master's having a moonlight date with your cute big sister Su'Er... it's possible that he won't be coming back tonight." Before Chao Xi finished speaking, she

started to giggle.

"No way!" Tian Tian vigorously shook her head, "Big brother promised that he would be back before 11pm... Wuu, if big brother's not here, I won't be able to sleep."

At this moment, a flash of light streaked across the sky. Tian Tian's eyes lit up as she cheerfully cried out, "Look! A shooting star! A shooting star!!"

Chao Ying and Chao Xi leaned over and saw the shooting star disappearing. Chao Ying lowered her head and smile as she said, "Does Tian Tian have any wishes she wants to tell the shooting star? I heard that if you earnestly make a wish, it'll definitely come true."

Tian Tian slightly raised her head and silently looked at the night sky. She didn't move, and seemed like she hadn't heard Chao Ying's words. However, her eyes were trembling.

Shooting star...

I haven't seen a shooting star in so long...

Shooting star... Shooting star... Shooting star...

"Hm? Are you alright, Tian Tian? Are you making a wish?" Seeing that Tian Tian hadn't moved or spoken in so long, Chao Ying and Chao Xi felt that something was off, and they waved their

hands in front of her eyes.

Pa!

The snacks in Tian Tian's hand fell to the ground as she fell backwards.

"Tian Tian!"

Chao Ying and Chao Xi were both shocked, and quickly caught her. When they saw her face, they were even more stunned-Tian Tian had looked completely fine earlier, but was now pale as a sheet. Her eyes were open, but didn't have any light in them. Her lips slightly moved as her eyes closed, and she fell silent.

"Tian Tian!! What happened, Tian Tian? Tian Tian!!!"

The suddenness of what had just happened made the sisters at a loss as to what to do. They shook Tian Tian's body a few times and yelled in her ears, but there was no reaction from Tian Tian.

"What's going on?"

Gui Ya and the others rushed over.

"Tian Tian suddenly fell unconscious! We don't know why."

“What?!” Gui Ya was horrified, and rushed over as he touched her forehead and placed a finger under her nose. Her temperature was normal, but her breathing was a bit erratic and her face was abnormally pale. He frowned as he said, “Hurry and carry her into the bedroom…immediately call Yao Ying and Qian Mo, and tell them to come back at once!”

……

When Ling Chen came back, naturally, he did not take an ordinary route.

Ling Chen stealthily climbed up the pipeline to the roof, then silently flipped through the window. He had done this countless times in his life, and every move was executed perfectly. He could enter anyone’s home without being detected. However, this house was filled with other experts, so he naturally couldn’t escape detection for long. Just as his feet hit the ground, Gui Ya rushed over as he blurted out, “Master, Tian Tian fell unconscious!”

“What?!” Ling Chen was stunned as he felt his insides grow cold. He couldn’t hear what Gui Ya said clearly as he ran as fast as he could to the bedroom.

Tian Tian was quietly lying on the most comfortable bed, unmoving. Her face had started to regain its rosy colour, but it was still paler than normal. Ling Chen almost leapt over to the bed as he stared at Tian Tian, yelling, “Tian Tian, what’s wrong, Tian Tian?!”

He suddenly got up and uncontrollably yelled, “Tell me! What’s wrong with Tian Tian? Didn’t I tell you to look after her well? What have you all been doing?”

Ling Chen had the right and power to reign over them, but he had never lost his temper at them before. Gui Ya lowered his head as he quickly replied, “Master, please calm down. After you left, Tian Tian didn’t leave this place, and wasn’t attacked. She was standing at the window when she suddenly lost consciousness without any warning... don’t worry, master, Yao Ying and Qian Mo are hurrying back, and will be here soon.”

At this moment, a rhythmic knock sounded out on the door. Gui Ya immediately rushed over and opened the door. Two fairylike women entered with sweat on their foreheads, along with a cold gust of wind. They were Yao Ying and Qian Mo, the ones with the strongest healing abilities in Hell.

Chapter 511 - Hazy Memories

“Her vitals are all normal. Her heartbeat and breathing are a bit erratic, but are returning to normal. She’ll be completely fine soon.”

Qian Mo took the small medical instrument off Tian Tian’s chest as she continued, “Don’t worry, master, Tian Tian’s body is perfectly fine. It seems that the cause for her suddenly losing consciousness, is her brain.’

“Her brain?” Ling Chen was mostly at ease now. When he had heard that Tian Tian had fallen unconscious, he thought that she had been attacked, and nearly lost his mind. He now felt reassured. If something happened to Tian Tian, he would probably never be able to smile again.

“Her physiological functions are all fine, so it’s possible that she lost consciousness because her brain received some sort of shock.” Yao Ying said.

“But before Tian Tian fell unconscious, she didn’t receive any shock.” Chao Ying said in confusion.

“We’ll do a full inspection first… Big sis, did you bring that medical instrument?” When Yao Ying mentioned ‘that medical instrument’, she seemed a bit hesitant, as if she didn’t want to use it. Ling Chen and the others’ expressions slightly changed, but didn’t say anything.

“Mm.” Qian Mo replied and took out a 10-centimetre-wide silver box. She placed it next to Tian Tian’s head, then carefully opened it up, and pulled out a long, metallic thread.

Yao Ying stretched out her hands and gently lifted Tian Tian’s head, and wrapped the metallic thread around her head. After doing this, Yao Ying and Qian Mo’s gazes became serious, and stopped talking. Ling Chen and the others held their breaths in anticipation, and didn’t dare to say anything for fear of interrupting the two of them... This instrument was used to quickly investigate a person’s mind... It was something that was impossible to create with earth’s technology, because it came from the Mad Scientist!

It was the only thing they had brought out of Hell that had belonged to the Mad Scientist.

It was so powerful that Yao Ying and Qian Mo simply had to bring it out with them. Every time they saw it, they would think of the Mad Scientist, making them feel incredibly uncomfortable. As such, they would rarely use it. However, because Tian Tian, who was so important to Ling Chen, needed it, they unhesitatingly used it to find what was wrong with her.

Buzz... Buzz...

The sound of electricity flowing sounded out, and the screen inside the box lit up. However, from where Ling Chen was standing, he couldn’t see clearly what it displayed. Yao Ying and Qian Mo observed the screen, and a look of shock appeared on their faces.

“Did you discover anything?” Ling Chen was unable to bear it anymore, and couldn’t help but ask. “It’s very strange…” Yao Ying frowned, trying to figure out how to explain it, “Master, did Tian Tian’s head suffer some sort of heavy impact in the past?”

“Heavy impact? Why do you say that?” Ling Chen also frowned. After Tian Tian had come to their home, Shui Ruo had taken care of her extremely well-how could she have allowed Tian Tian to hurt herself? He couldn’t even remember Tian Tian ever hitting her head, let alone suffer a heavy impact. If she did, he definitely would have known.

“How do I say this… a large part of Tian Tian’s memories are very hazy, and only a small portion of them are clear.” Qian Mo said after a while.

“Hazy memories? What do you mean?” Ling Chen was a bit surprised.

“It means… for some reason, perhaps heavy impact or stimulation, a large part of her memories have become incredibly hazy. They haven’t been lost-it’s just that when she tries to access those memories, they seem to be blocked by a layer of fog, and she can only hazily make them out. This means that she can’t properly access all of her memories. As for the clear part, those are probably the memories after the event that caused her memories to become hazy happened. That’s why they’re unaffected. My guess is that Tian Tian’s head suffered some sort of heavy impact or stimulation.” Qian Mo explained.

“Is this related to why she lost consciousness?” Ling Chen asked. “Yes!” Qian Mo heavily nodded, “Tian Tian lost consciousness because she encountered something that triggered some of her hazy memories, causing her brain to go into overdrive.”

Qian Mo’s answer was quite strange, making the Reapers feel confused. Ling Chen frowned as he asked, “Ying, Xi, what was Tian Tian doing before she lost consciousness? Did she say anything or see anything?”

Chao Ying and Chao Xi thought for a moment before Chao Xi replied, “Tian Tian was eating pea crisps, and was standing next to the window. Ying and I were next to her. She asked us when you were coming back, then yelled out about a shooting star. We looked over and saw it as it was disappearing. If it was something she saw, it would be that shooting star. After seeing that shooting star, she fell over backwards, but would a shooting star really be the reason?”

Ling Chen fell silent.

Heavy impact… hazy memories… shooting star…

Wait!!

Could it be…

Ling Chen’s eyes widened. Ever since Tian Tian had started living with them, she hadn’t hit her head anywhere. However, the

first time they met Tian Tian, she had appeared along with a ‘meteor’. They had seen a girl lying on the ground, but her clothes were completely intact, though her hair was in a mess… the meteor was in pieces around her.

If Tian Tian really came with that meteor-no, that spaceship-from another world, then the impact upon hitting the ground… would definitely be an incredibly heavy impact. The spaceship would have given her some protection, but the impact from the fall would be inevitable.

When they had first met, she had claimed that she was a ‘Demon Queen’, and wanted to ‘conquer earth’. She also mentioned the ‘Xiya Star’ and her mother, and then…

There was essentially nothing after that.

The great Demon Queen had not conquered the earth-she hadn’t even taken the first step. She had never mentioned the mother she needed to save. Instead, she enjoyed her daily life with Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, and didn’t seem worried about her mother or the Xiya Star, much less try to conquer the earth. By now, she had all but forgotten about her being a ‘Demon Queen’.

Ling Chen had always felt confused by that.

Could that have been, like Qian Mo said, because her memories were hazy?

She remembered the name ‘Demon Queen’, but forgot what it entailed, and even forgot her powers. She remembered about conquering the earth, but forgot how. She remembered her mother, but couldn’t remember all of the emotions associated. She could remember that her mother was someone close to her, but her emotions towards Shui Ruo and Ling Chen seemed to run deeper.

If that was the case, that would explain many of Ling Chen’s questions.

The clear memories would have been the memories from after that day.

Shooting star… could all of this have been triggered by Tian Tian seeing that shooting star?

“Yao Ying, Qian Mo, if it’s like that, can Tian Tian’s hazy memories be recovered?” Ling Chen asked.

Yao Ying nodded, “It’s definitely possible. Her memories are only hazy; she hasn’t lost them. Over time, she’ll start to remember them. If there’s stimulation from other sources, perhaps they’ll come back even faster… however, it’s possible that her brain could be damaged, so try to avoid that.”

Ling Chen mostly agreed with the conclusion Yao Ying and Qian Mo had come to. After thinking about it, Tian Tian’s behaviour indeed indicated that her memories were hazy. In that case, if Tian Tian’s memories came back, and she remembered the things from the past, and remembered the reason for coming to this world…

And remembered her relatives…

Would there be big changes to her heart? Would she still stay by his side?

“All in all, Tian Tian’s completely fine. Master doesn’t need to worry about her.”

After coming to this conclusion, the anxious Yao Ying and Qian Mo let out a small sigh of relief. Yao Ying looked at the medical instrument’s screen as she smiled and said, “Tian Tian’s not only very healthy, but her mind is also… also… ahh!!”

Ahh!!!”

Yao Ying and Qian Mo both cried out as their eyes widened, staring at the palm-sized screen. It was as if they had seen the most incomprehensible thing in the world.

“What happened?” The two women’s strange reaction caused everyone to become nervous. Ling Chen stood up with a whoosh, his heart once again anxious after just settling down.

Buzz… Buzz…

Bang!!

This sound caused everyone’s hearts to jump.

The medical instrument from the Mad Scientist... had exploded.

Only the screen had exploded, and luckily, the explosion had not been very intense. As such, the shards of glass had only flown tens of centimetres, most of which hit Yao Ying and Qian Mo's clothes, and did not land on Tian Tian. Black smoke started to rise up from the destroyed medical instrument, filling the room with a burned smell.

"What... What's going on? The instrument... broke?" Gui Ya asked in shock. Something that the Mad Scientist had made could break?

Only Yao Ying and Qian Mo had seen the screen. They didn't brush away the glass shards, but instead continued to stare in deep shock. They looked at each other, trying to confirm what they had seen wasn't a hallucination.

"What's going on? What did you see?" Ling Chen asked worriedly. Yao Ying and Qian Mo's reactions were simply too strange.

Chapter 512 - 50 Times Brain Capacity

“Master…” Qian Mo opened and closed her mouth a few times before saying in deep shock, “Your brain capacity was increased by the Mad Scientist to more than 10 times a normal person’s brain capacity, right?”

“Yes, 15 times. With Eve’s help, I can raise it to 20 times. However, 2/3 of our brain capacities were sealed through some unknown method by the Mad Scientist. Right now, it’s only 5 times a normal person’s brain capacity.” Ling Chen replied. He didn’t need to hide these sorts of things. Although his brain capacity was only 5 times that of a normal person’s, he was still a monster whose mental energy and power surpassed humans’ limits.

“But Tian Tian, her… her…” Yao Ying paused for a few moments before spluttering out, “I casually used the instrument to check Tian Tian’s brain capacity… and that number skyrocketed…”

“Tian Tian’s brain capacity is 50 times a normal person’s… no! It’s more than 50 times! Because this instrument could only measure up to 50 times… and it broke…”

Ling Chen: “!!!!”

“Impossible!” Gui Ya yelled in shock, then resolutely shook his head, “There must have been something wrong with the instrument. A human whose brain capacity is 30% greater than a normal human’s will awaken esper powers, and those whose brain

capacity is above 50% will be a top-tier esper. Those with 2 times a normal person's brain capacity are absolute monsters. Instructor Hell found tens of thousands of geniuses all over the world, but less than 10 were able to withstand the stimulation to 5 times. Only master and Eve were able to surpass 7 times.

"Although master and Eve are limited to 5 times, you're still unparalleled existences, and with Instructor Hell dead, there's no one stronger than master and Eve now... no matter what, Tian Tian's just a normal girl-how can she have 50 times a normal person's brain capacity? The instrument must have been broken from the start."

"That's right. Even if it was made by the Mad Scientist, it should never break." Someone else said as they nodded. After all, it was not as if this was the first time they had met Tian Tian. Tian Tian was simply an incredibly fragile girl who didn't have anything that made her stand out differently. Moreover, these Reapers were incredibly familiar with the concept of brain capacity... The greater one's brain capacity, the stronger their mental energy would be, and the faster it could grow.

If one's brain capacity was 30% greater than a normal person's brain capacity at birth, they were an innate esper; if it was raised to 30% greater than a normal person's brain capacity afterwards, they would be an acquired esper. If they could exceed 50%, they would be one of the top espers-out of the billions of people in China, less than 100 people had a brain capacity greater than 50% of a normal human's. Those who had 100% times greater brain capacity could be counted on a single hand.

Apart from Ling Chen, Eve and the deceased Instructor Hell, no one had reached 5 times a normal persons' brain capacity. At the same time, this also showed how terrifying the Mad Scientist was. Back then, he had used medicine and terrifying procedures to create hundreds of specimens whose brain capacity was one time greater than a normal human's; tens of specimens whose brain capacity was 3 times greater than a normal human's, and nearly 10 who had reached 5 times a normal human's.

If the Mad Scientist hadn't been so obsessed with perfection, and hadn't killed all of the specimens who he had deemed 'failures', the monsters he had created would have thrown the entire world into catastrophe. If he had decided to use those monsters to wreak havoc, the entire world would have been doomed.

All of them felt incredible fear for the Mad Scientist, including Ling Chen. Moreover, Instructor Hell's 'resurrection' made it clear that the Mad Scientist was still alive. Although no one brought it up, this fact remained like a sharp thorn in everyone's hearts.

50 times a normal person's brain capacity... That was a figure that made everyone stop breathing. It was a figure that even the Mad Scientist wouldn't believe. This figure could only perhaps appear on a god of the legends. Apart from a massive appetite, Tian Tian didn't have any other unique points, not even strength, much less any esper abilities. How could she have 50 times a normal person's brain capacity?

"Mmm, the instrument must have been broken. That gave me a big fright." Yao Ying and Qian Mo quickly recovered from their fright. Indeed, this was simply impossible, and the only

explanation was that the medical instrument was broken from the beginning. After all, it had been more than 6 years since they had left Hell, so it wasn't surprising that it had broken down.

However, Ling Chen did not feel relieved, and his expression remained just as heavy as he spoke, "When I first met Tian Tian, her head had indeed received some sort of heavy impact. If that impact was enough to cause her memories to become hazy, could her brain capacity have been affected as well?"

"That's right." Yao Ying and Qian Mo both nodded. Qian Mo replied, "The heavy impact caused her brain capacity to greatly suffer-you could say her brain was completely jumbled by that, causing her to go into a deep sleep to recover. Memories are stored in one's brain, and takes up an incredibly small portion of one's brain capacity. If one's brain capacity is affected, their memories will naturally be affected as well, because their brain capacity has become jumbled. As for the clear memories she has, those were stored in the brain capacity that was unaffected, which is why they're fine.

"Tian Tian suddenly losing consciousness was probably because something triggered one of her hazy memories, which can be said to be a good thing. As such, master doesn't need to worry at all-she'll probably wake up very soon. Also... the 50 times a normal person's brain capacity was definitely because there was something wrong with the machine; please don't dwell on it, master. I'm sure master knows clearly what sort of girl Tian Tian is. If she had such terrifying talent, how could master not know?"

"That's right, that's right. It seems that even things made by the

Mad Scientist aren't perfect, haha." Gui Ya said as he laughed. The medical instrument breaking indicated to everyone that the Mad Scientist wasn't completely flawless and invulnerable. They all knew that the shadow the Mad Scientist had left in their hearts would never go away. No one knew where he was, and even to these incredibly powerful experts, he was a truly terrifying demon.

Ling Chen lapsed into silence. At this moment, he suddenly remembered something from a few months ago that had deeply shocked him.

During that night when he had caused a bloodbath at the Long family's residence, he had been brought out by Gui Dao, then passed on to Mu Bing Yao, and in desperation, she had given him to Tian Tian...

It was around 12am at that time.

After that, Tian Tian had carried him on her back, step by step, as she walked forwards.

When he woke up and recovered, Tian Tian had told him that she had walked an entire night, until the sky had brightened. When she could finally see the sun, she had fallen down a slope and fainted. That was where he had woken up... Back then, it was the intersection between summer and autumn, and in Beijing, the sun rose at around 7am. That meant that Tian Tian had carried him on her back and walked for nearly 7 hours.

When he had woken up, 3 days had passed. He had always been

curious... Tian Tian's body was quite weak, and even if she had carried him on her back for 7 hours, she couldn't have walked too far. Moreover, with the Long family's power, how could they not catch up to a little girl who was carrying a big man? However, they had not been found, even after a whole 3 days.

After he was able to move again, he confirmed where they were, and after hearing Tian Tian talk about where Mu Bing Yao had passed him to her, he became greatly shocked.

This was because, even if they measured the distance in a straight line, they were 400 kilometres away!!

400 kilometres in 7 hours! And that was assuming she travelled in a completely straight line. If they accounted for the winds in the roads she followed, as well as the slopes she had to walk up and down, Tian Tian definitely would have carried him for more than 500 kilometres. 500 kilometres in 7 hours meant...

On that night, Tian Tian had carried him while walking at more than 70 kilometres per hour!!

That was ridiculous!!

Moreover, according to Tian Tian's recount... She had walked incredibly slowly, and she had been incredibly tired. Every single step required a lot of strength... In the end, she couldn't even see or hear clearly, and she couldn't feel her entire body... She simply didn't know how she kept walking... When she fainted, she didn't know where she was, much less how far she had walked or for how

long she had walked.

She had travelled more than 400 kilometres away from the Long family's residence in 7 hours... How were the Long family supposed to catch up? How could they believe that an almost-dead Ling Chen was 400 kilometres away, and how could they find him at such a distance?

He had repeatedly checked this, then buried it deep within his arm, and passed it off as a 'miracle'... A miracle that Tian Tian had created for him.

However, miracles didn't happen for no reason. There was always an explanation behind miracles. Tian Tian had released her terrifying potential in order to save him, but even so, was 400 kilometres in 7 hours possible for a girl?

At this moment, an idea suddenly surfaced in his mind...

If Tian Tian always had this sort of power, but had forgotten about it... and had subconsciously released it at that time...

If that was the case... "Master? Master? Are you alright?"

Seeing Ling Chen spaced out, not uttering a single word, Gui Ya worriedly called out. Ling Chen's eyes flashed as he shook his head, "I'm fine. I'm sure Qian Mo and Yao Ying's conclusions are correct. Since Tian Tian's fine, don't worry, everyone, and go do your own things. Just let Tian Tian have a good rest."

Just as he spoke, Tian Tian's nose suddenly twitched, and her hands moved as she opened her eyes.

How could these slight movements escape the senses of the people in the room? Ling Chen hurriedly came over and said in deep concern, "Tian Tian, you're awake."

Tian Tian blinked and looked at Ling Chen for a few moments before fully waking up, "Big brother, you're back... eh? I fell asleep? Why's everyone here?"

As she said this, she tried to get up, but was gently held down by Ling Chen, "It's already pretty late, so if you're tired, just sleep. Everyone else is sleeping soon too."

"Achoo..." Tian Tian sneezed, and didn't seem to realise what had happened to her, "Is big brother going to sleep together with me?"

Ling Chen smiled, "Of course, I can't sleep without Tian Tian."

"Hehe," Tian Tian laughed, "Then big brother should go and shower... Big brothers and big sisters, good night!"

The Reapers all left the room feeling reassured. Only Ling Chen felt a new burden on his heart. During the night, he hugged Tian Tian to sleep, and hugged her tighter than he had in the past. It was as if he was afraid that if he let go, Tian Tian would disappear.

Right now, Tian Tian is mine, and is more important to me than anything.

However, in the future, will Tian Tian still be mine?

Chapter 513 - The Gu Family's Amazing Woman, Gu Qing Han

Tian Tian slept until noon the next day. After eating lunch, Ling Chen, Tian Tian, Chao Ying and Chao Xi returned to Su Hang. There were many things in Beijing that made them feel uncomfortable, which triggered many unpleasant memories, so they didn't want to stay there for long.

When they reached Su Hang, it was the afternoon, and the sky had begun to darken.

"When you return this jet, make sure you thank Li Xiao Xue for me. I owe her a big favour now." Ling Chen lazily said as he leaned back in his comfortable seat in the jet.

"Got it." Chao Xi, who was in charge of flying the jet, smiled. During this entire trip to Beijing, they had been in a good mood the whole time. Seeing Ling Chen achieve his goal, they were even happier. "Now that you mention it, there's something we almost forgot to tell master. When we asked to borrow this jet, Li Xiao Xue asked us to tell master that if you want to thank her, you should go to see her in person. There are some things she wants to talk to you about."

"Oh?" Ling Chen sat up straight. He thought for a moment before saying, "After the affair yesterday at the Su family's residence, Li Xiao Xue... can probably guess my identity."

"That's incorrect," Chao Ying shook her head, "She guessed your

identity from the very beginning. The events last night allowed her to confirm her suspicions."

Ling Chen rubbed his forehead as he said in a low voice, "The virtual gaming world's Loulan Queen, the woman who made the Li family financial group's fortune grow by 5 times within a short period of time... this woman is not simple."

Chao Ying and Chao Xi both laughed, "Of course Li Xiao Xue isn't a simple woman. This is something everyone in the south knows. Li Xiao Xue's older than us, and her looks and figure are both flawless. She has a background that no one can compare to, but there are very few men who chase her. Does master know why?"

"What else could it be? This sort of woman is too hard to keep under control. It's probable that all the men who tried to chase her suffered a lot." Ling Chen said without hesitation.

"That's completely correct," Chao Ying and Chao Xi replied in a synchronised manner.

"Then does master want to go home directly or go to visit Xiao Xue first? Xiao Xue's very curious towards master. We've known her for many years, but it's the first time we've seen her so curious about someone."

Ling Chen looked at Tian Tian, who was admiring the scenery outside. He thought for a few moments before replying, "I don't like owing favours, so let's go see her. Any normal man wouldn't refuse an invitation from a beauty."

“Alright, we’ll immediately let Xiao Xue know. At our current speed, we’ll be there in 10 minutes.” ..... Li family’s compound, northern courtyard.

Although it was winter, the air in Su Hang made one feel carefree and relaxed. This was especially so for Li Xiao Xue’s northern courtyard. It was surrounded by greenery, and although it was called the ‘northern courtyard’, it was incredibly impressive. It had a private swimming pool, entertainment centre, gym, medical centre, parking lot... as well as a landing strip the size of a football field. However, this landing strip was not empty-there were 3 private jets of different sizes. The biggest one could fit up to 100 people, and they all belonged to Li Xiao Xue.

As for the private parking lot... It was filled with luxury cars, and looked like an international luxury car exhibition.

Li Xiao Xue’s money was something that she would never be able to finish spending. Buying a top-tier luxury car to her was the same as an ordinary person buying a cabbage.

At this moment, Li Xiao Xue was receiving 4 special guests.

“Oh? Aunty Gu, I can’t quite understand what you’re saying. Would you mind being more specific?” A slight look of shock appeared in Li Xiao Xue’s eyes, but a calm smile remained on her face. Her loose clothes covered her alluring curves, and she had her legs crossed as she sat at the head chair. No matter if it was from

the front or from the sides, one could see how curvy her body was.

The smile on her face was extremely calm, but there was a hint of graveness between her brows... there were less than 5 people who could make her feel this way in the entire southern part of China.

Sitting opposite her was a woman.

It was difficult to tell how old she was-some would say she looked twenty, others thirty, and still others, forty. The perfect description for her would be graceful and elegant. Li Xiao Xue knew her age-she was already middle-aged. However, she seemed to have won against 'time', that terrifying enemy. As the years passed, time was unable to ravage her looks. There was not a single wrinkle on her face, as if she was still a young girl. However, the noble and dignified aura she possessed was only something that could be gained over a long period of time.

Facing Li Xiao Xue's words, the woman's expression did not waver at all. She calmly looked at Li Xiao Xue, looking as if it was impossible to move her. Even Li Xiao Xue felt that it would be impossible for her to be that calm and composed.

"This isn't what we wanted, but big sister, she... Miss Li, please help us convince big sister, this..."

Before the middle-aged woman could speak, the man sitting behind her hurriedly stood up and spoke out. As soon as he finished speaking, the middle-aged woman slightly shifted her body and calmly glanced at him. The middle-aged man's body

stiffened as he hurriedly stopped speaking and sat back down, not daring to utter another word.

A big sister having the power to make her little brother completely submit to her wasn't incredibly strange... However, the middle-aged man who had just stood up was... Gu Tian Nan!

His father was an esper in the south, as well as the Alliance Master of the Esper Family and the Ancient Martial Family! He was the Junior Alliance Master who was even more famous than his father, and the strongest esper in the south. At the same time, he controlled the most powerful faction in the south. Overall, it was even bigger than the north's underground faction, the Battle Alliance. After all, in the north, the Battle Alliance was severely restricted, while there was not much limiting the south.

Ever since the 'Skyfall Dynasty' had developed and was able to contend with the Yan Huang Alliance, Gu Tian Nan's fame resounded throughout the entire country, At the same time, he was third on the Heaven Rankings... Directly below the Yan Huang Alliance's Sword Emperor and the Dark Night's Shinigami... of course, after Ling Tian, that monster appeared, he had become number 4.

This sort of important figure, who could cause half of China and the virtual world to shake by stamping his feet, had been scared stiff by a glance from a woman, and didn't dare to say an extra word. Moreover, he was sitting behind the woman... Evidently this showed how much he respected her.

He was sitting next to his two little brothers, Gu Tian Dong and

Gu Tian Ping. The three of them were the Skyfall Dynasty's 'Three Heavenly Kings'- Skyfall, Against the Sky and Judging Sky. At the moment, these 3 influential figures were obediently sitting behind this middle-aged woman, with complicated looks on their faces, but not daring to say anything.

"What I mean to say is already very clear. I'm sure Xiao Xue can completely understand." The middle-aged woman's voice was gentle as flowing water, but also contained a formless might. She didn't release it on purpose; instead, it was something that came naturally from her actions and words.

As the eldest daughter of the strongest esper family in the south, as well as all of China, how could she not be an esper herself? Like her little brother, Gu Tian Nan, she was a mental esper, but the pressure that she emitted was unrelated to her mental esper powers.

"The Skyfall Dynasty wants to break off the alliance with my Li family? And you want to completely cut it off?" Li Xiao Xue sat upright. This showed how uncomfortable she felt.

"Indeed." The middle-aged woman nodded.

"Oh..." Li Xiao Xue peacefully replied. This reaction couldn't be any calmer. She thought for a few moments before smiling and saying, "I believe that this decision was made by Aunty Gu. Can I take this to mean that Aunty Gu will enter the virtual world, and might start to control the Skyfall Dynasty's matters?" Although it was phrased as a question, this sounded more like a statement. That was because this explanation was the only possible

explanation.

"That's correct."

"However, from memory, Aunty Gu's never been interested in the virtual world. Moreover, if Aunty Gu steps into the virtual world, who will manage the Gu family, as well as half of the Skyfall Alliance? I believe that apart from Aunty Gu, it'll be difficult to find someone with the capability and charisma." Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled. This wasn't flattery, but how she felt from the bottom of her heart. In this world, there weren't many men who impressed her, but the only woman she truly respected was this elegant middle-aged woman in front of her.

Gu Qing Han.

When the Gu family's family leader had reached the end of his life and couldn't overcome his sickness, his body deteriorated day by day. The Skyfall Alliance wasn't completely united-although the Gu family was the most powerful family in the Skyfall Alliance, there were many other powerful families that were eyeing the leadership position. Gu Tian Nan's abilities were quite exceptional, but he was too young, and didn't wield enough power to completely unite the Skyfall Alliance.

When the Gu family's position in the Skyfall Alliance started to waver, the eldest daughter of the Gu family, who had remained silent for many years, suddenly appeared in a high-profile manner. Using terrifying plots and mighty acts, she completely suppressed all waves within the Skyfall Alliance, and firmly cemented the Gu family's position as the leader of the Skyfall Alliance. She

singlehanded earned the respect of the entire Esper Family and Ancient Martial Family. At the same time, the underworld forces in the south were united at a shocking rate under her hands. With the loose sand gathered into a massive creature, it was more than 3 times larger than the Battle Alliance in the north.

Everything was because of Gu Qing Han.

The underworld powers completely belonged to the Gu family, and was so large that the Long family and other families in the Skyfall Alliance didn't dare to offend them. These years, the Gu family had remained at the centre of the Skyfall Alliance, and no other family had dared to even provoke them. The Skyfall Dynasty in the virtual world also rapidly grew, and became the only large guild that had the qualifications to fight against the Yan Huang Alliance.

With a daughter like this, the Gu family's leader was able to spend his remaining years in peace and happiness.

Chapter 514 - Gu Qing Han's decision

“Although I wasn’t interested in the past, that does not mean I’ll always be disinterested. The developments in the Mystic Moon world have made it so that I can’t help but put my focus on it. Moreover, the Skyfall Dynasty’s growth in the virtual world has disappointed me, so I must intervene.” Gu Qing Han casually said as she looked at Li Xiao Xue.

The 3 men behind her felt so ashamed that they lowered their heads.

“Oh? Disappointed Aunty Gu?” A look of interest appeared in Li Xiao Xue’s eyes, and she made an expression of confusion, “The Skyfall Dynasty’s power is something that every player in the world knows about, and is publicly acknowledged to be one of the top 3 guilds in China. Since the Mystic Moon world was opened, the Skyfall Dynasty grew much faster than it did in previous virtual worlds. They’ve been acting in a low-profile manner, but developing in a high-profile manner. Their reputation is quite good, and their fame is approaching the Yan Huang Alliance’s level. I can’t quite understand why Aunty Gu would be disappointed.”

“What you said is quite right.” Gu Qing Han nodded. Ever since she had entered the Li family’s residence, her expression had remained exactly the same. It was as cold as ice that had been frozen for ten thousand years. The number of times Li Xiao Xue had met her could not be called many, nor was it few. However, she had never seen Gu Qing Han smile before. It was said that when she was younger, she received large emotional and psychological damage, which left scars in her heart. Afterwards,

her heart became frozen, and no one had ever seen her smile since.

"The Skyfall Dynasty's current growth and future prospects are acceptable. However, that's not what I'm disappointed in, but rather, your Li family. Li Xiao Xue, with how intelligent you are, you should be able to understand my words."

Li Xiao Xue thought for a moment before slowly nodding and giving a slight smile, "Is Aunty Gu referring to the partnership between the Skyfall Dynasty and my Li family?"

Gu Qing Han slightly closed her eyes as she coldly replied, "A partnership is only established where both parties benefit. In the beginning, I was not dissatisfied with the Skyfall Dynasty working with your Li family. However, now that I've begun to pay more attention to the virtual world, I've realised that players in China, as well as players all o the world, don't see the Skyfall Dynasty as solely belonging to my Gu family, but also belonging to your Li family...

"In fact, some believe that the Li family has greater control over the Skyfall Dynasty. Almost everyone believes that without the Li family's support, the Skyfall Dynasty would not have been able to grow to this extent or have the rights to contend with the Yan Huang Alliance. What's even more unacceptable is that still others believe that the Skyfall Dynasty belongs to the Li family, and the Gu family is simply a manager for them... It is difficult for me to believe that you did not fuel these beliefs."

Li Xiao Xue smiled, but did not say anything. She knew that even if she denied it, it would be difficult to convince Aunty Gun.

“Indeed, with your Li family’s support, the Skyfall Dynasty has grown at a shocking rate, which is why it is what it is now. One of the conditions was that our Skyfall Dynasty would protect all property of the Li family in the virtual world.

“What players have seen is that the Skyfall Dynasty has always been faithfully protecting all property of the Li family in the virtual world. Whenever the Li family calls, we must answer. My three little brothers have received massive financial support, and has shown a girl much younger than them incredible respect… if I wasn’t an insider, and was just a normal player, I would believe that the Skyfall Dynasty was actually owned by the Li family, or perhaps that the Skyfall Dynasty was a subsidiary guild of the Li family! This has been the situation for many years; how could I not be disappointed?”

Gu Qing Han’s final sentence was spoken incredibly coldly, and her three little brothers behind her began to sweat.

Li Xiao Xue smiled amicably, “So it’s like that; that’s what Aunty Gu was worried about. Indeed, with Aunty Gu’s firm and unyielding personality, you would be quite displeased about this. I admit, I had some part to play in this. However, since Aunty Gu has decided to personally manage the Skyfall Dynasty, I naturally wouldn’t dare to act rashly in front of Aunty Gu. I’m sure that with Aunty Gu’s wisdom, you’ll be able to change peoples’ perspective of the Skyfall Dynasty very quickly. If Aunty Gu wishes, we can change the mode of our partnership, but I would like Aunty Gu to reconsider completely cutting off any cooperation. No matter if it’s myself or the entire Li family, we do not wish to lose an ally like the Gu family.”

“No need,” Gu Qing Han shook her head, “I’ve never been one to change my decisions. Cutting off ties with the Li family means cutting off more than half of our financial support, which will greatly impact the Skyfall Dynasty. However, a Skyfall Dynasty created using external funds will always just be a sleeping tiger; an empty shell. From today onwards, the Skyfall Dynasty will only belong to the Gu family, and I will personally turn it into a sharp and indestructible sword!

“The contract between the Skyfall Dynasty and the Li family is renewed every year. It has been 7 months since we last signed on it, and we will pay every cent of the penalty for early termination. Moreover, I heard that Xiao Xue created the ‘Snow Moon Loulan’ and is called the ‘Loulan Queen’. In its peak, the Snow Moon Loulan had more than 100,000 players, but the name ‘Snow Moon Loulan’ has yet to appear in the Mystic Moon world. I’m sure that with Xiao Xue’s wisdom, you won’t completely trust my Gu family. As such, I have reason to believe that Snow Moon Loulan exists, but is simply hidden, or has changed its name. Thus, even with my Gu family’s ‘protection’, your Li family will still be able to protect its assets within the virtual world.”

Li Xiao Xue did not nod, nor did she shake her head. She smiled as she replied, “Alright, since Aunty Gu insists…”

At this moment, Gu Tian Nan couldn’t sit still anymore. He leapt to his feet as he said in a loud voice, “Big sister, please think about this carefully! The current Skyfall Dynasty has nearly 3,000,000 players, and that’s not including the subsidiary guilds! If we cut off the Li family’s financial support, how can we sustain such a large guild? Moreover, the penalty for early termination is a massive

figure, and will take the skin off our Gu family… our Gu family has always excelled, but not in financial matters… Miss Li, please help me convince my big sister.” Gu Qing Han glared at him as she said in a cold voice, “What’s the use of having a big, but unruly mob? The first thing I’m going to do is reduce the size of the Skyfall Dynasty.”

Gu Tian Nan’s entire forehead was covered in sweat, “But… But…”

“There are no ‘buts’. I’ve already decided on this; it’s useless if you disagree.” Gu Qing Han was completely frowning now. Evidently, she was enraged.

The hidden anger in her voice caused Gu Tian Nan to shrink back. He opened his mouth, but didn’t dare to speak again, and he sat down with his head lowered. Gu Tian Dong and Gu Tian Ping had the same reaction-how could they dare to voice their disagreement? Gu Qing Han had always been quite domineering, and the capability she had caused them to respect her from the bottom of their hearts.

Li Xiao Xue continued to calmly speak from where she had been cut off, “Since Aunty Gu is so resolute in this decision, then we’ll go along with Aunty Gu’s wishes. After Aunty Gu leaves here, all of the contracts between our Li family and your Gu family in the virtual world will be terminated; I’ll completely destroy them at midnight tonight. Also, there’s no need for the penalty for early termination. Aunty Gu can just pretend it doesn’t exist.”

Gu Qing Han looked at Li Xiao Xue expressionlessly, “I know that

Xiao Xue would never do anything that does not benefit her or the Li family. That penalty is quite a large sum of money; give me a reason why you would let it go."

Li Xiao Xue slightly smiled with a sincere look in her eyes, "I respect Aunty Gu. Is that reason sufficient?"

Gu Qing Han looked at her deeply, and after falling silent for a few moments, she slowly stood up. She was tall and slim, and the plain clothes she wore were still able to give her an air of nobility, "This reason makes it difficult for me to reject it. Since it's like that, we'll forget about the penalty for early termination. Xiao Xue, Aunty Gu won't take up more of your time. The next time we meet might be within the game... we'll see ourselves out."

Gu Qing Han left without any dallying, and her three little brothers followed behind her, looking complicated, and could not meet Li Xiao Xue's eyes. Li Xiao Xue didn't see them out; she continued to look at Gu Qing Han from behind until she had disappeared from her vision. Within her eyes were some strange ripples.

At this moment, a young woman wearing a plain shirt and an office skirt walked in with a look of confusion on her face as she asked, "Miss, our partnership with the Gu family in the virtual world is incredibly important, and both sides need to rely on each other. According to the contract, the penalty for early termination can be as high as 9 billion dollars... why would Miss suggest for it to be cancelled? Is it really because you respect Gu Qing Han that much?"

Li Xiao Xue continued to gaze in the direction Gu Qing Han had left in as she smiled, “Aunty Gu was completely correct-I, Li Xiao Xue, never do anything that does not benefit me or the Li family… I have my own plans for this. Aunty Gu’s reasons for cutting off our partnership were not simply the reasons she said.”

“… Miss, ten minutes ago, Miss Ying Xi sent a message notifying Miss that they would arrive in 10 minutes, as well as that they’re bringing someone who Miss has wanted to meet.” The young woman said.

“Oh?” Li Xiao Xue turned around as she asked, “Where are they now?”

“0009 is now landing. Would Miss like to go and welcome them?” The young woman said after looking at the screen on her wrist.

“They’re already here…” Li Xiao Xue tapped her finger on her chin as she smiled beautifully, “You can go and receive them. Tell Ying and Xi to take the little sister to the entertainment centre, and that she can play whatever she wants. Bring that male guest here.”

Chapter 515 - Li Family's Xiao Xue

“Master, Tian Tian, we’ve arrived.”

As Chao Ying and Chao Xi sweetly spoke, the jet slowed down then stopped moving. Ling Chen opened his eyes... they were now on the Li family’s territory.

Chao Ying and Chao Xi opened the cabin door, and Tian Tian, who had slept for half the trip, woke up. She was so excited that she almost jumped out. Ling Chen got up, and walked out, and after seeing his surroundings, he was completely dismayed.

No one would believe that this was a private airport.

Their jet had landed at the edge of the private airport, which was right next to the private parking lot. After exiting the jet, they saw 7 people walk past. No matter who it was, anyone would cast their gaze on the woman in the middle first. She was like a moon among stars, and walked half a step in front of the other 6 people. It was difficult to tell her age, but the airs she gave off made her seem like she was in her middle-ages, and yet there were no traces of age on her face. Her footsteps were unhurried, and every step she took seemed to contain power, and could make people want to follow her.

Graceful and dignified were the best ways to describe her. Her clothing was quite plain, but because she was wearing them, they seemed elegant and noble. Her eyes were fixed in front of her, as if she did not see Ling Chen and the others. Perhaps she had noticed

them, but wasn't interested to even look at them.

The woman came to a black car, and two of the people behind came up and opened the door for her. She ducked into the car, and soon, 3 cars left the Li family's northern courtyard.

Ling Chen watched as the car left, feeling stunned.

"Interested in that woman from just then?" Chao Ying said in a small voice after looking at Ling Chen's reaction.

"Who is she?" Ling Chen asked.

"Gu Qing Han," Chao Xi replied.

"It's her!" Ling Chen was slightly surprised, but then felt a bit relieved. Of course, he had heard about Gu Qing Han before-after all, this name, especially in the south, was extremely stunning. She didn't hold any political power, but she had raised up the strongest family, strongest alliance, and strongest underworld power in the south. If she wanted to, she could control half of China. However, she was also extremely low-profile, and almost never appeared in public places, nor did she interact with the media. Countless people had heard about her before, but very few had actually seen her. It was the first time Ling Chen had seen this legendary woman.

That's right... it was the first time he had seen her...

And yet, why did he feel like he had met her before…

Ling Chen spaced out as he gazed in the direction she had left in. He was completely confident in his instincts. The feeling that he had met this woman before didn't disappear, but instead became stronger and stronger.

Chao Ying and Chao Xi noticed Ling Chen's strange reaction, but they were not surprised. For an amazing woman like Gu Qing Han, even if one had never spoken to her before, she would be able to leave a deep impression on them. Chao Xi spoke, "Aunty Gu very rarely goes out. She probably came here to discuss something important with Xiao Xue. If master is curious about her, you can ask Li Xiao Xue about her. Xiao Xue's one of the people who understands her the most.

"Mmm…" Ling Chen replied as he felt even stranger inwardly.

He did his best to forget that feeling, and looked around him. He instantly noticed how tight the security was here. And yet, apart from the people right next to him, there was not a single person in sight. However, his senses told him that there were at least 30 eyes fixed on this place, and there were ten or so guns pointed towards them. For an incredibly rich family like the Li family to have their personal army was no strange matter./

"You're back, Miss Chao Ying and Miss Chao Xi!"

A bright-eyed young woman in semi-formal attire lightly ran over and greeted them from afar. The joy in her voice was not fake-

evidently, she had a good relationship with Chao Ying and Chao Xi. Seeing her, Chao Ying and Chao Xi smiled, and asked, “Wan Yu, is Xiao Xue at home?”

“Yes,” the woman nodded, “Miss has been waiting for you to come back.”

“Let’s go see her now, then. I’m sure she’s already impatient from waiting,” Chao Xi said in a mischievous tone. Li Xiao Xue had been curious about Ling Chen for a long time.

“Ah… about that, Miss asked Miss Chao Ying and Miss Chao Xi to take this cute little sister to play at the entertainment centre, and for me to bring this gentleman to her… is that alright?” the young woman felt a bit awkward. This was because whenever Chao Ying and Chao Xi came back, Li Xiao Xue would always arrange to meet with her. It was the first time she had done something like this.

Chao Ying and Chao Xi looked at each other, and laughed at the same time. They said to Ling Chen in a soft voice, “Looks like Xiao Xue wants to get to know you alone… we’ll take Tian Tian to play then. Remember to come find us after you’re done.”

Chao Ying and Chao Xi didn’t want to go against Li Xiao Xue’s wishes, so they took Tian Tian to the entertainment centre. Although it was a private entertainment centre, it was on par with a mid-sized public entertainment centre, and would be able to keep Tian Tian occupied for quite a while. As such, Ling Chen followed this young woman, who seemed to be Li Xiao Xue’s secretary, to where she was.

Since Ling Chen had first seen Li Xiao Xue in the virtual world, he had been quite interested in her. This sort of interest a man had in a beautiful woman was one of appreciation, as well as desire. This was even more so because of the ‘richest family’ behind her, the Li family.

Money couldn’t allow one to do anything, but without money, one wouldn’t be able to do anything. Ling Chen had a group of Reapers who helped him with intel, espionage, etc, which all required money. As such, he was thinking of how to receive some financial benefits from the big miss of the Li family… with how rich the Li family was, even giving him scraps would be an astronomical figure. As such, he had investigated this Li Xiao Xue, but many of the things that had happened afterwards had caused him to become even more interested in her.

What was unexpected was that when he had left Beijing and come to this heaven-like Su Hang, he had become involved with her. He and Tian Tian were living in Li Xiao Xue’s Bamboo Sea Wonderland, and she had gifted them a racecar. Moreover, she had also helped them get to Beijing to attend Su’Er’s birthday banquet… the big miss of the Li family never took a bad deal, and before Ling Chen had started to approach her, she had already started to approach him. With how much he owed her now, he had to go and meet her even if he didn’t want to.

Li Wan Yu gently knocked on the door, then said, “Miss, the guest you’ve been waiting for is here.”

“What about Chao Xi and the others?” A lazy voice sounded out.

“They took that little girl to the entertainment centre.” Although Li Xiao Xue couldn’t see her through the door, Li Wan Yu still spoke and acted extremely respectfully.

“Ask him to come in, and notify everyone that before I give the order, no one’s to come within 100 metres of the room! No one! Including my father!”

“Eh?” Li Wan Yu was evidently surprised, “But Miss, your safety…”

“With this esteemed guest, I can say that this is the safest I’ve been in my entire life. Do as I say.”

Li Wan Yu looked at Ling Chen strangely, then opened the door for him. She then took a step back and bowed respectfully, saying, “Sir, please enter.”

Ling Chen walked in while wondering why Li Xiao Xue would want to meet him individually. After he entered, Li Wan Yu closed the door, then quickly left. Very soon, everyone standing guard around this area quickly departed.

“Ling Tian’s name is like a peal of thunder in everyone player’s ears. This little sister has been a friend in spirit, and seeing you in person, I’ve finally achieved my wish. The little sister is Li Xiao Xue; is big brother Ling Tian willing to tell me his name?”

Her voice was extremely pleasant, and Ling Chen looked towards

where her voice had come from. His eyes immediately lit up upon seeing the slim and beautiful woman sitting on the mahogany chair. She had a dignified and elegant smile on her face, and she got up and slowly walked towards him. She was wearing a black muslin dress that fell to her thighs, and when she walked, the dress fluttered, accentuating her slim waist and revealing her incredibly pristine skin and her full cleavage. Her exposed calves looked extremely tender and supple, which would make it difficult for anyone to look away.

Of course, this wasn't what she had worn when she was receiving the Gu family's siblings. Evidently, she had quickly changed before receiving Ling Chen... She had changed into this elegant, yet sexy and seductive dress.

Ling Chen's eyes were immediately fixed on her body, and was not even in the capacity to consider if it was appropriate. He laughed as he replied, "How could I not have heard about the big miss of the Li family, the Loulan Queen? However, what I'm surprised is that this Loulan Queen is much more beautiful than the rumours say."

Light eyebrows, upturned eyes, smooth and supple skin-no matter how one looked at her, they would feel blinded by her beauty. She looked completely different to the cold and arrogant Li Xiao Xue that Ling Chen had seen at the auction. Back then, Li Xiao Xue had seemed like a proud and serious upper-class elite, while the current Li Xiao Xue in front of him seemed like an elegant and beautiful young woman. This was especially so because of her beautiful eyes, which Ling Chen couldn't look away from.

Li Xiao Xue stopped walking when she arrived in front of Ling Chen, and smiled, “Big brother Ling Tian’s even more handsome and charming than the rumours say. I’m sure that with so many haloes around big brother Ling Tian, countless women would fall for you. No wonder why my good sisters and Ying and Xi, who view the excellent young men in Su Hang as dirt, would be so devoted to you.”

Chapter 516 - Think About It Later!

Any man would enjoy being praised by a beautiful woman, and Ling Chen was no exception to this. Adding on her peerless background, as well as the sincerity in his eyes, Ling Chen felt giddy with joy. His eyes slightly narrowed as he said with a smile that wasn't quite a smile, "In that case, with me standing here, has little sister Xiao Xue 'fallen for' me?"

"This little sister is also a normal girl; how could I resist big brother Ling Tian's charm?" Li Xiao Xue gave a lovely smile, "I heard that big brother Ling Tian has many lovers who are all outstanding beauties whose beauty can bring down a country. However, a dragon amongst men like big brother Ling Tian should have thousands of beauties. I'm quite jealous that my 2 good sisters, Ying and Xi can receive big brother Ling Tian's affection. It's just that with this little sister's plain looks, big brother Ling Tian might not even be willing to look at me, let alone fall for me."

These words almost sounded like they were from a play. Could this big miss Li have invited him here just to make sport of him? Ling Chen's expression became one of amusement as he immediately replied, "No, no, no, no! Little sister Xiao Xue is stunningly beautiful, and has an extraordinary temperament. Her background is immense, and is also an extremely capable person. I'm sure there's no one under the heavens who can escape from little sister Xiao Xue's charm."

"Does this include big brother Ling Tian?" Li Xiao Xue asked flirtatiously.

“Of course,” Ling Chen said as he nodded. Li Xiao Xue gave a gentle smile as a crafty look flashed on her face, “Since it’s like that, would big brother Ling Tian like Xiao Xue to enter his ‘harem’? If big brother Ling Tian is willing, Xiao Xue will be your woman from now on, and you will be Xiao Xue’s man. Xiao Xue’s willing to give you her body, right here, right now.”

Ling Chen: “……”

“……”

“#$%……”

Before entering, Ling Chen had imagined at least 30 different scenarios that could play out. However, this was something that he did not consider to even be a possibility. The Li Xiao Xue in front of him was not at all acting like a woman who stood at the peak of the financial world. Instead, she was like a lewd wife who had not been able to have sex with her husband for a long time, who was once again reunited with him.

Of course, it was not as if Ling Chen did not want this. However, how could the high and mighty Loulan Queen say such words… was it a trap? Was this woman trying to throw him off? Apart from those reasons, there didn’t seem to be any other possibility. However, weren’t these tricks a bit too low?

Ling Chen crossed his arms as the smile on his face became slightly colder, “Little sister Xiao Xue, your time is worth millions of dollars every second; I can’t afford to waste your time. As such,

let's stop with the jokes now. I came here to thank you for the care and help you've given to us. If there's anything you need, let me know. As long as I can help, I will do my best to help you."

When Ling Chen owed someone a favour, he would definitely return the favour. He didn't like the feeling of owing others.

Hearing Ling Chen's words, Li Xiao Xue's eyes looked down, and her voice became lazier, "Jokes? Big brother Ling Tian, do you really think I'm joking?"

Li Xiao Xue gave a charming smile as she walked forwards, with her perky breasts almost touching Ling Chen's chest. Her eyes narrowed as she smiled as she softly asked, "Big brother Ling Tian, do you want to... make love to me?"

.....

Ling Chen was no gentleman; in fact, sometimes he was a voracious beast. When Li Xiao Xue walked closer to him, his instinct wasn't to take a step backwards, but to look at her breasts. Her breasts were two busty mounds, looking as if they would rip through her dress at any moment. His gaze lowered to her incredibly slim waist, then even lower... before he could look any lower, Li Xiao Xue's words completely stunned him.

"What... did you say?" Li Xiao Xue giggled, making her look even more beautiful. She looked at him flirtatiously, as if she was a young girl in the springtime of her youth, then softly spoke, "In Su Hang, the number of men who desire my body could line up from

the West Lake to the East Crane Pagoda. This is the first time Xiao Xue's asked a man to make love to her, big brother Ling Tian... do you really not want to make love to me?"

The Li Xiao Xue in front of him was incredibly beautiful, and had the fragrance of a young woman, which wafted into his nose, causing him to feel intoxicated. Even if a woman like this didn't have an extraordinary temperament, she would still be able to easily seduce a man. What's more, she was the successor to the richest family in China. If Ling Chen said that he wasn't interested in her body, he would definitely be lying. However, Li Xiao Xue saying such words gave him a big fright.

Ling Chen stared for a few seconds before the look in his eyes became dangerous. He lewdly looked at her as he asked, "You want me to make love to you?"

"That's right?" Li Xiao Xue's eyes became two crescent moons, which shone brightly. She swept her hair back behind her ears as she spoke with her delicate and pink lips, "I'm a normal woman, and I want a man to have sex with me. Is that strange? Hehe... also, I can give big brother Ling Tian many reasons to make love to me."

Ling Chen: "....."

Li Xiao Xue's hands reached behind her heck and undid her hairband, allowing her long hair to fall down like a waterfall. She looked up and embarrassedly met Ling Chen's gaze, and looked so beautiful that it made it difficult for him to exercise self-control... such a beautiful woman was inviting a man to make love to her... who could resist?

“Firstly, I control half of the Li family financial group, and am familiar with everything in the Li family financial group. My father only has me, his single daughter, so I am also the successor to the entire Li family financial group. If you make love to me, I’ll be your woman, and the Li family financial group will also become yours, making you impossibly rich. Big brother Ling Tian, can you reject that?

“Secondly, Ling Tian City, which is named after you, is about to complete construction, and I’m doing my best to develop it. With my Li family financial group’s finances and my capabilities, I can build an empire for you in the virtual world, allowing you to have power equivalent that to an emperor.”

“Ling Tian... Ling Tian City? You’re saying that new city’s called Ling Tian City? Not Meng Xin City or Heart’s Dream City?” Ling Chen felt quite shocked-he had not expected this at all.

“That’s right,” Li Xiao Xue gave a gentle and clever smile, “To Meng Xin, the only acceptable name was Ling Tian City-a city that belongs to you, Ling Tian.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Li Xiao Xue continued, “Thirdly, you already heard me order everyone away, and this room has very good soundproofing. No matter what you do to me, no one else will know... even if you deny that you slept with me, no one would know either. There’s nothing to worry about.”

Ling Chen: “……”

“Fourthly… I, Li Xiao Xue, am still a virgin. I’ve never been touched by a man before.

“Fifthly… big brother Ling Tian…” Li Xiao Xue’s voice became incredibly soft, and she leaned forwards as her warm breath hit Ling Chen’s ear, “I, Li Xiao Xue, am quite beautiful. As a normal man, how could you reject a beautiful woman offering herself up to you… big brother Ling Tian, do you really not want to make love to the richest man’s daughter; don’t you want to make love to the Loulan Queen?”

Seeing Li Xiao Xue like this, and hearing her say such things, any man would burn with desire and leap on her to ravage her.

Ling Chen wasn’t abnormal; no, he was a very ordinary man in this regard. He desperately wanted to immediately turn into a beast, but his incredible mental strength allowed him to remember who this woman was… a woman would never do anything that was not beneficial to her! If she made a loss, that would be to gain 10 times over in future.

As Ling Chen struggled with his internal conflict, Li Xiao Xue’s face had already become red, and she leaned against his chest, with her full breasts sticking against him as she moved up and down.

This woman… she wasn’t wearing underwear!

Ling Chen felt an explosion go off in his mind, and he cast all of his worries behind...

He might as well eat this meat that had been delivered right to him!!

Everything else, he would think about it later!

Think about it later!!

Ling Chen grabbed Li Xiao Xue's wrists, and wrapped his right arm around her. With just a thin muslin dress in the way, he could feel the softness of her breasts pressed against him.

"Ah..." No matter how seductive Li Xiao Xue had acted, in the end, she was still a virgin who had never been with a man before. This caused her to feel shocked and embarrassed, but she quickly adjusted her emotional state, and started to move her body against his.

Ling Chen didn't use too much strength as he ripped apart Li Xiao Xue's black muslin dress, then pulled it off her. Her curvy body was revealed to Ling Chen, and she lay in his embrace, her perky breasts proudly standing in front of him. Their shape was wonderful, and her skin was smooth and supple. They were definitely exquisite, top-class goods!

"Since you want it so much, I'll satisfy you." Ling Chen said as he

wrapped his arms around her.

Li Xiao Xue's face flushed red, but the wanton and unrestrained look remained in her eyes. She hooked her arms around Ling Chen's neck as she said, "If you're a man, then pound me so hard that I won't be able to get out of bed for 3 days. Don't hold back."

With the passion inside him completely ignited, Ling Chen already lifted her up and came to the bedroom. He placed her onto the soft bed, then ripped off his clothes as he leapt on her like a ravenous wolf.

At night, the Li family's grounds were completely lit up. Tian Tian happily played her heart out at the entertainment centre, and had no thoughts about leaving. As for Chao Ying and Chao Xi, they stayed by her side the entire time. There was no sound from Li Xiao Xue's residence, and all of the hidden guards were 100 metres away, silently waiting for her orders... no one knew about the intense 'battle' happening inside.

Inside the room was a world with only 2 people. It was filled with intense shaking, trembling, flying fluids and strong smells.

Li Xiao Xue's slim fingers tightly gripped the pillow; the bedsheets had long since been torn into shreds. Ling Chen pressed himself down on her, grabbing her waist as he pounded this beauty.

Although the soundproofing was quite good, and the guards nearby had all retreated, Li Xiao Xue didn't dare to moan. She

gritted her teeth the entire time, but small moans still leaked out of her lips as her body twisted like a small boat amidst a storm. Her large breasts swayed as Ling Chen furiously slammed into her, and her slim, long legs were wrapped tightly around Ling Chen's waist.

This was indeed her first time, but her seduction made Ling Chen almost break her. At first, they were on the bed, but then they ended up on the carpet, then pressed up against the door, then on her work desk, then in front of her make-up mirror, then on the sofa... Ling Chen had tried every position on her in every part of the room. Li Xiao Xue couldn't remember how many times she had climaxed, but could feel that her consciousness was about to leave her body.

After Ling Chen was fully satisfied, Li Xiao Xue lay on the carpet. Her entire body was a rosy pink colour, and couldn't even move a finger. After the storm had ended, she moaned, and closed her eyes, and fell asleep.

Ling Chen, who felt as if he had just enjoyed a delicious meal, brought over a blanket and covered Li Xiao Xue up with it. He then dressed himself and left, making sure to lock the door as he did so. He then called Tian Tian, Chao Ying and Chao Xi, and left.

Ling Chen's feelings could only be described with one word...

Refreshed!

Incredibly refreshed!

Chapter 517 - It's Fate

They returned to the Bamboo Sea Wonderland in a luxurious 7-seat car provided by Li Xiao Xue. Chao Ying and Chao Xi were allowed to borrow any of Li Xiao Xue's cars without even asking her. Tian Tian, who was tired from playing, lay on Ling Chen's lap and slept, and Ling Chen felt incredibly refreshed. When they were nearly back, he asked, "Ying, Xi, don't you want to know what I talked to Li Xiao Xue about?"

"Of course we do," Chao Xi said as she giggled, "You talked for nearly 2 hours; I'm sure you talked lots and did lots. Seeing how happy master looks, you must have had a very pleasurable chat."

"Indeed, it was very~ pleasurable~" Ling Chen said as he leaned back.

"What did you talk about that was so pleasurable?" Since Ling Chen had brought it up, Chao Ying and Chao Xi couldn't resist asking.

Ling Chen smiled incredibly contently, "In actuality, I didn't say much with the big miss Li. We were mainly... mmm, so we were at it for 2 hours. I'm not sure if that self-confident big miss Li will be able to get out of the bed for the next few days."

Screeeech!

The car suddenly skidded, and almost crashed into the bamboo trees.

Thinking back, when he had first entered the room, Li Xiao Xue had immediately started to seduce him without hesitation. In those circumstances, if Ling Chen didn't leap on her, he wouldn't be able to live it down as a man. Now that his mind was a bit clearer, he started to wonder what Li Xiao Xue's true aim was... This was the first time he had officially met Li Xiao Xue, but they had both heard much about each other and investigated each other. A woman's first time was something important to them, and yet the daughter of the richest man in China had asked him to make love to her after just exchanging a few words...

What did he have that Li Xiao Xue wanted?

The influence he had as Ling Tian in the virtual world? The new city? The new city relied on the finances provided by Li Xiao Xue, and in exchange for her money, a large part of the city was to be owned by Li Xiao Xue. If it was for the new city, she wouldn't have to do such a thing. As for Ling Tian's influence and fame... They didn't seem very useful either.

As for his real life identity... He was an enemy of the Long family and Xuanyuan family, and was also a national fugitive. If word got out that the Li family was involved with him, that would bring them immense trouble.

After thinking about it, Ling Chen simply couldn't understand why Li Xiao Xue had done such a thing. In the end, he put his hand on his face...

Could it be that she really fell for my handsome looks and elegant demeanour, resulting in her desperately asking me to make love to her?

Hmm… that seemed to be the only reason.

Thinking to there, Ling Chen lowered his face… It seemed that in future, he couldn't go around with this face that could bring disaster to a country in the open…

……

Li family's compound, northern courtyard.

After receiving Li Xiao Xue's phone call, Li Wan Yu hurried back. Upon opening the door, she stood in dismay, and even wondered if she had walked into the wrong place.

The originally clean and tidy room was now in total disorder. The sofa and chairs were lying on their sides, and various precious bonsais had fallen to the ground. the carpet looked as if it had been completely uplifted, and the heavy work desk and bookshelf had both moved. There was also a hormonal odor in the air… Although Li Wan Yu was a prim and proper person, she knew what this smell was.

Li Xiao Xue was leaning against her mahogany chair behind the work desk. The current Li Xiao Xue didn't have any of the cool and aloof look she normally had. Her hair fell messily about her

shoulders, and her black dress was torn and tattered, and barely covered her body, revealing much of her skin. Her body was also a flushed, rosy colour, making her look bewitchingly beautiful.

Li Xiao Xue's body was leaning back, accentuating her shapely body. Her face was still quite red, and there was a pleased look in her eyes. Her skin still glistened with some sweat, which made her look even more charming.

"M-Miss..." Li Wan Yu was completely dumbfounded, and only spoke after coming back to her senses after a while.

Li Xiao Xue lazily opened her eyes. The feeling of weakness spread throughout her entire body, making her feel like just opening her eyes took all of her strength. She stretched out a finger and brushed aside her messy hair as she weakly said, "Wan Yu, close the door and come over here."

Wan Yu nodded, then looked at the messy room and the completely-different Li Xiao Xue, and hurriedly closed the door and walked over, "Miss, what happened?"

"Whew..." Li Xiao Xue exhaled a few times before replying, "That man really doesn't know how to treat women tenderly."

Li Wan Yu stared in shock for a moment before her face became incredibly pale. She stiffly stood there, unable to utter a word. However, I liked the feeling of being brutally violated. Perhaps he'll help me understand more the pleasures of being a woman." Li Xiao Xue's face became red, as if she was savouring the memory.

She narrowed her eyes until they were nearly closed, and raised her hand. Within her palm was a white liquid.

"Take this to that place and ask them to give me results as soon as possible. Tell them that the results are very important to me."

Li Xiao Xue's voice was incredibly lazy and strengthless, and yet contained an imposing might.

Even if Li Wan Yu was an idiot, she would be able to tell what the white liquid in Li Xiao Xue's palm was. She opened and closed her mouth many times, and her hands trembled as she mustered the courage to scoop up those drops of white liquid... The wet and sticky sensation caused her heart to beat rapidly, as if it was going to escape from her chest.

2 hours later, an A4 sized, detailed report was brought over by Li Wan Yu and handed over to Li Xiao Xue. She looked over every word carefully... a few moments later, she put the report down and a slight smile appeared on her face.

"A woman's instinct is simply terrifying."

"The Gu family has broken off the partnership with us most likely because they're going to do something big against the Yan Huang Alliance. Everyone knows this massive guild's name, but no one knows the true meaning-it doesn't refer to the sky falling, but a dynasty falling. In China, the 'dynasty' refers to the Long family, while Skyfall Dynasty's true meaning is the fall of the Long family! The only person who would dare to do this... is Gu Qing Han, who

completely hates the Long family.

.....

After returning home, night had already fallen. Tian Tian was so tired that she went to sleep without even eating dinner. She had not slept too well in Beijing-only her own bed was the most comfortable place in the world. Ling Chen once again thought about the incident with Li Xiao Xue, then cast it out of his mind... he had eaten a delicious meal for free, and since he had already eaten it, what was he worrying about? If Li Xiao Xue asked a ridiculous favour out of him, he could just deny such a thing ever happened. What would she be able to do about it?

Ling Chen immediately felt much more relaxed. He lay on the bed and hugged Tian Tian as he entered the virtual world.

“Ding... welcome to the Mystic Moon, we hope you enjoy your stay.”

To Ling Chen, he was not entering for the game anymore, but for that beautiful, yet illusory, dream.

The location of the next orb: the White Tiger’s Heart.

Just these 3 words gave Ling Chen an extremely clear destination. If he wanted to find the orb, all he needed to do was head towards the White Tiger City in the Forgotten Continent’s west and find the guardian beast, the White Tiger.

“That’s all I can do for now.”

Although obtaining the White Tiger’s Heart seemed almost impossible, Ling Chen didn’t have any other alternatives. Over the course of finding all of the Lunar Scourge’s Orbs, obtaining each one had been in impossible circumstances.

The town closest to the White Tiger City was the town next to the Fairyland Mountain Range. After stocking up on potions, he used a Spatial Orb to teleport then, then summoned Snow Cherry and started to fly towards the White Tiger City. Currently, when he was riding on Snow Cherry, his Movement Speed was 344. Even without Broken Shadow, it was as if he was riding on a bolt of lightning. It wouldn’t take too long to reach the west.

Not too long after leaving the town, before he even reached the Fairyland Mountain Range, Ling Chen casually looked down and saw a person walking. This place was quite close to the Fairyland Mountain Range, and powerful monsters could appear at any time. As such, because this region was so dangerous, there was not a soul in sight, so the figure was quite easy to spot.

Seeing this person, Ling Chen felt quite shocked, and stopped Snow Cherry... The person had a monkey-like face, was thin as firewood and was holding a small wooden stick in his hands. Seeing him walk with great flair, Ling Chen immediately recognised him.

The Underworld Merchant-Qian Gun Gun!

Ling Chen stared in shock. Qi Yue said that most people didn't encounter him even once in their lives, and yet he had repeatedly bumped into him. This was incredibly luck. Ling Chen didn't hesitate as he pointed below him, "Snow Cherry, let's go down."

Whoosh!

Snow Cherry's body drew a beautiful white arc in the air, and landed right in front of Qian Gun Gun, giving him a big fright.

"Ah, what a coincidence. We meet yet again." Ling Chen jumped down from Snow Cherry and grinned at Qian Gun Gun. After going to the East Ocean Continent, he now had an extra 10 billion gold or so, and was fully confident he could buy anything he wanted form Qian Gun Gun.

Qian Gun Gun was scared into jumping back a step, and he immediately recognised Ling Chen. He started to scream, "It's you, boy! Weird, weird; why am I always running into you! The number of people who have met me 3 times within 1000 years can be counted on a single hand."

"It's fate," Ling Chen replied as he smiled widely.

Chapter 518-The Rampaging White Tiger

“Fate?” Qian Gun Gun’s mouth twitched and his nose moved as he suddenly jumped up as if he had been pricked in the bottom by a needle, “How could there be such a strong smell of money on you? My goodness, it’s been hundreds of years since I’ve smelled so much money on a living person. You’re so young, and yet you have so much money!!”

Just by sniffing, Qian Gun Gun could roughly tell how much money a person had-this was something Ling Chen had experienced before. His smile grew wider, “That’s right, that’s right. In that case, are you interested in selling to me again?”

The first time he had met Qian Gun Gun, he only had a few ten thousand gold coins, and missed out on a heap of treasures. The same thing happened during their second meeting. This time, he had more than 10 billion gold, and was determined to buy everything Qian Gun Gun had.

Qian Gun Gun’s eyes shone, and looked at Ling Chen as if he was his own father. However, he patted his bag, and shook his head while looking depressed, “God-freaking-dammit, I’ve finally bumped into a super-rich person, but I’ve got nothing. I’ve already been out from the Underworld for quite a few months, and I’ve already sold everything… Hmm, how about I sell you information? You can ask me anything you want-there are very few things that I, Qian Gun Gun, don’t know about.”

“Sold… everything…?” Ling Chen’s face twitched… Could he be any more unlucky? When he had no money, Qian Gun Gun had a

heap of items; now that he had money, Qian Gun Gun had nothing to sell!

Gooooooooooodddamit!!!!!

Qian Gun Gun stared at him while saliva flowed out of his mouth. Facing this sort of wealthy person who only appeared every few hundred years, he was quite reluctant to leave. Since he didn't have anything, Ling Chen could only ask in frustration, "When will you have new items then?"

"Well, I'm actually on the way back to the Underworld. When I'm back from the Underworld, I'll have more items." Qian Gun Gun had a disgusting smile on his face.

"Oh, alright then." Ling Chen shook his head, then came a bit closer as he chuckled, "It doesn't matter though, since we're bound together by fate, when you come back from the Underworld, we'll immediately meet again. Isn't that right?"

As he spoke, Ling Chen cast a [True Lucky Hand] towards Qian Gun Gun.

"Ding... your [True Lucky Hand] has succeeded, you have received the special item 'Moon God Palace Map' from Qian Gun Gun, and were not detected."

Ling Chen: "....."

It was that map from last time! The map that Qi Yue said he had to obtain no matter what!

Qian Gun Gun, who had no idea what just happened, eagerly nodded, “I, Qian Gun Gun, only do business with people who are brought to me by fate. If we don’t have fate, no matter how much money a person has, I won’t be willing to sell him anything. If you don’t want to buy any information, let’s meet again in future.”

“Oh, wait, wait,” Ling Chen stopped him, “I’m going to the White Tiger City, so I wanted to hear about…”

“What? You’re going to the White Tiger City?” Qian Gun Gun’s reaction was quite abnormal. He turned around with a ‘whoosh’ and said in a serious tone, “Since we’re tied together by fate, and you have so much money, I’ll give you some information for free: don’t go to the White Tiger City, no matter what! I just came from over there, and nearly died!”

“Eh?” Ling Chen’s eyes widened as he hurriedly asked, “Could something big have happened at the White Tiger City?”

The White Tiger City was one of the 4 main cities of the humans. What could have happened for a thousand-year old devil like Qian Gun Gun to nearly die?

“You want to know?” Qian Gun Gun stretched out his withered hand, “If you want information, bring out the money. All my information is completely reliable.”

“How much?”

“500,000!”

“Holy crap! A piece of information for 500,000 gold? Are you crazy, or do you think I’m crazy?”

“You’re free to buy if you want. It’s completely up to you.” Qian Gun Gun smirked, and started to walk off.

“You sure are something!” Ling Chen gritted his teeth and took out 500,000 gold. Back at the Lonely Spirit Ridge, a piece of information had only costed him 10,000 gold. Evidently, seeing that Ling Chen had much more money now, this guy dared to charge a higher price.

After receiving the 500,000 gold, Qian Gun Gun’s old face beamed like a flower, “That’s right! A big incident happened at the White Tiger City. The guardian beast, the White Tiger… has gone on a rampage.”

“The White Tiger went on a rampage? How did this happen?” Ling Chen asked in shock.

“Because the answer’s fairly long, 800,000 gold.”

“Holy fudge…”

Ling Chen handed over 800,000 gold. Ling Chen had to obtain as much information as he could about the White Tiger. Qian Gun Gun's expression became even more cordial as he spoke, "The reason's a bit complicated. You know about the 10 ancient demon beasts, right? Yesterday, one of the 10 ancient demon beasts, the Ice Demon Beast suddenly appeared west of the White Tiger City. The guardian beast, the White Tiger, immediately sensed its demonic aura.

"As a guardian beast, what it hated most was this sort of demonic aura. Back then, the 10 ancient demon beasts agreed that they would obediently stay within their own territories, and would never enter human territory. As such, they were left alone for all that time. However, the Ice Demon Beast went crazy and entered into human territory. Not only that, it brought out an even stronger demon beast... the Tyrant Demon Beast. Both of them flew towards the White Tiger City.

"As such, the White Tiger became enraged, and locked them inside the Thunder God Barrier that it created, not allowing them to get any closer to the White Tiger City. It also started to launch destructive attacks. The Tyrant Demon Beast is the third strongest overall out of the 10 ancient demon beasts, and is weaker than only the Sky Demon Beast and Earth Demon Beast. However, the White Tiger's the strongest out of the 4 guardian beasts, so even with the Tyrant Demon Beast and Ice Demon Beast working together, they were unable to defeat it. If the Tyrant Demon Beast and Ice Demon Beast obediently retreated, that would have been the end of the matter. However, they were desperate to break out of the Thunder God Barrier, and started to fight with the White Tiger..."

Ling Chen's eyes widened. Listening to there, he understood

what had happened.

That day, after the Ice Demon Beast had escaped, she had flown towards the west to find the hidden Tyrant Demon Beast! After finding the Tyrant Demon Beast, she told it about the Lunar Scourge, and they set out to alert the other demon beasts...

However, they were unable to leave the west before being discovered by the White Tiger.

“Are you saying that the White Tiger went on a rampage because it fought with the Tyrant Demon Beast and Ice Demon Beast?” Ling Chen asked.

“Of course not. There are 2 methods to breaking out of the Thunder God Barrier. The first is for the White Tiger to voluntarily unlock it, and the other is to kill the White Tiger. As the strongest guardian beast, how could the White Tiger be easily defeated? Seeing that neither of these two possibilities were available, the terrifying Tyrant Demon Beast created a third way.”

“What was it?”

“Soul stealing! The Tyrant Demon Beast doesn’t have a physical form; it always relies on possessing other beings! Possessing a body and soul stealing is its most terrifying ability! It possessed the White Tiger and used its demonic power to devour its soul, and stole its body to use. After succeeding, the White Tiger’s body and power belonged to the Tyrant Demon Beast!” Qian Gun Gun said in a serious manner.

“Could it be… that the Tyrant Demon Beast really succeeded?” Ling Chen asked as he frowned.

“Not yet. How could the White Tiger’s soul be devoured so easily? If it was just the Tyrant Demon Beast, it would have no chance of succeeding, and might even suffer backlash. However, it also had the Ice Demon Beast with it! Under a barrage of powerful attacks, it was difficult for even the White Tiger to hold on. When I left, the White Tiger had already lost control Although it’s still resisting, at least half of its body has been controlled by the Tyrant Demon Beast. If the situation continues like that, it’ll be a matter of time before it is fully taken over. Perhaps the Tyrant Demon Beast has already succeeded. That would mean the White Tiger’s soul has been completely devoured, and that it is completely dead. In that case, the Thunder God Barrier would disappear.

“The White Tiger being taken over meant that it lost control over its lightning, resulting in many towns and small cities being destroyed. Even the White Tiger City was nearly hit. Right now, the White Tiger City has descended into chaos. However… heheh, they only saw the White Tiger rampaging, but didn’t know the reason. Only I, Qian Gun Gun know the true reason, and you’re the second person to know. Boy, if you want to go to the White Tiger City, you should pick a different time; it’s too dangerous right now.” Qian Gun Gun said as he grinned.

The White Tiger was being possessed? Such a shocking thing was happening?

The demon beasts were so desperate to leave that they would

fight the White Tiger-it seemed that they were quite eager to obtain the Lunar Scourge.

Ling Chen didn't hesitate as he jumped onto Snow Cherry's back, yelling, "I must go! I need to find the White Tiger!"

"So it's like that." Qian Gun Gun's eyes lit up, "I just so happen to have a teleport scroll for the White Tiger City."

"How much?!" Ling Chen immediately stopped as he roared out.

"3,000,00 gold! Take it or leave it!"

"Go screw yourself! I'll take it!!"

After throwing out 3,000,000 gold to buy a teleport scroll that Qian Gun Gun had bought for a few silver coins, Ling Chen immediately crushed it and disappeared.

"Heheh, 3,000,000 gold for a teleport scroll. Who would've thought I would meet such a fat sheep." Qian Gun Gun laughed.

With Ling Chen's speed, even if he travelled day and night, it would take him many days to reach the White Tiger City. With the teleport scroll, he could instantly arrive. However, the teleport scroll didn't teleport him within the White Tiger City, but right in front of the main entrance... Because Ling Chen did not yet have the right to enter the White Tiger City.

The air in the west was extremely dry, and the wind felt quite uncomfortable on one's skin. The poor climate here meant that the White Tiger City was far less developed than the Azure Dragon City. As soon as he arrived, Ling Chen felt the ground under his feet shaking, as well as low roaring sounds. He looked up at the sky, and saw that in the west, there was purple lightning wildly crackling. The lightning came from the White Tiger.

The City Guards standing guard at the main entrance all looked pale as a sheet, and the hands gripping their weapons trembled. They stared at the sky to the west, as if they were looking at the apocalypse. After a while, one of the City Guards noticed Ling Chen, and quickly said after giving him a good look, "Hello, you must be an adventurer from another world. According to the rules, unless you have special permissions, you're not allowed to enter the White Tiger City before you reach LV70. Moreover, the White Tiger City is currently facing a catastrophe, so it's best if you left quickly."

The current situation indicated that the battle was still ongoing, and that the White Tiger's soul had not yet been completely devoured. Ling Chen immediately activated Broken Shadow as he shot towards the west on top of Snow Cherry like a wild gust of wind. Seeing Ling Chen's incredible speed, the City Guards were completely dumbfounded, and they looked as if they had seen a ghost.

Chapter 519 - Thunder God Barrier

“Qi Yue, is this an incredibly rare opportunity?”

“Indeed, this is a good opportunity, but it could also be a disaster. With little master’s current strength, entering into a battle between the White Tiger and 2 demon beasts is equivalent to committing suicide. Even if you don’t die, you won’t be able to turn the battle around.”

“The battle between the White Tiger and the demon beasts isn’t important to me; I just need to kill the White Tiger! They’ve already fought for a day and a night, so they all must be greatly weakened. Moreover, the White Tiger has lost control… Originally, my chances of killing the White Tiger were 0, but now it’s definitely a possibility!”

“It seems that little master really has a chance at killing the White Tiger. However, little master should know that the chances of little master dying are thousands of times higher. Although the White Tiger has become weak and has lost control, it is still the White Tiger. Moreover, the White Tiger is a guardian beast and is deeply worshipped and venerated. If you kill the White Tiger, all of the residents of the White Tiger City will hate you… Has little master realised this?”

“As long as I can save Ruo Ruo, I wouldn’t hesitate to kill even the emperor of heaven!!”

Ling Chen sped on forwards. An hour or so later, he reached the

west of the White Tiger City, where the sky was a terrifying deep purple colour. The lightning clouds seemed mere metres away, and it seemed as if the lightning would destroy everything. The ground shook violently, and bestial roars rumbled in his ears, sounding as if there were hundreds of beasts simultaneously roaring.

There were more than 100 people wearing purple Magic Robes, which signified that they were Lightning Mages. They stood guard here to prevent the lightning from spreading, so as to protect the White Tiger City. Seeing Ling Chen come near, they yelled out to him, “Young man, don’t come over here. Lord White Tiger has gone crazy, and the nearby towns have all been destroyed. The range of the devastation is too large, and it’s too dangerous here. Please leave immediately!”

In front of them was the White Tiger’s Thunder God Barrier. The ground had been completely devastated by the berserk lightning, and there was not a single living creature within there. Evidently, stepping into the Thunder God Barrier would be equivalent to committing suicide. Even these Lightning Mages who possessed great resistance to lightning couldn’t deal with it lightly.

Ling Chen ignored their words and obstruction, and ordered Snow Cherry to fly above them. He entered into the dangerous region covered by the White Tiger’s power and continued to rush forwards.

Crack!

Boom!

Streaks of lightning, both big and small, rained down from above. Ling Chen didn't slow down, and continuously dodged from side to side as he avoided all of the lightning. However, the further forward he travelled, the denser the lightning became, and the louder the thunder became. Ling Chen could hear boundless fury and struggling within the White Tiger's roars... it had been continuously roaring, as if it was telling the residents of the White Tiger City to escape.

Ling Chen was still quite far away from where the White Tiger was, and couldn't see it with his eyes. However, he could roughly estimate where it was from its roars. Ling Chen summoned Xiao Hui, "Xiao Hui, go and track down where the White Tiger is!"

Xiao Hui landed on the ground and after looking around for half a second, he quickly ran forwards. He had 300 Movement Speed, and wasn't much slower than Ling Chen on his mount. Adding on the fact that he was quite small, he was extremely nimble, and easily dodged the lightning.

10 minutes later.

"Watch out, the Thunder God's Barrier is right ahead!"

Qi Yue shouted out as Ling Chen approached a faint purple screen. Xiao Hui stopped right before he touched it, and stared at it, as if he was deciding whether it was safe or not.

"What will happen if we enter the Thunder God's Barrier?" Ling

Chen asked.

"The Thunder God Barrier is tied to the White Tiger's power and lifeforce. Once activated, unless it is deactivated or the White Tiger is killed, it will not disappear. It is possible to enter this barrier, but once you enter, you will not be able to leave. Moreover, once you enter, you'll be attacked by the dense lightning, and will fall into a lightning purgatory. The White Tiger can only use this 3 times in its lifetime; if it wasn't facing 2 powerful demon beasts, it wouldn't have decided to use it," Qi Yue explained, "Little master should not enter this barrier under any circumstances; you should just wait here for the conclusion of the battle. No matter who wins or loses, both sides will have suffered grave injuries, which will be the best opportunity for little master."

After Qi Yue finished speaking, Xiao Hui suddenly gave a low growl and quickly rushed into the Thunder God Barrier.

"Xiao Hui!" Ling Chen was stunned and called out in shock. As Xiao Hui entered the Thunder God Barrier, purple lightning crackled above him and tens of bolts of lightning, both thick and thin, streaked towards him.

Although Xiao Hui had the Holy Spirit's Shield protecting him, he definitely wouldn't be able to defend against these bolts of lightning that came from the White Tiger's power. If he was hit, he would definitely be insta-killed. However, an incomprehensible scene eventuated-just as the lightning bolts were about to touch Xiao Hui, they suddenly stopped around him, and didn't continue falling. In the next moment, they all disappeared.

Xiao Hui was perfectly safe.

“What… What’s going on?” Ling Chen stared, dumbfounded. Xiao Hui, who was within the barrier, had turned around and was motioning towards him with his paws, gesturing for him to come in.

“I have no idea.” Qi Yue was also at a loss. From the beginning until now, Xiao Hui had created many miracles.

Qi Yue had explained the Thunder God Barrier in depth, and Xiao Hui was now asking him to come in. For some reason, the lightning didn’t seem to attack Xiao Hui, but this didn’t mean it wouldn’t attack Ling Chen. Ling Chen thought for a few moments before stepping into the Thunder God Barrier… Xiao Hui’s detection abilities were peerless, and if he believed this area was safe for Ling Chen, then it definitely would be. Xiao Hui never did anything that would bring harm to Ling Chen.

As Ling Chen stepped into the Thunder God Barrier, he heard a gigantic peal of thunder. Above him, ten or so bolts of lightning descended towards them, each one of them as thick as a human arm. Ling Chen subconsciously wanted to evade them, but found that when they were 2 to 3 metres away from him, they would suddenly change direction and go around Ling Chen without hitting him at all.

What was going on? Ling Chen couldn’t understand it at all. He had been struck by lightning attacks before, and Xiao Hui was present during those times. And yet, he hadn’t been protected from the lightning during those times. Ling Chen took a few steps

forward, and although the Thunder God Barrier was filled with lightning, they would avoid the area where Xiao Hui stood.

"This lightning is unwilling to hurt Xiao Hui, and even... seems to fear him." Qi Yue said. Suddenly, she seemed to think of the reason as she muttered, "Could it be..."

"We'll think about this later. Xiao Hui, lead us to the White Tiger's location!"

Ling Chen once again jumped on to Snow Cherry's back, and quickly advanced while following Xiao Hui. Wherever they went, the lightning would let them through, and even after a long time, they were not hit by a single bolt of lightning.

After walking for a while, even the ground had turned purple. The thundering and roaring filled Ling Chen's ears. As the White Tiger lost control of its body, it lost control of its power, causing this region to become a lightning purgatory. At this moment, an incredible piercing voice entered his ears.

"Hehe... White Tiger, stop struggling. The more you struggle, the more you'll suffer. Even if you're the White Tiger, it's not easy to bear the pain of your soul being devoured."

This was a woman's voice, and was quite soft, but Ling Chen could hear it perfectly well. Moreover, this voice was quite familiar to him...

It came from the Ice Demon Beast!

At this moment, Ling Chen could see a gigantic white figure through the curtains of lightning...

It was the White Tiger!

It was already 30 metres tall, and its entire body was white, and had violet eyes. Its body was surrounded by lightning, and 4 bolts of lightning formed a domineering 'King' character on its forehead. [TLN: King = 王, which has 4 strokes]

The White Tiger was less than 100 metres away from Ling Chen, and its roars made Ling Chen feel as if his eardrums were going to burst. It looked like it was in extreme pain, and its gigantic head shook about. As it struggled, incredibly powerful bolts of lightning were released from its body, slamming into the region around it Above it, multitudes of ice attacks constantly rained down on its body. With the ice attacks from the Ice Demon Beast suppressing it, as well as the Tyrant Demon Beast devouring its soul, only the White Tiger would be able to last so long!

The White Tiger continuously endured the attacks from the Ice Demon Beast. However, it was evident that its body did not completely belong to it anymore, and it was unable to launch any attacks back at the Ice Demon Beast. Although the Thunder God Barrier's lightning was continuously attacking the Ice Demon Beast, none of it could break past her ice defence. After all, the scattered power of the Thunder God Barrier was unable to cause much threat to Mysterious God grade beings, as they were not attacks directly launched by the White Tiger.

“This guy… is too difficult to deal with… my dark soul power has already locked it up, and I wouldn’t be able to stop devouring its soul even if I wanted to! Old Ice! Don’t stop attacking; it won’t last for long… eh? Who is it?!” ！”

The 2 demon beasts were completely focused on suppressing the White Tiger, and didn’t dare to split their attention. They hadn’t noticed Ling Chen when he had entered the Thunder God Barrier, and they didn’t believe a human could survive in here. As such, they only noticed Ling Chen when he was 100 metres away from them.

The Ice Demon Beast suddenly looked over to Ling Chen, and when she saw him, she was stunned before crying out, “Old Tyrant! It’s him! It’s the human I told you about who has the Lunar Scourge!”

Chapter 520 - The White Tiger's Request

“What? That human?!”

The White Tiger’s struggling suddenly decreased as its roaring momentarily stopped. Ling Chen could feel that he was suddenly locked on to by an extremely dark and evil aura. He then heard a wave of wild laughter that seemed to come from a demon of the abyss, “Heheheheh! I see, I see… That’s indeed the Lunar Scourge! The heavens are helping my Demon Beast Clan! We’ve hidden away for 10,000 years, and now the heavens have finally given us the chance to rise up again.

“With the Lunar Scourge, lord Demon Emperor will be able to be immediately revived, and will be 10 times as powerful as before. When that time comes, what can the Moon God Clan do about us? We didn’t even go to find this human, and yet he came to find us; the heavens really are helping my Demon Beast Clan… Old Ice, what are you doing? Hurry up and capture him and take the Lunar Scourge!”

“Are you an idiot? I already told you that he’s obtained the Aquarius Orb; my attacks are completely useless against him now! Otherwise, why would I be so helpless against a tiny human?” the Ice Demon Beast angrily replied. Her ice-blue eyes stared at Ling Chen with a strange look of excitement within them. She was unable to harm Ling Chen, but the Tyrant Demon Beast was also here! With the Tyrant Demon Beast’s ability to steal and devour souls, he could possess this human’s body, and the Lunar Scourge would belong to their Demon Beast Clan!

The sinister laughter once again sounded out, “That’s right. Old Ice, at least try to suppress him so that he can’t run away. After I’ve finished dealing with the White Tiger, I’ll devour this human’s soul!”

“Do it yourself. With the Aquarius Orb, I can’t even lock him down with my ice! You can first take over the White Tiger’s power and paralyse him for a while,” the Ice Demon Beast replied. Not only could she not damage Ling Chen, her attacks even healed him. Thinking to this ridiculous situation, she felt so depressed that she felt like coughing up blood. Not only her, but all Water-type creatures and Water-related professions would feel the same way.

“Hmph, I’ll do that then.” The Tyrant Demon Beast had already remembered the distant memory about the Aquarius Orb, and didn’t waste any words as the White Tiger’s gigantic body suddenly spun towards Ling Chen’s position. The White Tiger’s purple eyes buzzed as a net of lightning that was tens of metres wide flew towards Ling Chen.

With such a large net, even if Ling Chen activated Broken Shadow, he would be unable to dodge it.

This lightning net contained no attack power, but could trap its target for a long time, as well as paralyse the target’s entire body. Let alone escape, the target would not be able to even move. When the lightning net was released, the Tyrant Demon Beast and Ice Demon Beast were both shocked… because the White Tiger, which had been struggling the entire time, did not put up any resistance when this happened.

Ling Chen deeply frowned as he watched the net coming closer and closer. He instantly judged that he would not be able to escape it, so he stood his ground. when the lightning net was 2 metres away from his body, a 3 to 4 metre wide gap suddenly appeared in the gigantic lightning net...

Crackle!

The lightning net hit the ground, and ground around Ling Chen crackled with electricity. However, Ling Chen was standing in the gap, and the lightning did not touch him at all. This scene caused Ling Chen's worried heart to become relaxed as he silently gave a cold smile... looks like the heavens aren't helping your Demon Beast Clan, but me, Ling Chen!

"W-What's going on?!" the Ice Demon Beast cried out in shock.

"Hmph, looks like this brat isn't as simple as he seems. Let's see how many times you can escape this!!"

The White Tiger's body once again shot out a similar-sized lightning net. Once again, the White Tiger did not struggle or resist at all, and when the lightning net neared Ling Chen, the same thing happened. Ling Chen did not move at all, but a large gap appeared in the net around him, leaving him perfectly unscathed.

"Impossible!" The first time, it had been shocked. The second time, it had become enraged. The White Tiger's body shone with a purple light as more than 10 lightning nets flew towards Ling Chen

in succession. This was the limit for the White Tiger, and even the Ice Demon Beast would suffer from such a barrage. However, Ling Chen continued to stand his ground. When the lightning nets reached Ling Chen, gaps appeared in all of them as they fell to the ground. The ground around was turned into a purple sea of lightning, but it was still completely fine around him. The lightning within the Thunder God Barrier was extremely erratic, and even the Ice Demon Beast needed to be careful. However, not a single bolt of lightning hit Ling Chen.

"This is impossible! Could it be... that this human doesn't fear lightning? Impossible! Even if it's the Lunar Scourge, it has no way to resist lightning! Otherwise, how could the Shura have fallen at the Moon God Clan's hands? Impossible!!"

The incredibly shocked Tyrant Demon Beast started to yell uncontrollably. It was simply unable to believe what was happening, and couldn't accept that there was a human who didn't fear lightning. Even if it was the incredibly powerful and terrifying Shura, he had been taken down by the Divine Tribulation Lightning, as well as the 3 Moon Goddesses working together with the Void Dragon God.

"Hahaha, Tyrant Demon Beast, what you said is correct-it isn't the young human who does not fear lightning."

An old, gentle and steady, yet weak, voice suddenly sounded out. Ling Chen immediately knew that it was the White Tiger's voice-only a majestic guardian beast would be able to speak with such a holy voice, "However, it's only my lightning that he does not fear. In other words, my lightning will never hurt him."

“White Tiger, so it was your doing!!” the Tyrant Demon Beast howled.

“No, it’s because he is protected by the Holy Qilin! The power of us 4 guardian beasts, Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird and Black Tortoise, were given to us by the Holy Qilin, which was our creator and leader. Although our power can cause large catastrophes, we can never hurt the Holy Qilin! This also applies for beings that are protected by the Holy Qilin-our powers are unable to attack them, or even get close!”

“Holy Qilin?” the Tyrant Demon Beast’s voice became hoarse, “Impossible! The Holy Qilin already died in the ancient times, and didn’t even leave any descendants. This human… how could he possess the Holy Qilin’s protection?!”

“Hahaha,” the gentle yet weak voice laughed tiredly, yet peacefully, “All these years, that’s what I believed as well, until today… so it turns out that the Holy Qilin’s bloodline still continues in this continent. Although this bloodline’s power is incredibly gentle and Holy, it has lost all attack powers. However, us 4 guardian beasts will always be able to detect the Holy Qilin’s bloodline. This is great… Tyrant Demon Beast, Ice Demon Beast, I thought that my fate was sealed, but it seems that things will not go as you wish. The mighty Holy Qilin has detected that the White Tiger’s bloodline is in peril, and has brought this young human to save me. Neither of you will be able to escape judgment.”

Holy… Qilin?

Ling Chen stared in shock before quickly turning around to look at Xiao Hui behind him.

Could it… be…

He suddenly remembered that back when he had entered the Lava Purgatory, the unbearable heat and flames had made it almost impossible for him to advance. He could only shout the Vermillion Bird's name in desperation that it would meet him. Finally, the Vermillion Bird's Phantasm appeared, but it was not because of his calls, but because…

The Holy Qilin's descendant had called it!

At that time, when Ling Chen had called the Vermilion Bird, Xiao Hui had also called out to it.

The Holy Qilin… was one of the Forgotten Continent's 5 Saint Destroyer Beasts, along with the Void Dragon God, Heaven Tiger, Blue Ocean Rageshark and Golden Crow. It was the first of the 5 Saint Destroyer Beasts to perish.

Could it be that Xiao Hui… Really was the Holy Qilin's descendant?

Within the Lunar Scourge, Qi Yue muttered to herself, "So it was like that."

"The Holy Qilin… Holy Qilin… heheheh!!" This was the Tyrant

Demon Beast's wild laughter, "White Tiger, you're celebrating too early. If the Holy Qilin still existed, its holy beast aura would have covered this entire region. However, there's not a bit of holy beast aura around here! Even if this human is protected by the Holy Qilin... does he really have the strength to allow you to escape from us?"

"Escape? Haha..." The White Tiger lightly laughed, "My divine soul has already been half-destroyed by you, and it'll never recover. However, your divine soul has also been half-destroyed by me. Right now, your soul can only remain within my body. Once it leaves, even if you're the Tyrant Demon Beast who possesses the strongest soul power out of the 10 ancient demon beasts, your damaged soul will quickly disperse. However, if my body dies, your soul will be forced to leave... resulting in it perishing."

Within the White Tiger's body, the Tyrant Demon Beast felt extremely uncomfortable as it asked in a low voice, "White Tiger, what are you planning?!"

The White Tiger ignored the Tyrant Demon Beast. The White Tiger's gentle voice sounded out from above Ling Chen's head, "Young human, although I don't know who you are, nor can I understand how you can possess the Lunar Scourge which should have been destroyed, but you evidently came here for me. I believe that it was the Holy Qilin who guided you here. Your arrival has caused my despair to turn into hope.

"As such... young human, raise your weapon and attack my body, and as quickly as possible... kill me!"

The White Tiger's words stunned Ling Chen.

"White Tiger... you want him... to kill you? Heheh... heheheh! Your body is no longer yours to control, and yet you think this tiny human is able to kill you? What a joke!" The Tyrant Demon Beast coldly laughed. However, that laugh was filled with uneasiness.

"Why wouldn't he be able to?" The White Tiger replied, "Although I'm unable to fully control this body, I'm able to control it enough to prevent it from escaping. Young human, listen to my words carefully. The Tyrant Demon Beast has possessed my body, and has nearly succeeded. However, during the course of this, its soul has also taken immense damage from my attacks, and it is no longer able to leave my body. As long as this body of mine dies, it will also die! If you're unable to do this, then after it possesses my body, it will use my body to cause catastrophes and caused my White Tiger Clan's holy name to be tainted.

"As such, in order to protect my White Tiger Bloodline's dignity and pride, please agree to my request... I will give you a sufficient reward. The Ice Demon Beast's attacks are useless against you, and the Tyrant Demon Beast's soul is stuck within my body. It can only use my power, while my power is unable to harm those who the Holy Qilin protects... As such, no matter if it's the Ice Demon Beast, or the Tyrant Demon Beast controlling me, neither of them can harm me... You only need to continuously attack me. I beg of you, human protected by the Holy Qilin."

The White Tiger's words caused the Ice Demon Beast's face to fall. The Tyrant Demon Beast also realised how serious the situation had become, and started to roar out, "White Tiger, are

you mad?!”

At this moment, Ling Chen completely understood the situation... He had taken a grave risk to come here to kill the White Tiger. However, what he completely did not expect was that upon arriving, the White Tiger had begged him to kill it. Moreover, he did not experience any danger at all... The powerful Ice Demon Beast and Tyrant Demon Beast were unable to harm him in the slightest.

“I understand!” Ling Chen didn’t show any signs of hesitation as he equipped his 2 weapons, “Since it’s like this, White Tiger, I’ll do as you wish!”

Chapter 521 - The Fallen White Tiger (1)

[White Tiger]: Type: Guardian Beast, Grade: Mysterious God, Level: LV100, HP: 823,000,000/5,260,000,000.

The White Tiger is one of the 4 main city's guardian beasts, and is the most powerful of them all. It has stood guard near the White Tiger City in the west of the Forgotten City all of its life, and is gentle and hates evil. It is righteous, holy and protects the White Tiger City from disaster, and is even worshipped by the residents of the White Tiger City. Its attribute is Lightning, and has incredibly powerful Physical Attack Damage and Defence. Its lightning can annihilate the heavens and the earth, as well as devastate mountains. It is essentially an invincible god among beasts.

Passive Abilities: Absorbs all Lightning element damage, and has powerful Physical Attack Damage, as well as incredibly strong Physical and Magic Defence. Has full immunity to all abnormal statuses and debuffs.

Attack Skills: [Extreme Tiger's Might], [Extreme Tiger's Soul], [Extreme Tiger's Roar], [Heaven-Splitting Tiger Strike], [Cliff-Annihilating Claws], [White Tiger Earthquake], [Tiger God Might], [Flash of Lightning], [Sky-Tearing Lightning], [White Tiger Judgment], [Purple Hell], [World-Shaking Thunder], [Evil-Destroying Holy Thunder], [Flash Lightning], [Lightning Abyss], [Death Thunder], [Purple Castle], [Purple Thorns], [Lightning Wheel], [Pulsating Lightning Armour], [Rebellious God Light]...

Ultimate Skills: [Thunder God's Awakening], [Lightning Rebirth Formation], [Blessing – Thunder God's Bulwark]

Weaknesses: Does not have flying abilities; can not regenerate HP while fighting.

Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit couldn't give Ling Chen detailed information on targets that were LV100, but because it was the White Tiger, whose power had been given to it by the Holy Qilin, Ling Chen could see all of its information. This was the first time Ling Chen had seen a Mysterious God grade being's stats, and its stats and power caused his heartrate to increase. However, at this moment, he didn't allow himself to waste any time... although the Tyrant Demon Beast and Ice Demon Beast were currently unable to harm him, this would not necessarily remain the case. If this dragged on for too long and the White Tiger couldn't hold on, and the Tyrant Demon Beast took over the White Tiger's body, the consequences would be unimaginable.

The White Tiger currently had less than 1/5 of its maximum HP, but still had more than 800,000,000 HP. Even if Ling Chen stood and attacked it for half a day, he might not be able to kill it. As such, Ling Chen decisively rushed up and shouted out as he activated [Soul Sacrifice], instantly boosting his Physical Attack Damage.

"Ding... the Libra Orb's effects have been activated, [Soul Sacrifice]'s effects have been reset."

Ling Chen unhesitatingly charged up to the White Tiger and sent out 2 [Ling Tian Slashes] towards its front paws.

Bang! Bang!!

-58,800, -117,790!

The damage these 2 attacks caused far surpassed anything the Tyrant Demon Beast or Ice Demon Beast expected. Based on the aura that Ling Chen gave off, the Tyrant Demon Beast thought that he would not be able to even break through the White Tiger's Defence. Even if he could break through the Defence, the damage would be extremely pitiful, and it would be impossible for this human to kill the White Tiger before it finished possessing it. However, when 2 explosions sounded out and waves of unimaginable pain rolled through it, the Tyrant Demon Beast madly roared, "No!! This is impossible!! The White Tiger's Defence is lower only to that of the Black Turtle; how could this weak human break through the White Tiger's Defence... and what's with this terrifying pain?!"

"It's the Cancer Orb that allows him to ignore all Defence, as well as the Scorpio Orb that increases pain! This human has already collected those orbs as well!" The Ice Demon Beast yelled in shock.

"Bastard!!"

The Tyrant Demon Beast roared hoarsely. It controlled the White Tiger's body and leapt towards Ling Chen. Who could defend against the White Tiger's might? With a slight thought, the White Tiger could unleash world-destroying attacks that could crush players like ants. As the White Tiger's body attacked, all of the air surrounding that region was forced out, creating a vacuum, and the pressure from its body caused depressions to form in the ground.

However, before it could reach Ling Chen, it was as if it had crashed into a soft, yet firm barrier. No matter if it was the White

Tiger's body or power, neither of them could pierce through the barrier. This caused Ling Chen, who had been preparing to dodge, to feel completely at ease, and he once again rushed up to mercilessly attack.

"Impossible! This is impossible!!"

The Tyrant Demon Beast went crazy, and used the White Tiger's body, claws, fangs, tail and breath to furiously attack Ling Chen. He was evidently an incredibly weak human who could be easily killed, and yet no matter how much it tried, the White Tiger's attacks simply couldn't reach him. Every time the attacks were about to hit him, they would be completely blocked. However, Ling Chen's attacks repeatedly fell on the White Tiger's body, causing the Tyrant Demon Beast to scream out each time.

Seeing that physical attacks couldn't reach him, the Tyrant Demon Beast sent out incredibly destructive lightning. The lightning seemed to fill the sky, and was more than 10 times more terrifying than the lightning from the Thunder God Barrier. The lightning was incredibly dense and chaotic... In just an instant, the 1,000 metres around Ling Chen had become a purple lightning purgatory, and seemed to extend forever as it tore at the ground and space itself. However, only around Ling Chen was there no lightning at all.

Countless bolts of lightning streaked towards him. Yet, as they neared him they would rapidly turn and shoot in other directions, as if they were scared. The Tyrant Demon Beast repeatedly attacked with the lightning, but Ling Chen was not affected at all. Even his movements were not restricted in the slightest. Wherever

Ling Chen walked, the lightning would avoid that place. A small pocket of calm seemed to move around within the sea of lightning.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang...

Every time Ling Chen attacked, the attack would be followed by an explosion. With [Soul Sacrifice] activated, each set of attacks dealt at least 100,000 damage to the White Tiger. If both attacks were Critical Hits, he would be able to deal over 200,000 damage in one set of attacks. He would also occasionally release [Four Corner Star Formations] and [Thousand Kilogram Rends], both of which dealt a shocking amount of damage. The terrifying lightning forced the Ice Demon Beast to retreat afar away, and seeing Ling Chen completely unscathed within the lightning, as well as dealing impossibly high damage figures, her eyes almost fell out.

With these sorts of attacks, if he could attack enough, even the incredibly powerful White Tiger would not be able to last 3 hours. The possibility of the Tyrant Demon Beast taking over the White Tiger within 3 hours was incredibly low, and adding on the incomparable pain distracting it... iI was almost impossible!

“Bastard!! Old Ice, hurry up and help me kill him!!”

If the Tyrant Demon Beast could use the Demon Beast Clan’s darkness power, it would be incredibly easy for it to destroy Ling Chen. However, now that it was stuck within the White Tiger’s body, and was unable to escape, it could only use the White Tiger’s power. However, although the White Tiger’s power was about to kill this human thousands of times, it simply could not even harm a hair on his head. The Tyrant Demon Beast started to panic-it

knew that although the White Tiger did not have much strength left, it was enough to prevent its body from running away. If this human continued to attack the White Tiger, it would be killed by him soon… it was simply a matter of time!!

"Would I need you to tell me that if I could hurt him?? He already has the goddamn Aquarius Orb!!" The Ice Demon Beast, which was also incredibly anxious at this point, roared back.

"Your ice can't hurt him but you can still use your hands and feet! Arghh!!!" Just as the Tyrant Demon Beast finished yelling, it once again screamed in pain. As the second [Soul Sacrifice]'s effects were about to end, Ling Chen activated [Battle Soul Possession] and unleashed his 2 strongest attacks, [Four Corners Star Formation] and [Thousand Kilogram Rend].

-193,330, -309,380!

The greater the damage, the greater pain the Tyrant Demon Beast felt. The White Tiger's soul and Tyrant Demon Beast were both within the White Tiger's body, but since the Tyrant Demon Beast held the majority of the control, the Tyrant Demon Beast bore the majority of the pain from the Scorpio Orb's effects. It was unable to hurt this human, and facing the immeasurable pain and impending doom, the Tyrant Demon Beast started to think of feeling. However, just as it prepared to run, a cold laugh sounded out…

"You want to escape? As long as even a shred of my soul remains, you won't be leaving!"

The White Tiger's body started to tremble and its limbs started to furiously claw at the ground. The White Tiger's head was raised to the sky as it roared out, but was unable to advance or retreat... It was trying to run away, but countless invisible ropes had tied it up.

"White Tiger... Do you really think you can last until this human can kill you? Soon, your soul will disappear forever!" The Tyrant Demon Beast shrieked.

However, the White Tiger laughed in response. It had also suffered some of the pain from the Scorpio Orb, but it did not scream like the Tyrant Demon Beast. In fact, its voice was still incredibly calm and gentle, as if it was enjoying Ling Chen's attacks, "Really now? We'll see about that."

"You bastard!!!!" the Tyrant Demon Beast was bordering on insanity. However, no matter how much it raged, it was unable to change the situation, and running away was a mere pipe dream. As such, it gathered all of its soul power and desperately tried to devour the White Tiger's soul.

After hearing the reminder from the Tyrant Demon Beast, as well as seeing that the sea of lightning had receded, the Ice Demon Beast gritted her teeth and quickly rushed towards Ling Chen. Her hand flashed as a 2 metre long icicle appeared in her hands, and stabbed towards Ling Chen's back.

Although her ice attacks were useless against Ling Chen, this was a physical attack using her body's physical strength. Although her

powers were focused on her ice attacks, she was still a Mysterious God grade being, and no matter how weak her Physical Attack Damage was, it was still enough to deal serious damage to Ling Chen, or even insta-kill him.

Of course, the prerequisite was that her attacks had to hit Ling Chen.

Chapter 522 – The Fallen White Tiger (2)

The cold wind behind him drew nearer but Ling Chen did not turn around. He swung the Great Ravager behind him, smashing onto the Ice Demon Beast's icicle and blocking it. The instant he parried the Ice Demon Beast's attack, causing it to pause in surprise for a moment, Ling Chen suddenly turned around as a strange light flashed in his eyes, activating the [Utter Despair Curse].

Out of the Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses Qin Feng possessed, the [Utter Despair Curse] had the highest success rate. The first time Ling Chen had met the Ice Demon Beast, she had fallen for it... This time, she would not escape it either.

The icicle in the Ice Demon Beast's hand fell to the ground as her eyes became extremely bleak. She looked at Ling Chen with an empty gaze, as if she didn't recognise him.

Ling Chen stopped attacking the White Tiger as he said in a low voice to the Ice Demon Beast, "Ice Demon Beast, you feel quite lost, quite useless, don't you? You can't hurt me, and you can't even help your ally. Your Demon Emperor has already been dead for 10,000 years, but you still haven't been able to revive him. Instead, during these 10,000 years, you've all hidden like turtles in places where humans could not go, and lived incredibly humiliating lives... Aren't you just trash? Apart from wasting air, what other use do you have? What's the point in you continuing to live?"

Ling Chen's words fell in the Ice Demon Beast's ears, whose emotions had plummeted to rock-bottom. Her unfocused eyes

became even more lifeless as she muttered, “I can’t do anything… I couldn’t revive Lord Demon Emperor… I could only live in humiliation… What’s… the point of living… The point…”

Ling Chen smiled as he continued to speak, “If you think there’s no point in living, how about dying? Mm, after all, if you continue living, you’ll only continue suffer this humiliation. What about death then? If you die, you can be reborn as a new demon, and start over again. Moreover, maybe after you’ve died, you might be able to meet that Demon Emperor of yours who has already died for 10,000 years! How wonderful.”

The Ice Demon Beast continued to lifelessly mutter, “Death… reborn… Lord Demon Emperor… Lord Demon Emperor… I no longer have… any reason to live… let me die…”

Whoosh…

A gust of cold wind blew as a blue light and black light arose from the Ice Demon Beast’s body. This light then became a thick smoke, and when the blue smoke and black smoke intertwined, the Ice Demon Beast’s body started to fragment, then disappear…

“Old Ice!! Old Ice, are you crazy?! What the hell are you doing?!?!?”

This scene shocked the Tyrant Demon Beast so much that he felt as if his soul was going to scatter. However, no matter how loudly he yelled, he was unable to get through to the Ice Demon Beast, who was affected by the [Utter Despair Curse]. The Ice Demon

Beast continued the process, and had already half-disappeared within the smoke.

Ling Chen, who had instigated all of this, watched with his mouth wide open. It was as if he was watching Long Tian Yun happily eat a pile of steaming dung.

Holy crap! The Ice Demon Beast committed suicide... it really committed suicide!

The heavens can bear witness! I only casually tried it out, but never expected it would actually happen!

However, this Mysterious God grade ancient Demon Beast had truly disintegrated herself...

A gust of wind blew past, and there was not even a speck of the Ice Demon Beast that remained. The smoke was also thinned out by the wind, and then completely disappeared. By now, the Ice Demon Beast was well and truly gone.

The Tyrant Demon Beast madly screamed, while Ling Chen stood there, unmoving, with a fantastic expression on his face... That's right, he, a player, had used a Feng Chen Curse to kill a Mysterious God grade beast!

Ling Chen stretched out his hand and grabbed at his scalp as he inwardly marvelled, "God, make someone hit me with a stick so I know this isn't a dream!"

As the Feng Chen Sect's successor, Ling Chen naturally did not doubt the might of the Feng Chen Curses. However, he felt that a Feng Chen Curse easily destroying a Mysterious God grade beast was a bit too cruel. If there was a hell, and the Ice Demon Beast realised what had happened, she would probably destroy everything out of anger.

"What's going on? Why would Old Ice suddenly self-disintegrate? Despicable human... what sort of witchcraft did you use?"

The Tyrant Demon Beast cried out, unable to accept what had just happened. It simply didn't believe that the Ice Demon Beast, who had seemed perfectly fine just moments earlier, would commit suicide. The only reason was because of this human.

Ling Chen turned around as his gaze became icy, and he coldly laughed, "You want to know the reason? Go ask her in hell!"

"Young human, well done. With that, I can rest at ease." The White Tiger calmly spoke. It used the remnants of its soul to fix its body in place, not allowing its body to escape.

After unexpectedly getting rid of the Ice Demon Beast, there were no more obstructions to Ling Chen killing the White Tiger. He nodded and replied to the White Tiger, "As long as you can hold on, I won't disappoint you."

After saying this, Ling Chen once again rushed up and started attacking. [Soul Sacrifice] had a 3 minute cooldown time, but even

without the [Soul Sacrifice]'s buff, the damage he dealt was still quite impressive. Furthermore, the pain that the Scorpio Orb added caused the Tyrant Demon Beast to continuously scream, severely affecting its ability to devour the White Tiger's soul.

The White Tiger's HP steadily fell, and although the speed was quite slow, the damage added up. By now, the Tyrant Demon Beast only wanted to escape, but because of the White Tiger's influence, escaping was simply wishful thinking.

"Young human, I will hold on. Don't hesitate, and even more so, don't feel any pity or reluctance. Right now, death is my greatest desire, because of the release it will give. Moreover, the Holy Qilin's bloodline still exists in the Forgotten Continent, so as long as it doesn't die out, although I will die, the White Tiger's bloodline will one day be reborn."

Ling Chen did not speak anymore and began to attack with all he had. After all, he didn't have any reason to hesitate... He had come here to kill the White Tiger!

Ling Chen's attacks continuously fell like a cyclone on the White Tiger's body. As soon as [Soul Sacrifice]'s cooldown time was reset, he would immediately reactivate it. As soon as his 2 strongest skill's cooldown times were reset, he would combine them with [Soul Sacrifice] to deal massive damage. He was attacking a guardian beast, an existence that even a city would not be able to take down. And yet, against a LV41 player, it did not retaliate or even run, and instead took each blow. Just like that, the White Tiger's HP continued to fall.

1 hour later, the White Tiger's HP fell to less than 600,000,000. Another hour later, the White Tiger's HP fell to 300,000,000.

Yet another hour...

The Tyrant Demon Beast's screams had become hoarse. During this period of time, it had tried countless times to escape, but hadn't been able to succeed, because the White Tiger used everything it had to prevent its body from escaping. In the end, the Tyrant Demon Beast began to despair and beg for mercy... These Demon Beasts all feared death, and this wasn't the first time Ling Chen had seen this. Back then, the War Demon Beast had even knelt down to Xi Ling to beg for mercy, and the Shadow Demon Beast had pitifully begged the Shura to spare it. This Tyrant Demon Beast also started to wail and cry out for mercy as the White Tiger's HP came close to being emptied out.

"Spare me... I don't want to die yet! There are still many things I want to do, and I want to see the day the Demon Beast Clan is returned to its glory... Please spare me!!

"Have mercy!! White Tiger, let me run away! I'll immediately leave your body... I'll even be your slave!"

Ling Chen gave a cold laugh as he raised the Twilight Spear, "Shut up! Before dying, you Demon Beasts are all like this! Go and die peacefully-the War Demon Beast, Shadow Demon Beast and Ice Demon Beast are all waiting for you!"

As Ling Chen spoke, the Twilight Spear stabbed towards the

White Tiger... the earth-yellow spearhead suddenly shot out a strange, colourless light.

"What?! You said that Old War and Old Shadow have already... Arghhh!!!"

The Tyrant Demon Beast gave a final scream as the Twilight Spear soundlessly pierced into the White Tiger's right paw. The strange light instantly spread throughout the White Tiger's body, destroying even the Tyrant Demon Beast and White Tiger's souls.

-210,400,000!!

This wasn't the first time Ling Chen had used [Soul Demise]. However, the effects of the [Soul Demise] he had used in the past could not even compare to 1/10,000 of the current one. Soul Demise took away 4% of the target's HP and had a 0.4% chance of instantly killing them. Against weak enemies, it was completely useless. However, against powerful enemies, it was his ace.

The White Tiger's HP was finally cleared out by this [Soul Demise].

"Ding... you have successfully killed the LV100 Mysterious God grade Boss 'White Tiger'. Because you killed the White Tiger was already in critical HP, you will only receive 20% of the rewards. Fame+200,000, SP+200,000."

"Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV42, HP+20,

MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV43...”

.....

.....

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV48...”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV49...”

“Ding... your pet Holy Spirit Beast ‘Xiao Hui’ has levelled up to LV49, HP+200, MP+5, Defence+20.”

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui’s skill [Holy Spirit’s Aura] has levelled up to LV10.”

“Ding... your pet ‘Leng’Er’ has levelled up to LV49, MP+100, Magic Attack Power+20, Defence+10.”

“Ding... your pet Leng’Er’s skill [Sin Lock] has levelled up to LV3.”

“Ding... your pet Nine-tailed Snow Fox has levelled up to LV49, HP+1000, MP+200, Physical Attack Damage+100, Magic Attack Power+40, Defence+50.”

When Ling Chen had started to attack the White Tiger, the White Tiger only had around 20% of its HP left. As such, he only received 20% of the reward. However, although it was only 20%... it was a reward for killing a LV100 Mysterious God grade beast! When he received the 200,000 Fame and 200,000 SP, Ling Chen almost fainted with joy.

What followed was rapid levelling up... a LV41 player killing a LV100 Mysterious God grade Boss was a completely heaven-defying act, and it was probably the first time something like this had happened in the history of the Forgotten Continent. Although Ling Chen only received 20% of the EXP reward and had the Heaven's Jealousy debuff, he was able to directly shoot from LV41 to LV49, and stopped at 98% of the LV49 EXP bar. It was only millimetres away from LV50.

Chapter 523 – The White Tiger's Gift: Thunder God's Bulwark (1)

When the White Tiger died, its body fell like a small mountain, causing the surrounding ground to tremble and creating a ear-splitting sound. The system announcements that Ling Chen heard confirmed that the White Tiger was well and truly dead. Ling Chen had never thought that a legendary god-grade beast would die at his hands.

Although this had taken him a few hours, he was definitely the first person to kill a White Tiger in the Forgotten Continent.

"The glorious Demon Beast Clan… will never perish… arghh!!"

The instant the White Tiger's body fell, the Tyrant Demon Beast also gave a final cry, and disappeared. Just as the White Tiger had said, when it died, the Tyrant Demon Beast would also die. Ling Chen had essentially killed 2 Mysterious God grade beings by killing the White Tiger.

"Finally…"

The ground trembled from the White Tiger falling, and Ling Chen took 2 steps backwards as he let out a long breath. His body had been incredibly tense this entire time… in the end, although he had the ability to insta-kill low-level Celestial grade Bosses, it took him around 3 hours to kill the White Tiger, which only had 20% of its HP remaining. If the White Tiger had been at full health, it would have taken him more than 15 hours… It definitely

wouldn't have been able to last that long.

Although the White Tiger had died, there were not any spoils of war near its body. Although Ling Chen felt a bit disappointed, he didn't find this surprising. After all, the White Tiger was a holy guardian beast, not some final Boss for players to kill. Not punishing him for killing such a being was already good enough, let alone giving him rewards. However, that 200,000 SP was better than any spoils of war.

The White Tiger had died… just like that.

Back when he had seen the words 'White Tiger's Heart' from Su'Er, he felt as if he had been struck by lightning. This was because he needed to retrieve the White Tiger's Heart, which meant that he needed to kill the White Tiger… However, to anyone, thinking of killing the White Tiger would simply be a joke. Even if he was a hundred times more powerful, he wouldn't be able to fight with the White Tiger at all, and yet less than a week after seeing that message, the White Tiger had died right in front of him. In fact, he didn't have to put in much effort or even take many risk, and it had even asked him to kill it.

If this was luck, then his luck would simply be too heaven-defying.

"Well done, young human."

Just as Ling Chen felt that he could relax, a voice sounded in his ears. Ling Chen hesitantly asked, "White Tiger?"

“Haha…” The White Tiger’s voice was quite weak, but was still quite calm, “Don’t be afraid, I’m already dead. You have successfully helped me defeat 2 powerful Demon Beasts, and have given me release. What you are hearing is the last wisp of my soul talking to you… In just a while, this final bit of consciousness will also disappear.”

“… Is there something important you want me to do? As long as I can do it, I will do my best to achieve it,” Ling Chen said. Although it was the White Tiger’s request, but he had indeed been the one to kill the White Tiger. Moreover, the main reason he had killed the White Tiger was for himself, so his words were filled with both respect, as well as guilt. As such, if the White Tiger had any final requests, he would do his best to fulfil them.

“No,” the White Tiger replied in the negative, “I held on because I wanted to personally see the new Holy Qilin. We, the 4 guardian beasts, thought that the Holy Qilin’s bloodline had perished a long time ago. We searched for any descendants, but even after thousands of years, we weren’t able to find anything, causing us to despair. However, feeling the Holy Qilin’s aura was the most joyous thing I have experienced in 10,000 years. As such, even if I’m about to perish, I’m still delirious with joy.

“Young human, for you to possess the Holy Qilin’s protection, there’s only explanation: that you have made a soul contract with the Holy Qilin, and have become the Holy Qilin’s master. The Holy Qilin was the most powerful of the Forgotten Continent’s 5 Saint Destroyer Beasts, and no one has the right to be its master. However, this is what has happened in reality. I wonder if the Holy Qilin’s master could allow me to see the new Holy Qilin in my final

moments.”

Holy Qilin... Holy Qilin... Ling Chen was quite familiar with this name-who wouldn’t know the most powerful of the Forgotten Continent’s 5 Saint Destroyer Beasts? However, he never thought this name would have anything to do with him. The White Tiger was evidently referring to Xiao Hui... however, Xiao Hui, who he had watched hatch from an egg and looked like a small dog... could he really be the Holy Qilin?

Ling Chen didn’t say anything and summoned Xiao Hui. As soon as Xiao Hui appeared, he happily jumped and ran around Ling Chen. After noticing the White Tiger’s gigantic corpse, it came over and vigorously sniffed it.

“White Tiger, are you referring to him?” Ling Chen asked.

The White Tiger did not reply, but Ling Chen could feel profound wisps of the White Tiger’s soul entering his mind. After a while, he once again heard the White Tiger’s voice, which was now incredibly excited, “That’s right... that’s right! Although it’s only half, but it’s indeed the Holy Qilin’s bloodline... that’s right! This is great! We should have known that the mighty holy Qilin’s bloodline would never perish.”

Ling Chen was speechless, and looked at Xiao Hui, who was wagging his short tail as he sniffed the White Tiger’s body. Waves of shock rolled through his heart... Xiao Hui was actually the Holy Qilin’s descendant... the Holy Qilin’s descendant...

Holy crap! So Xiao Hui, who had been following him all this time, was the only descendant of the Holy Qilin! However, if Xiao Hui really was the Holy Qilin, the system should have called him the ‘Holy Qilin’, as opposed to the ‘Holy Spirit Beast’!

“Half?” Hearing the White Tiger’s words, Ling Chen asked in confusion.

“That’s right, only half,” the White Tiger replied, “Young human, although I don’t know how you became the Holy Qilin’s master, but the Holy Qilin is naturally able to distinguish between good and evil. For it to be willing to follow you, that means you’re not an evil person. Everything is arranged by fate, and I don’t have the right or power to interfere with anything. Do you know what this new Holy Qilin’s main strength is?” The White Tiger asked.

“Support,” Ling Chen replied without even thinking about it. Xiao Hui had been following him since he had been born, and he was confident that he understood it fully.

“Not at all! It’s auspiciousness.” The White Tiger explained.

“Auspiciousness?” Ling Chen was stunned.”

“That’s right. Before, I said that it only inherited half of the Holy Qilin’s bloodline because all of the Holy Qilin’s attack power is completely gone. However, it’s holy aura remains… Moreover, its auspiciousness and luck has increased by more than fivefold, possibly even more. Indeed, the Holy Qilin loved peace and hated strife and conflict. In order to stop its descendants from being

dragged into battles, when it passed on its bloodline, it must have removed all attack properties. However, it retained all of its holiness and auspiciousness, so that its descendants would be able to bring others luck.

"However, it's quite unbelievable. Although it's so young, its auspiciousness has already surpassed that of the mature Holy Qilin's. This is simply incomprehensible. Could it be that its mother's auspiciousness was even greater than the Holy Qilin's…?" The White Tiger said in shock.

"Young human, it's undeniable that the Holy Qilin possesses powerful support abilities. You gave that answer before because this was something you witnessed. However, its greatest power is something that cannot be seen: its power of auspiciousness. Think about it: after it started following you, did your luck tremendously increase?"

Ling Chen: "……"

Ling Chen didn't need to think about this. Ever since a long time ago, he had begun suspecting his ridiculous luck in the virtual world.

The War God's Trial Grounds… Lonely Spirit Ridge… Forest of Bones… Moon God Ruins… Fairy Realm… Lunar Sky Hell… meeting Xiao Feng Chen… Lava Purgatory… the Dwarf Realm… the East Ocean Continent… Godchild Peak… meeting the White Tiger… in all of those places or situations, inexplicable things had happened, as a result of incredible luck. One time was luck, but if it happened again and again… was it still purely luck?

He had met the Lucky Cat again and again, as well as Qian Gun Gun again and again... he had found 8 of the Lunar Scourge's God Orbs within 8 months... Ling Chen wondered if he was someone who was loved by fate. He had wondered if the now-extinct Beast of Luck mentioned by Qi Yue was related to Xiao Hui, and today, he had received a definite answer...

That luck had appeared time and time again, and there was definitely an explanation. It turned out the source of this luck was Xiao Hui, who had stayed by his side and had blessed him with auspiciousness!

"It seems like you understand," The White Tiger's remnant soul could detect the changes in Ling Chen's emotions, and its voice grew weaker. It wouldn't be able to hang on for long, "With it by your side, good luck will always follow you, unless you abandon it... Of course, I believe that that's impossible, as becoming its companion is the greatest luck of your life. As such, enjoy this auspiciousness, but don't rely on it-after all, auspiciousness is just auspiciousness. It will give you more opportunities to do the things you want to do, but in the end, you'll need to rely on your own strength and determination. Auspiciousness will only follow those who put in their effort and termination. No one can achieve success merely relying on luck."

Ling Chen nodded, "I understand." "I'm satisfied that I was able to see the new Holy Qilin before departing. There's one last thing I want to ask you... this is quite a serious matter, so you can choose to refuse."

The White Tiger spoke in a serious tone, and Ling Chen could more or less guess what it was, “What is it?”

The White Tiger’s voice once again sounded out, “The Tyrant Demon Beast and Ice Demon Beast mentioned that the Lunar Scourge that was supposed to have been destroyed 10,000 years ago is on you… is this true?”

Just as Ling Chen had expected, the White Tiger had asked about the Lunar Scourge. When Ling Chen had first arrived, the Ice Demon Beast had roared out about the Lunar Scourge, and it was impossible for the White Tiger not to have heard. Moreover, the White Tiger had existed since the ancient ages, so how could it not have heard of the Lunar Scourge before? Ling Chen didn’t want to lie to the White Tiger, so he nodded, “That’s right, I possess the Lunar Scourge.”

Chapter 524 – The White Tiger's Gift: Thunder God's Bulwark (2)

The White Tiger fell silent for a while before slowly speaking, "It seems that legend was true: as long as the true moon exists, the Lunar Scourge will not be destroyed. Back then, the Moon God Clan probably knew about this legend, so they used a special method to separate the Lunar Scourge's 15 Orbs, making them lose their power. So, young human, how many Orbs have you collected?"

"8 of them," Ling Chen truthfully replied. Without even realising it, he had collected more than half of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs.

"8, is it? Very good... finding even one of those Orbs is incredibly difficult. It seems that you haven't obtained the Lunar Scourge for very long, and yet you've already found 8 Orbs-evidently, this is related to the auspiciousness brought by the Holy Qilin. However, the main reason was your own efforts. You seem to have an obsession regarding obtaining these Orbs, right?" The White Tiger asked.

"That's right." Ling Chen nodded.

"In that case, can you tell me why you wish to obtain the Orbs?"

"....." Ling Chen thought for a while before replying, "In order to save someone who is more important to me than even my own life. I also want to become stronger to protect the people who I want to protect."

After a short pause, the White Tiger once again spoke, “You haven’t lied. You desire power, but that desire can’t even compare to your desire to save that person. The person who the Holy Qilin has chosen cannot be a evil or greedy person… very well. What I heard was that anyone who has the Lunar Scourge will become the Lunar Scourge’s puppet, and will be controlled by the Lunar Scourge. However, you seem quite calm, and your soul is pure, which indicates that you’re not being controlled. In that case, are you instead in control of the Lunar Scourge? Although it sounds impossible… but in this world, nothing is impossible.”

The Shura’s remnant soul had told Ling Chen about this. Before, the Lunar Scourge possessed other beings, but now, it was controlled by Ling Chen. After being overpowered by Ling Chen’s powerful mental energy, Ling Chen was now the one in control. Of course, one of the reasons for this was that back then, without any Orbs, the Lunar Scourge had been quite weak. However, even if the Lunar Scourge was now restored to its original state, it wouldn’t be able to escape from Ling Chen’s control. It was now fully owned by Ling Chen, and would not interfere with him.

“When I first came into contact with the Lunar Scourge, it didn’t have a single Orb, and was quite weak. As such, when it tried to take over my mind, it was instead defeated by my mental energy.” Ling Chen replied.

“So it was like that,” the White Tiger sighed, “This is a massive blessing to you. Did you know, you’re the first person in the Mystic Moon’s history to be able to subdue the Lunar Scourge? Even the Moon God who created the Lunar Scourge was unable to do so, and was destroyed by the Lunar Scourge’s power. As such, I can rest at

ease. After all, the Lunar Scourge is the most powerful, but also most evil, item in all of the Mystic Moon world."

"The Lunar Scourge's power and evil caused even the mighty Moon God Clan to fear it. However, in reality, nothing is truly good or evil; what decides is a person's heart. If an evil power is used by a holy person, it will instead become a holy power. If a holy power falls into an evil person's hand, it would become a catastrophe. You're not an evil person, and the Lunar Scourge has been completely suppressed by you, so in your hand's it is no longer an item of utmost evil. Whether it's an item of good or evil depends on your heart. At the very least, it seems that the Lunar Scourge's power will not bring disaster to the Continents. Rather, if the Continents face catastrophe, you will be able to save them."

Ling Chen replied, "I can't promise anything else, but at the very least, in my hands, the Lunar Scourge won't cause a catastrophe in my hands. Please rest assured."

"Very good," the White Tiger sounded quite pleased, "Well, you travelled all this way to kill me, right?"

The White Tiger did not beat around the bush, and spoke with great certainty. Ling Chen's heart rapidly thumped for a moment, before calming down as he nodded, "To be completely honest, I came here to kill you."

The White Tiger's soul was directly talking to Ling Chen's soul, so it was impossible for Ling Chen to lie. After all, if he lied, the White Tiger would be able to tell from his soul.

“Haha, you don’t need to feel uneasy. When the Ice Demon Beast called out ‘Lunar Scourge’, I already guessed it,” the White Tiger spoke in a gentle tone, “10,000 years ago, one of the Lunar Scourge’s Orbs fell here. At that time, the entire Forgotten Continent was overshadowed by the terror of the Lunar Scourge, including me. After recognising the Orb, in order not to allow it to return to the Lunar Scourge, I swallowed it, and it has remained within me to today. You must have used some mysterious method to find out the Orb’s location.”

“You’re completely right.” Ling Chen breathed in, and heavily nodded, “Although I knew that it would be impossible for me to kill you, and as a guardian beast, I shouldn’t kill you, but that reason made it so that I had to come.”

“If you were an evil person, or if you were being controlled by the Lunar Scourge, I wouldn’t allow this Orb to return to the Lunar Scourge under any circumstances. However, neither of those 2 situations is the case, so there’s no reason for the Orb within me not to re-join the Lunar Scourge. Because you are the Holy Qilin’s master, and it is still quite young, you can only protect it if you are strong enough. After it matures, even if we 4 guardian beasts all perish, our bloodlines can still be restored by the Holy Qilin’s holy power.

“That Orb is inside my corpse. With the Holy Qilin’s help, it will be incredibly easy for you to retrieve it.” The White Tiger’s voice was still quite clear, but it was evidently becoming weaker, “It seems that my time is nearly up. Finally, I have something that I want to give you… the reward that I promised you.”

“What?” Ling Chen looked up in surprise. A gift from the most powerful guardian beast definitely wouldn’t be anything insignificant.

“The Lunar Scourge is cursed by the heavens. When it is fully restored, it will invoke Divine Tribulation Lightning. Although the Divine Tribulation Lightning cannot destroy the Lunar Scourge, it will reveal the matter of the Lunar Scourge being restored. If the Lunar Scourge was controlling you, it would be the one to bear the Divine Tribulation lightning, and the fully restored Lunar Scourge would be able to do so.

“However, because you are the Lunar Scourge’s master, you will be the one to suffer the Divine Tribulation lightning. A human’s body is simply unable to withstand such a thing. Moreover, after the Divine Tribulation Lightning passes, the Moon God Clan will arrive. The Moon God Clan definitely will not allow the existence of the Lunar Scourge, so they will also destroy you. As a guardian beast, I cannot oppose the Moon God Clan’s will, nor should I. However, you are the Holy Qilin’s master-if you die, the Holy Qilin’s final descendant will also perish. As such, I cannot simply let you die.”

“You’re… going to give me power?” Ling Chen asked in confusion.

“No, it’s a type of protection. An ultimate protection that White Tigers can only give once in their lifetime-the Thunder God’s Bulwark.” The White Tiger said gravely. It never thought that this protection would be given to a human.

“Thunder God’s Bulwark?”

“I don’t have much time left. Please close your eyes and don’t move or resist. There won’t be any pain, nor will it take too much time. When it’s over, you’ll naturally understand why it’s called ‘Thunder God’s Bulwark’.”

Hearing the White Tiger’s words, Ling Chen did not speak and closed his eyes and relaxed his body. Because of Xiao Hui, he trusted that the White Tiger would not harm him. He silently waited to see what sort of miraculous thing this Thunder God’s Bulwark was.

Buzz~~~~~

Lightning began to buzz around him, and the White Tiger’s corpse suddenly flashed with a purple light. The purple light grew at a shocking rate until it became more than 100 metres long, and flooded into Ling Chen’s body.

A massive wave of pain filled Ling Chen’s body, and threatened to devour his consciousness, causing Ling Chen to almost curse out loud… didn’t the White Tiger say there would be no pain? What the hell was this?!

However, this only lasted for a split-second. In the next moment, the pain suddenly disappeared, and was replaced by a warm and numb, but comfortable feeling. This feeling of comfort gradually increased, making Ling Chen feel as if he was bathing in a hot

spring and there were more than 10 beauties using their hands to massage his body.

He completely forgot about his indignance regarding the pain, and closed his eyes, almost moaning in pleasure. He felt as if there was something warm wrapped around his body, and there were waves of warmth spreading throughout his body. Ling Chen guessed that it was lightning. However, lightning was the most berserk element, and had the greatest attack power-how could lightning make someone feel so comfortable?

Countless bolts of lightning flowed through his body, and after cycling through his body, they swarmed towards his dantian. Slowly, he could feel the space there being opened up by the lightning, creating a mysterious space...

“Ding... you have received the White Tiger’s Blessing, and have received the special skill: [Thunder God’s Bulwark].”

When the system announcement sounded out, the strange feeling in his body disappeared. Ling Chen opened his eyes, and looked at the dancing and buzzing purple lightning around his body. Very soon, the lightning disappeared, and his surroundings became silent again.

[Thunder God’s Bulwark]: An ultimate blessing granted by the guardian beast White Tiger’s soul’s power. The White Tiger can only give this power once, and will cause its soul to take great damage. After receiving this blessing, the target will receive the Thunder God’s protection. Effect: Absorbs any type of Thunder element damage. Can absorb Thunder element

damage and convert it into HP or MP, or can store it within one's body to release at will, causing massive Lightning damage.

Ling Chen: "!!!!!!"

Chapter 525 – The Shura Emperor Of The Legends

The Thunder God's Bulwark... A protective skill that could completely absorb Lightning damage!

Ling Chen never thought that the White Tiger would have given him a skill that could completely negate, as well as absorb, Lightning damage!

Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded. He knew that anything from the White Tiger would be quite impressive, but he never thought it would be such a powerful and heaven-defying skill. With the protection from the Thunder God's Bulwark, not only would Ling Chen never be damaged by Lightning attacks, but they would instead be beneficial for him. In other words, apart from the ability to absorb Water attacks from the Aquarius Orb, Ling Chen now had this same effect for Lightning attacks! This skill also allowed him to store up Lightning then release it at will!

However, this was not the most important point.

This skill was more so important for the Divine Lightning Tribulation!

In the Fogotten Continent, the wrath of the heavens was mainly manifested through Divine Lightning Tribulation. And now, even the wrath of the heavens could not affect him!

“So it was… The Thunder God’s Bulwark of the legends.”

Qi Yue spoke incredibly softly, but her voice was full of awe and incredulity. She was much more familiar with the ‘Thunder God’s Bulwark’ than Ling Chen. Only mature White Tigers could give this blessing, and they could only give it once in their lives. After giving it away, their power would fall by half a grade for the next 100 years. As such, unless it was to someone incredibly important to them, someone who needed the skill urgently, the White Tiger wouldn’t be willing to sacrifice so much of its power. Moreover, the White Tiger was an incredibly resolute creature, so it was impossible to force it to give this blessing.

Back then, when the Scarlet Flame Sword Emperor became a Shura, he had desired the White Tiger’s Thunder God’s Bulwark. However, that was just a desire, and could not become reality. Afterwards, when he became a Shura, he faced the Divine Lightning Tribulation, and perished at the Moon God Clan’s hands. If he had possessed the Thunder God’s Bulwark, the Shura’s fate would have been changed. The Shura’s remnant spirit had proudly told Ling Chen before, “Back then, if it wasn’t for the Divine Tribulation Lightning, the three Moon Goddesses and the Void Dragon God would not have been able to harm me at all!!”

Before the Shura’s remnant spirit had disappeared, it told Ling Chen to find a way to defend against Lightning… He was telling Ling Chen that compared to the Moon God Clan and Void Dragon God, the Divine Lightning Tribulation was far more terrifying.

And now, this legendary blessing that the Shura had sought, was given to Ling Chen, who possessed the Lunar Scourge.

No matter if it was Qi Yue or Ling Chen, they both knew that the White Tiger had not given Ling Chen this blessing out of gratitude. There was only a single reason... and that was Xiao Hui, who possessed the Holy Qilin's bloodline. The White Tiger's power was birthed from the Holy Qilin, and it did this to protect the Holy Qilin's bloodline, so that it would not go extinct.

"White Tiger, this gift, is too great." Ling Chen deeply breathed in and out. He raised his hands and saw that there was still some pure purple lightning crackling around them.

"I don't want you to die, because I don't want to see the Holy Qilin's bloodline disappear from the Mystic Moon world. Moreover, I'm about to die, so if I don't give it away, it'll disappear with me." The White Tiger's soul was even weaker after giving Ling Chen the blessing, and its voice was almost inaudible. It focused the last of its soul on Xiao Hui, and Ling Chen could feel its reluctance to go, but also appreciation.

"This is simply... Fate that even the heavens would be jealous of." Qi Yue said emotionally. Better than anyone else, she understood what this 'Thunder God's Bulwark' meant for both Ling Chen and her. This blessing meant that the greatest obstacle Ling Chen would face in the future was gone, and had greatly increased his strength. Qi Yue was simply ecstatic.

"This time, it was Xiao Hui who brought me this luck." Ling Chen said, before gratefully saying to the White Tiger, "All in all, I will remember your kindness. This Thunder God's Bulwark is simply too important to me." The White Tiger's voice slowly

sounded out, “For the Holy Qilin’s bloodline, I don’t regret this decision. However, I do not know if this decision was correct or not. After all, I don’t know if I will create a Shura that is even more terrifying than the one from 10,000 years ago.”

Ling Chen completely understood what the White Tiger was saying. The Lunar Scourge created Shuras. The Shura from 10,000 years ago was created because of the Lunar Scourge, and had fallen under the Divine Tribulation Lightning. Now, the Lunar Scourge had reappeared, so it was possible that another Shura could be birthed. However, this Shura... because of the White Tiger, would not fear Lightning. If the Shura caused another catastrophe, the White Tiger would be a sinner.

“Don’t worry, although I possess the Lunar Scourge, I won’t become a Shura, because I don’t have any reason to become a Shura...” Ling Chen paused, and thought of the ingredients necessary for resurrection, “At least, I don’t have any right now.”

The White Tiger fell silent for a few moments before replying, “You know the connection between the Lunar Scourge and Shura... but you don’t seem to understand it fully.”

“Eh?” Ling Chen was quite confused.

“The Lunar Scourge has a curse called ‘Heaven’s Wrath’. This curse will make those who possess the Lunar Scourge to walk on the path of heaven’s wrath... In other words, with the Lunar Scourge, even if one does not want to, they will inevitably walk towards... the path of the Shura! This has held true since ancient times until now.” Ling Chen: “.....”

“Could it be… that those who have the Lunar Scourge, even if they aren’t willing or have any reason to, they’ll still become a Shura sooner or later? Including me, as someone who has subdued it?” Ling Chen asked as his heartrate sped up and he frowned.

The Lunar Scourge had 2 debuffs: Heaven’s Jealousy and Heaven’s Wrath. Ling Chen had suffered from the Heaven’s Jealousy the most, but he had never understood the Heaven’s Wrath debuff… the White Tiger seemed to be talking about this!

“That’s right,” the White Tiger replied. It could feel the changes in Ling Chen’s emotions, and it continued to speak, “However, you don’t need to be too worried. In order to create a Shura, the Lunar Scourge needs at least 12 God Orbs. If you don’t want to become a Shura, then don’t return more than 11 God Orbs. Moreover, even if you become a Shura… you’ll be different to the Shura from 10,000 years ago.”

“Different? Why would I be different?” Ling Chen was quite confused.

“It’s very simple. Your mind is stronger than his, and by quite a lot. This is evidenced through you conquering the Lunar Scourge. Shuras are created through killing, and once one becomes a Shura, they will receive immense power. At the same time, their seven emotions and six pleasures will be turned into bloodlust. That bloodlust will make it so that the Shura will only desire to continuously kill. It was because of that bloodlust the Shura from 10,000 years ago killed nearly 10% of all creatures in the Forgotten Continent.

“Moreover, there are different types of Shuras… the lowest type of Shura is a Shura that is filled with bloodlust, but doesn’t have the complete power of a Shura. In fact, that sort of being isn’t truly a Shura, but a powerful and demonic murderer. The second type is like the Scarlet Flame Sword Emperor from 10,000 years ago. He had the bloodlust of a Shura, as well as the complete power of a Shura. He was a true Shura.”

“Both of these Shuras are created by the Lunar Scourge?” Ling Chen asked.

“That’s right,” The White Tiger’s remnant soul replied.

“They’re both created by the Lunar Scourge, but their difference lies in their power. One has complete power, while the other only has part of the power of a Shura… from your explanation, it seems that the difference in power is quite great.”

“Indeed, it is very great. Shuras without complete power simply cannot compare to true Shuras. As for why there are these 2 types, I do not know. Perhaps the lower type of Shura is missing something, and is unable to truly step onto the path of the Shura.”

“Missing something?” Ling Chen muttered to himself.

The White Tiger continued to speak, “Perhaps you will find the answer to that question in future. There’s also a third type of Shura that only exists in the legends and has never appeared before. However, you might become that sort of Shura.”

“Third type? There’s a third type? What are its characteristics?” A type of Shura that only existed in the legends and had never appeared before, but was something he could become? Ling Chen became quite curious.

“The first type is a demonic murderer that comes close to the border of being a Shura. The second type is a true Shura, The third type… breaks free of a Shura’s chains and surpasses both a Shura’s soul and power-Shura Emperor.”

“Shura… Emperor?” Hearing this unfamiliar, yet mighty name, Ling Chen’s heart shook.

“The Shura Emperor is even more powerful than a true Shura, but it will not massacre like the normal Shura. A Shura Emperor has boundless bloodlust, but is able to control it, and has seven emotions and six pleasures like a normal person. Shuras are said to be the most terrifying existences in the world, and those who receive a Shura’s power lose their humanity as the price. However, if one becomes a Shura Emperor, their personality and mind will not be affected, and will even be able to control their seven emotions and six pleasures. This type of Shura is many times more powerful than a normal Shura… maybe even more than 10 times!”

10 times more powerful than a normal Shura… that was simply incomprehensible! Ling Chen had heard too many stories about how powerful the Shura had been in the path. However, the price for obtaining that sort of power was losing oneself to his or her bloodlust. There were no records of a being ever possessing that much power, as well as rationality, in the Forgotten Continent.

“How can someone become that type of Shura? And why do you say I might be able to become that type of Shura?” Ling Chen hurriedly asked.

“The way to become a Shura Emperor is quite simple, but actually achieving it is as difficult as reaching the skies. The method is... using one’s mental energy to conquer the bloodlust that comes with the Shura’s power! It sounds incredibly simple, but in the history of the Forgotten Continent, no one has ever achieved it before. You are the first human who has conquered the Lunar Scourge. Although this was partially because the Lunar Scourge was in a weak state, adding on the auspiciousness that the Holy Qilin brings, perhaps you really will be able to do it. Of course, the precondition is that the Shura Emperor isn’t just a legend, and is actually a possibility. After all, no one has ever seen a Shura Emperor, and there are no records. Some say that the Shura Emperor is simply a story that was made up.”

Chapter 526 – Thunder Bulwark, Lightning Attraction

"The thing that a Shura has the most of is not power, but bloodlust. If one can control his bloodlust, they will surpass the level of an ordinary Shura. As such, the legend is somewhat believable. However… the terrifying nature of the Shura's power is something I witnessed with my own eyes back then. It is simply in an indescribably powerful realm. The Shura was called the world's most powerful being, and I can attest to that. Wanting to control the bloodlust that even exceeds its power is more difficult than reaching the skies! Perhaps it's impossible.

"You're not an incredibly greedy person; this is something I'm certain of. You're obsessed with restoring the Lunar Scourge because you have a special and important reason. However, my selfish request is that you stop after retrieving 11 God Orbs… However, your future and the Lunar Scourge's futures are things that I cannot control. If you have a reason to desire the Shura's power or identity, then I hope that you can, through the protection of the Holy Qilin's auspiciousness, become the legendary Shura Emperor, as opposed to a demonic murderer… I hope you and the Holy Qilin will not perish at the Moon God Clan's hands.

"Every creature has its selfish desires. Rather than you becoming a terrifying Shura that the Divine Tribulation Lightning has no effect on, I even more so don't want to see the Holy Qilin's bloodline go extinct… Young human, you're the first true owner of the Lunar Scourge. If you decide to become a Shura, then the entire Forgotten Continent… no, entire Mystic Moon world, will be shaken up by you. When that time comes, whether you bring catastrophe or great blessings will depend on you, but will not be

decided by you… I cannot see anymore…

"… I have already told all of this to the White Tiger City's Mayor. As such, you don't need to worry about the consequences of killing me. Young human, protect yourself and protect your companions. I hope that one day when the Holy Qilin matures, it will be able to reawaken the White Tiger Clan's bloodline…"

After using the last of its soul's strength to say the things it wanted to say, the White Tiger's remnant soul dissipated. The Thunder God Barrier disappeared, and the crackling of lightning also died down as the air became less chaotic. Ling Chen stood there and did not move for a while, going through every sentence that the White Tiger said.

"Ding… you are the first player in Mystic Moon to kill a Mysterious God grade Boss. You received the rewards: Fame+100,000, gold coins+100,000, SP+100,000, unique item 'God Slayer Insignia'.

[God Slayer Insignia]: Type: Insignia, Grade: None, Equipment Requirements: belongs to [Ling Tian], cannot be transferred. A mysterious insignia with an unknown history. Awarded to the first player who kills a Mysterious God grade Boss by themselves. Does not give any bonus stats. Legends say that it can open an ancient ruins that has been sealed.

A system announcement suddenly sounded out as a golden insignia floated down from above and landed in Ling Chen's hands. The insignia was quite eye-catching, and was about the size of a ping-pong ball. No matter if it was its appearance or description, Ling Chen was quite familiar with it. He stopped

thinking about all of the things the White Tiger had said and took out 2 insignias that were the same size, had the same patterns, but were silver and a lighter shade of gold... the Celestial Slayer Insignia and Heaven Slayer Insignia.

The Celestial Slayer Insignia was awarded to him when he killed the Greedy Giant Toad, for being the first player to kill a Celestial grade Boss. The Heaven Slayer Insignia had been awarded to him for being the first to kill a Heaven's End grade Boss. This God Slayer Insignia had been awarded to him for killing the first Mysterious God grade Boss. Not only were their appearances almost the same, even their descriptions were exactly the same. None of them had any stats, but all of them were able to open an ancient sealed ruins.

Ling Chen now knew where the entrance to the ancient sealed ruins were-under the fragmented ice layer at the Godchild Peak.

Each of the 3 insignias shone in Ling Chen's hands. As if it had been ordained by the heavens, Ling Chen had collected all 3 of the insignias. This meant that Ling Chen could now open that mysterious door at the summit of the Godchild Peak.

Godchild Peak... mysterious door... the highest place in the Mystic Moon world. A door that required 3 mysterious insignias to open... what could be inside?

Ling Chen tightly gripped the 3 insignias, and the burning curiosity within him made him want to immediately return to the Godchild Peak. He looked around him, and found that the Thunder God Barrier was mostly gone, though there was still some

lightning on the ground. Ling Chen let out a long breath as he coldly asked, “Qi Yue, what the White Tiger said about one becoming a Shura if they possess the Lunar Scourge whether they want to or not… is that true?”

Qi Yue could feel the suppressed anger in Ling Chen’s voice, and after remaining silent for a while, she slowly replied, “Until now, no one has been able to escape the curse brought by the Lunar Scourge. However, that does not mean it’s impossible. Perhaps little master will be the first to conquer the Lunar Scourge’s curse just like how he was the first to conquer the Lunar Scourge.”

Ling Chen fell silent…

After hearing so many legends about Shuras, they formed a firm impression in his mind… powerful, emotionless, cruel, savage, bloodthirsty, demonic murderers. No one could rival a Shura’s power, but the cost of that power was losing themselves and becoming a god of killing. In that case, if he lost his self, what use would that power be? Back then, the Scarlet Flame Sword Emperor massacred 10% of all living creatures in the Forgotten Continent, and the end result was being feared by tens of thousands of creatures, then dying.

As such, the Shura had always been a legend to Ling Chen, but not something that he himself wanted to become. Even if he had the opportunity, he definitely wouldn’t allow himself to become one. One’s self was one of the most important things as a person- how would he be willing to give up his very self in exchange for power?

However, why did the Shura's remnant spirit tell him that he didn't regret becoming a Shura, but instead enjoyed it? And why did he say that Shuras weren't emotionless beings, but rather, only those with the greatest emotions had the right to become Shuras...

According to the White Tiger's words, there were some who did not become true Shuras, who were only fake Shuras filled with bloodlust. What did that sort of Shura lack... could it be the emotions that the Shura's remnant spirit had spoke of? However, how could it be that one required an abundance of emotions to become a god of killing?

The word "Shura" endlessly reverberated within Ling Chen's mind due to the White Tiger's words. For Shui Ruo, he had to complete the Lunar Scourge, but he also had to avoid walking upon the path of the Shura. Ling Chen thought of the underground space under the Novice Village, and Tao Tie's words that he couldn't understand- "the unavoidable fate". Evidently, this was referring to the path of the Shura.

If I really must become a Shura...

Whoosh...

If this was during the early stages of the game, he would most likely have been quite excited. How fun would it have been to be a Shura in the game? However, he now knew that the Mystic Moon world was not just a virtual world. If he became a Shura, it wouldn't just be his identity in the game. Perhaps...

God-freaking-dammit!!

Ling Chen shook his head and cast those thoughts out of his mind, and decided not to dwell on them... He had to complete the Lunar Scourge, and the curse could go screw itself! The Lunar Scourge failed at taking over my mind in the beginning, so I don't believe that it can change my nature to become a Shura!!

Ling Chen was only a sliver away from filling up his LV49 EXP bar, so if there were high-levelled monsters nearby, he could easily reach LV50. However, the White Tiger's rampage left the surrounding area without any living creatures, so it wouldn't be easy to find monsters to kill.

Xiao Hui had already walked around the White Tiger's body many times, and he now finally stopped. After giving a short cry of "awoo", he opened his mouth and a grey light instantly covered the White Tiger's corpse.

Ling Chen's eyes widened... Surely Xiao Hui wasn't trying to eat the White Tiger's corpse! That was a guardian beast's corpse!

As Xiao Hui barked, the grey light completely covered the White Tiger's body, and it slowly turned into specks of purple light and rushed towards Xiao Hui's mouth...

Xiao Hui was indeed eating the White Tiger's corpse. As the area that they grey light covered decreased, the White Tiger's body began to gradually disappear. After 3 minutes, the last of the light from the White Tiger's body had disappeared into Xiao Hui's

mouth.

Despite consuming such a large body, Xiao Hui's own size did not change at all. However, Ling Chen had long since become used to this, and did not find it strange. After consuming the White Tiger, Xiao Hui did not move, and quietly stood there, as if he was digesting the massive amount of power from the White Tiger. After a while, a purple light rose up from Xiao Hui's body, and a system announcement sounded out in Ling Chen's ears. "Ding... your pet 'Holy Spirit Beast' Xiao Hui has successfully devoured the Mysterious God grade Boss White Tiger's body, and his stats have increased. HP+20,000, MP+10,000, Defence+2,000, Movement Speed+50, obtained skills: [Thunder Bulwark], [Lightning Attraction]."

After devouring the White Tiger, Xiao Hui's stats skyrocketed, causing Ling Chen's eyes to become like saucers. This sort of stat increase gave Xiao Hui more stats than Ling Chen levelling up 100 times! Not only that, he had also obtained 2 terrifyingly powerful skills:

[Thunder Bulwark]: An ultimate defensive skill granted by the White Tiger. Forever negates all Lightning attack damage.

[Lightning Attraction]: A skill granted by the White Tiger that attracts lightning. When casted, can greatly increase the effects of Lightning attacks within a certain range, causing the damage of all Lightning attacks within 10,000 metres to increase by 100%. After casting, the effects cannot be controlled and does not distinguish between friend and foe. It can be cast and deactivated at will. Amount of time skill can be cast for: 3,600 years.

Chapter 527 – Taurus Orb

The purple light around Xiao Hui's body disappeared. Although his stats had dramatically increased, his body had not become bigger at all. The only physical change was the faint rings of purple light spun around his horn.

[Thunder Bulwark] gave Xiao Hui immunity to Lightning, like Ling Chen's [Thunder God's Bulwark].

Although [Lightning Attraction] affected both friend and foe by boosting everyone's Lightning attacks, it was still a skill that was extremely favourable for Ling Chen. After all, he not only did not fear Lightning, but could also absorb it. The more powerful the Lightning was, the more useful [Thunder God's Bulwark] would be.

Compared to the increase in stats, the 2 skills that Xiao Hui gained shocked Ling Chen much more. It was almost as if the White Tiger had left behind these skills as a gift for Xiao Hui.

As the White Tiger's body disappeared, a black glint of light on the ground caught his attention. Ling Chen walked over and picked it up. It was a jet-black piece of jade that was smooth as a mirror. It was shaped like a 'C', and fit perfectly in Ling Chen's hand. On the back was engraved a small 'Tyrant' character.

> [Demon Jade Hook, Tyrant]: A jade that the Tyrant Demon Beast carries. It is said that it was given to it by the then Demon Emperor. Unable to determine what material it is made of and its use.

That’s right, it was the Tyrant Demon Beast’s demon jade hook!

Adding on this piece, he now had 4 demon jade hooks! Once he obtained all 10, he could go to the Underworld and summon the Demon Emperor’s Soul! However, obtaining all 10 demon jade hooks meant killing all 10 ancient demon beasts! However, right now, he was far from strong enough to kill a demon beast. Out of the 4 that had perished, none of them had been directly killed by him…

The War Demon Beast had been killed by Xi Ling’s Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, the Shadow Demon Beast had been killed by the Shura’s remnant soul’s Shura’s Death Domain, the Ice Demon Beast had committed suicide and the Tyrant Demon Beast had been dragged down by the White Tiger. Because Ling Chen knew he was far from strong enough, he didn’t even think about collecting the demon jade hooks, and instead focused on gathering the Lunar Scourge’s Orbs. He had only obtained these 4 demon jade hooks through fate.

“Awoo… Awoo…”

Xiao Hui barked in a low voice and finally finished refining the White Tiger’s power. Xiao Hui raised his head, and after barking a few times, he burped and some items shot out from his mouth and landed on the ground.

They were things Xiao Hui had created from refining the White Tiger, so they definitely wouldn’t be anything ordinary. Ling Chen hurriedly went over and picked the items up. The first was about

as big as a soccer ball, and had a faint purple light around it. There were also 10 or so tooth-like things, as well as a ping pong ball-sized orb that shone with a silver light. [White Tiger's Teeth]: The guardian beast White Tiger's teeth. They are tougher than boulders and can destroy many things. They can be forged into indestructible weapons or indestructible defensive tools.

There were 13 White Tiger's Teeth-teeth that came from a guardian beast! All of them were top-grade forging materials. If the Dwarves saw them, they would faint from ecstasy!

[White Tiger's Heart]: The core of the guardian beast White Tiger's heart, which contained the most power out of the White Tiger's entire body. Not only does it contain immense power, it can absorb Nature energy to go through rebirth. However, apart from the White Tiger, other creatures will find it incredibly difficult to control its power.

Although this orb of light was as big as a soccer ball, it was incredibly heavy, and Ling Chen spent quite a deal of effort lifting it up. From the weight in his arms, he estimated that the White Tiger's Heart weighed at least 100 kilograms. Ling Chen immediately put it away and wiped the non-existent cold sweat on his forehead as he wondered if the Dwarves had a way to harness its power.

When Ling Chen picked up the last item, the 8 Orbs in the Lunar Scourge started to shine. Evidently, this was the God Orb inside the White Tiger's body!

[Taurus Orb]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Mysterious God, Attribute: Fire, Equipment Requirements: Can only be socketed

in the Lunar Scourge. Effects: All attacks (Physical, Magic, Item) will have Absolute Critical Hit.

The Taurus Orb, the ninth orb, gave him an incredible state-Absolute Critical Hit! This meant that after equipping it, every single attack Ling Chen dealt would be guaranteed to be a Critical Hit! Before, only with the [Battle Soul Possession] would Ling Chen have Absolute Critical Hit, but only for the next attack. With the Taurus Orb, he would permanently have this effect. What was even more terrifying was that this didn't only apply to Physical attacks but Magic attacks as well!

In the virtual game world, only Physical attacks could deal Critical Hits-it was common knowledge that Magic attacks couldn't deal Critical Hits! And yet, the Taurus Orb had destroyed this norm. After all, Magic attacks normally had a much larger AOE and range, and greater damage than Physical attacks. If Magic attacks could deal Critical Hits, and Absolute Critical Hit at that, the consequences would be terrifying.

Combined with the Cancer Orb, which ignored all Defence, all of Ling Chen's attacks would have Absolute Critical Hit and Absolute Pierce Hit! Every attack would deal damage that normal players wouldn't even be able to dream of.

With the Taurus Orb, the Heartless Orb that Ling Chen had been using all this time became completely useless. Ling Chen unequipped it then rearranged some of his other Crystals and Orbs before socketing the Taurus Orb into the second socket. A system announcement telling him that socketing was successful sounded out as Ling Chen's Critical Chance became '????'.

From this moment onwards, all of Ling Chen's damage figures would be purple!

"With that, I now have 9 Orbs. Now, I'm only missing 3 God Orbs: Aries Orb, Leo Orb and Capricorn Orb." Ling Chen muttered to himself as he put his hand on the Lunar Scourge. Obtaining the Taurus Orb had gone far more smoothly that he had thought, and only a few days had passed since he had obtained the Aquarius Orb. It was impossible for him to receive the next hint from Su'Er within such a period of time, so he narrowed his eyes as he asked, "Qi Yue, what are the effects of the last 3 Orbs? Can you tell me?"

Every Orb was incredibly powerful, and all had different effects. After obtaining the Taurus Orb, Ling Chen became quite curious about the final God Orbs.

Unexpectedly, Qi Yue unhesitatingly replied, "You can more or less guess their effects from their names. The Leo Orb greatly increases your Physical Attack Power, the Capricorn Orb greatly increases your Magic Attack Power, and the Aries Orb..."

"A defensive passive?" Ling Chen asked.

"No, Qi Yue shook her head, "The Aries Orb's effect is a bit special. If master obtained it now... to master, it would be quite useless."

"Useless? Why would it be useless?" Ling Chen was quite surprised. Currently, the 9 Orbs he had obtained were all incredibly powerful. Every time he gained an Orb, he would

become much stronger. For example, the Taurus Orb nearly doubled how powerful Ling Chen's attacks were! Perhaps some Orbs were stronger than others, but as Mysterious God grade Orbs, they shouldn't be too weak. Why would an Orb be 'useless' to him?

"The Aries Orb is indeed one of the 12 God Orbs, and is just as powerful as the other God Orbs. However, currently, it's truly useless to little master." Speaking to there, Qi Yue's voice became flirtatious, "However, if little master became a Shura one day, things would be completely different. The most 'useless' Aries Orb would become the most important Orb to little master, and little master would rely on it more than even the 3 Saint Orbs."

Ling Chen was completely confused, "What are you talking about? What does the Aries Orb do?"

"Well," Qi Yue giggled, then lazily replied, "Little master will find out when he obtains the Aries Orb. Spoilers are boring. Plus, little master doesn't want to become a Shura, so even if I told you, you'd be quite disappointed. As such, it's better if I don't say."

"....."

For things that Qi Yue didn't want to say, Ling Chen wouldn't be able to force her to say them no matter what he did. However, Ling Chen's curiosity had now been piqued, and Qi Yue refusing to say anything caused him to feel incredibly uncomfortable, but he could only give up.

Killing the Mysterious God grade White Tiger caused Ling Chen

to become instantly rich in SP. He now had 300,000 SP, and it was beautiful to look at. After thinking about it, Ling Chen did not immediately spend the SP. He was incredibly close to LV50, and he would step into a new realm after hitting LV50. It was possible that both of his professions would be upgraded at once, giving him many new powerful skills.

Just as he was going to find a place to farm monsters and level up, a system announcement telling him that someone in the real world was calling him. As such, Ling Chen could only put this matter aside and log off.

After Ling Chen left the virtual world, he opened his yes and saw Chao Ying standing next to him. He got up as he asked, “What is it?”

Chao Ying’s expression was a bit hesitant as she said in a small voice, “Li Xiao Xue came, and didn’t tell us beforehand.” Seeing the slight change in Ling Chen’s expression, she added, “She drove here by herself and didn’t bring anyone.”

Li Xiao Xue…

If it wasn’t for what had happened that day, Ling Chen would have waved his hand and asked Chao Ying and Chao Xi to courteously send her back. No matter what her status was, if he didn’t invite her, he didn’t have time to waste on her. However, after the events of that day… He couldn’t just do that.

Ling Chen scratched his head then put on his slippers as he

thought to himself... there's indeed no such thing as a free meal, much less free sex. Even if Li Xiao Xue had prostituted herself out that day, it was now time to pay the prostitute's fees.

Chapter 528 – Li Xiao Xue's Crazy Desire

"Where is she now?" Ling Chen asked in frustration.

"In the courtyard," Chao Ying replied.

Ling Chen got out of bed and put on a jacket as he walked out.

It wasn't bone-chillingly cold during winter in Su Hang. Li Xiao Xue had a thin velvet coat around her, and she quietly stood in the courtyard. Hearing the footsteps behind her, Li Xiao Xue turned around and smiled at Ling Chen, looking both happy and flirtatious, "Am I still welcome despite not being invited?"

Li Xiao Xue had come here by herself, and hadn't even brought a bodyguard. With her status, this was quite a risk for her. Moreover, after how much their 'relationship' developed, Ling Chen didn't have the face to turn her away.

"Big miss Li is my landlord; for my landlord to come, I should have been here to greet you when you arrived, let alone not welcome you." Ling Chen said helplessly. His gaze met Li Xiao Xue's then moved away. After what happened between them, he felt quite awkward around her.

"Landlord?" Li Xiao Xue's eyes sparkled as she took a small step forwards and she gently spoke, "I, Li Xiao Xue, am already yours; everything that's mine is naturally yours as well. If you like this Bamboo Sea Wonderland, you can stay here for as long as you want. In fact, you can even demolish it if you like."

Ling Chen coughed, and almost choked. Behind him, Chao Ying smiled as she tried to contain her laughter, “Master, I’m going to go take care of Tian Tian. If there’s anything, just let me know.” After speaking, she ran off like a gust of wind.

Only the two of them were left in the courtyard, and Ling Chen sat down in a bamboo chair as he rested his head on his hand, “Big miss Li, what did you come here for today? Just be direct.”

“Can’t I just come to see my man?” Li Xiao Xue sat opposite him and rested her chin on her hands, as if she was a love struck schoolgirl, as she gazed at him, “If I didn’t come here today, would you have come to see me? After pleasuring yourself, you immediately left, and didn’t even look after me, though I couldn’t even get out of bed.”

Ling Chen gripped the armrest on the chair, unable to say anything.

Li Xiao Xue laughed, then looked up and down Ling Chen as she said, “So it turns out the almighty and famous Ling Tian can get embarrassed as well. Hmm... now that’s a interesting fact, as well as cute.”

It had been many years since Ling Chen had felt so flustered before. He straightened his body, wishing he could escape, but could only maintain his calm exterior as he replied, “Big miss Li, every second of your time is worth millions of dollars; your time is more valuable than anyone’s time. I don’t want to waste your

time, so if you have anything to say, just say it... My actions from before were quite rash, but what's done is done. I seem to have taken advantage of you, and you achieved your goal. Now, I want to hear your reason."

"My reason?" Li Xiao Xue smiled, and continued to gaze at Ling Chen... it was a gaze of a woman looking at her man, "Isn't my reason obvious? I want you to become my man; my only man."

"What's your reason for wanting me to become your man?" Ling Chen placidly asked.

"There are quite a few reasons for that," Li Xiao Xue spoke naturally, "It's because you're the first man that I've become interested in; the first person I've wanted to meet. I've been collecting information on you since a long time ago, and my curiosity towards you has continuously increased. When a woman becomes curious and interested in a man, she isn't far off from falling for him.

"You're incredibly powerful, and can give any woman the sense of security they want. Ever since I started becoming involved in the affairs of the Li family, every year, I've faced nearly 100 assassinations. A sense of security is something that I can only dream of."

"What else?" Ling Chen wasn't surprised by this. As the successor to the Li family financial group, there would definitely be countless people who wanted to harm her. Chao Ying and Chao Xi had told him in the past that every month, there would usually be around 10 attempted assassinations. The Li family's guards and

security officers were all elites within elites, so Li Xiao Xue had always been fine. However, she had never been able to have true peace. Indeed, Ling Chen had the power to give Li Xiao Xue a sense of security-with his ability to turn the Long family upside-down, as well as the Reapers in the shadows that he controlled, if he wanted to protect Li Xiao Xue, no one in China would be able to harm her.

However, this definitely wasn't all there was to it.

"There's also... of course, it's because you're Ling Tian. No woman would be able to resist such a powerful, influential and handsome man. How could I, Li Xiao Xue, not want such a powerful piece of eye-candy?" Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled.

No matter which gender it was, anyone was attracted to good looks... and Ling Chen was no exception. He shrugged as he said in a serious voice, "I want to hear... your true reasons!!"

"There are 3 of them!" Li Xiao Xue stretched out 3 white fingers, "Firstly, you've always acted decisively, whether in the virtual world or the real world. You don't even bat an eye when challenging the Yan Huang Alliance, and fearlessly humiliate Long Tian Yun, who no one dares to offend. You charged into the Long family's residence and killed thousands of people... In fact, calling you the biggest mass-murderer in the past 100 years wouldn't be an exaggeration, and most murderers would seem like saints in front of you.

"These acts all show how cruel and decisive you are... Perhaps, to those you hate, you are incredibly merciless. However, I can tell that deep down, you're someone who heavily values relationships

and righteousness.

“Back then, your little sister Ling Shui Ruo contracted the Isrock Disease. From then onwards, you disregarded the risk of yourself being infected, and didn’t leave her side as you took care of her. In trying to save her, you moved from Zhong Zhou to Beijing... as far as I know, those years, you stayed by her side and did not do anything you wanted to do. In fact, you essentially gave up everything for her. Just this alone is something than very few people in the world are able to do.” Li Xiao Xue said seriously

To the whole world, the Isrock Disease was a terrifying demon. When someone contracted the Isrock Disease, everyone... Including their relatives, would cast them aside, and wouldn’t even go near them. It wasn’t that these people were all cold and cruel, but that the Isrock Disease was simply too terrifying, and no one could fight against their fear. As such, Ling Chen staying by Shui Ruo’s side greatly moved Li Xiao Xue.

“From my talks with Meng Xin, I realised that you were helping her for Ling Shui Ruo’s sake. However, after your little sister passed away, you decided to take revenge by charging into the Long family’s residence alone... Evidently, that day, you had planned to die. Luckily, the heavens decided that was not your time to die, so you lived on and came here. After Shui Ruo departed, you didn’t have any reason to continue helping Meng Xin, and yet, you’re still doing your best to help her. Very few people would do such a thing.”

Li Xiao Xue leaned towards him as she smiled, “A man who values relationships and righteousness like you wouldn’t just cast

aside the people beside him, right? My big brother Ling Tian, you've already taken away my first time. Surely you wouldn't shirk the responsibility, right? If I was in danger, would you sit by and watch? And if there was something important that I needed your help with, would you just ignore me?"

Ling Chen fell silent... it seemed that Li Xiao Xue understood him quite well. After doing the deed with Li Xiao Xue, even if Li Xiao Xue pretended it never happened, he would never be able to do such a thing. This was because within his mind, Li Xiao Xue, whose first time he had taken, now belonged to him. In that case, he would pay attention to her safety, and would not allow anything to befall her, nor would he allow any other man to have her.

For this reason, Li Xiao Xue had seduced Ling Chen and allowed him to take away her first time, so that she would be tightly bound to him.

"What are the other 2 reasons?" Ling Chen believed that the other 2 reasons were the truly important ones. Why did Li Xiao Xue give up her first time to him? It couldn't be that she just wanted a sense of security? Love at first sight? Who was Ling Chen kidding-this was the Li family's big miss!

Li Xiao Xue stood up and hugged her chest as she leaned forwards and walked towards him, "A person's fate is largely determined by the circumstances of their birth, and their efforts, though important, is of secondary importance. My background is one of riches and power, and I've worked harder than anyone else. Under the efforts from my father and myself, the Li family financial group's total worth is now $2 trillion. I believe that the Li family

financial group's growth will not stop here, and within 20 years, there will be no one in China who can surpass us. Ling Tian, what would you do with such wealth?"

Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded... $2 trillion? With such wealth, what couldn't you do in the world?!

"Even if I extravagantly spend this money, it would take me more than 10 lifetimes to spend it all. To me, money is simply a number that grows astoundingly quickly every day... but that is all. Before, seeing this figure grow, I would feel quite excited. However, after a long time, this feeling has dulled, and has now completely disappeared. Despite this, the Li family financial group is incredibly important to my Li family, and supports millions of people. Even if I've lost interest, I still need to work hard to make the Li family financial group grow and expand. As for the interest in money that I have lost, it has naturally fallen on other things, such as..."

"Power?" Ling Chen asked as he frowned.

"Nearly, but not quite," Li Xiao Xue smiled, then continued, "To most people, money and power are the 2 most important things in the world. However, the greatest power lies in the Long family's hands, and even if my Li family has 10 times as much wealth, we can never possess more power than the Long family... as well as the countless other political and aristocratic families. We always need to watch ourselves around them and follow the 'rules' they set, as well as accept whatever the rightfully take from us."

"What is it you want then?" Li Xiao Xue's words could cause

anyone's heart to leap, but Ling Chen was incredibly excited after hearing these words.

"What I want is very simple... for the Li family not to be under any person or power. I want the enterprise that my family has put in blood, sweat and tears, to be fully controlled by my Li family, and not be influenced by anyone else!" Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled.

This was something 'simple'? This woman's thinking was simply crazy. Ling Chen also stood up and looked at Li Xiao Xue in a new light... he believed that Li Xiao Xue had never said these words to anyone else before, otherwise the Li family would be in dire straits. He narrowed his eyes as he replied, "What shocking thinking. However, what does it have to do with me? Do you think I have the ability to help you achieve this grand dream?"

"I'm not certain," Li Xiao Xue said as she looked at him, her eyes filled with emotion, "But if there's a single person in the world who can help me fulfil this desire, it's definitely you!"

Chapter 529 – Long Family's Second Son (1)

"I thought only a madman would be able to say the words that you just said," Ling Chen said as he looked at Li Xiao Xue.

Li Xiao Xue smiled and met his gaze easily as she replied, "Just think of me as a mad person then."

"Why do you think I'll help you? And why do you think I'll be able to help you fulfil your desire? Just because I could send the Long family into chaos? With your intelligence, you should know those are completely different things," Ling Chen said with a cold expression.

"Oh?" Li Xiao Xue looked at him in amusement as she replied, "Surely you're not thinking that I want to use your power and your hatred of the Long family to destroy them? Hehehe... darling, your ideas are so cute. A woman like me wouldn't dare to have such thoughts-the Long family is China's political pillar, and as a Chinese citizen, I want the Long family to be as powerful as possible. Why would I have such a crazy idea?"

Ling Chen felt a bit surprised. Before, he had thought that she wanted the Li family to have the Long family's position. After all, if the Li family wielded the most power in China, they would not be controlled or influenced by anyone else. The Li family would be able to have the greatest wealth and power in China. In order to achieve this, the Long family would have to be destroyed, or greatly suppressed. Li Xiao Xue knew that Ling Chen completely hated the Long family, and had singlehandedly caused them to suffer a catastrophe. As such, Ling Chen had thought that she

wanted to use him to deal with them.

As such, he had been quite shocked when Li Xiao Xue refuted this.

Li Xiao Xue smiled as she continued to speak, “Is the only way not to be under the Long family to destroy them or suppress them? Let alone how crazy this idea is, do you really think the Long family, which has existed for more than a thousand years, can be taken down so easily? If it really was so simple, they would have been destroyed long ago. The Long family has an incredibly deep foundation, and has many cards up their sleeves-this is something outsiders cannot even imagine. On the surface, it seems that the Long family only has the Xuanyuan family and the seven main forces protecting them. However, there are still 3 names that less than 10 people in China know about.

“What do you mean?” Ling Chen asked.

“Dragon Claw, Dragon Scale, Dragon Blood.” Li Xiao Xue’s smile disappeared as her tone became serious. [TLN: Just a reminder that the surname ‘Long’ means ‘dragon’]

“The Long family’s secret forces?”

“Precisely speaking, they’re the Long family’s trump cards. They’re either 3 armies, or 3 organisations, or 3 people, or 3 weapons… Despite spending a lot of effort, I still don’t know what they are, and only know the names. Even within the Long family, only Long Zheng Yang truly knows what they are – even Long Tian

Yun would have no idea. It's said they're hidden under the 'Dragon Lifeline' under the Long family, and will not appear under normal circumstances. However, when the Dragon Lifeline starts to crack, that means the Long family is facing complete annihilation, and only then will they act.

"Over the past thousand years, countless large and small families have disappeared, and yet the Long family, despite having so many enemies, has stood firmly all this time. This is because they not only have the Xuanyuan family and seven main forces supporting them, but also Dragon Claw, Dragon Scale and Dragon Blood protecting them. Our small Li family, which has developed for less than 100 years, attacking them would be like dashing an egg against rocks. It would be equivalent to suicide."

Dragon Claw, Dragon Scale, Dragon Blood...

Although there were less than 100 Reapers, they were all deathgods who had walked out of Hell, and their espionage skills were all top-notch. 2 or 3 of them were enough to create an intelligence net that covered an entire city. After returning to China, they had done much investigating on the Long family, but they had never heard these 3 names before.

Li Xiao Xue had told him about these 3 mysterious names not to rebut his words, but rather to give him a warning. She knew that with the mysterious organisation behind him, Ling Chen would be able to force the Long family into despair. However, he had to be wary of those 3 mysterious trump cards they had hidden away.

Ling Chen could tell that Li Xiao Xue was warning him. In order

to obtain such secret information, the Li family must have taken a great risk and paid a massive price. For her to tell him so openly about this, it was a massive favour. Ling Chen committed these 3 names to memory and his expression relaxed, “Thank you for telling me this. Please continue.”

“I’m already yours; do you really need to thank me for this?” Li Xiao Xue flirtatiously smiled, looking so beautiful that Ling Chen felt slightly stunned, “We can’t suppress them or take their position, but there’s a better option… such as a marriage alliance between the Long family and Li family.”

“Then you should be talking to Long Zheng Yang or Long Tian Yun, not me,” Ling Chen expressionlessly said, “With your Li family’s immense background, and adding on the fact that you’re the sole heir to the family and have extraordinary looks, I’m sure the Long family would have no reason to refuse.”

“Long Tian Yun? He’s called a man among dragon in the younger generation, but to me, he’s just a well-dressed bug.” Li Xiao Xue curled her lips in distaste, “Everyone praises him for being talented and wise… but after a few exchanges with him, these words sound like jokes to me. His supposed talent and wisdom are merely his bright and kind exterior which masks a sinister and evil interior. People praise him for being incredibly capable and supporting the Yan Huang Alliance by himself… with the Long family’s foundation, as well as the support from the Xuanyuan family and seven main forces, supporting a Yan Huang Alliance is a piece of cake. Long Tian Yun has done nothing.

“On the contrary, he offended a great calamity. In the future, if

the Yan Huang Alliance is destroyed, it will have been because of him. Having an extraordinary demeanour and being able to dominate any scene... what a joke. As the successor to the Long family, how could he not be all high and mighty and look down on everyone? Who would he have any reason to fear or respect? The only thing Long Tian Yun can boast of is his family and background.

"With Long Tian Yun's background, of course people would praise him immensely. However, if he really was that excellent, why would such an intelligent girl like Yun Meng Xin fiercely reject a marriage alliance with him? The Long Tian Yun that I know is a toxic and sinister, evil and petty person. You completely hate him, but he doesn't even have the right to be your enemy. Even if I, Li Xiao Xue, were faced with death, I still wouldn't want to marry such a person."

Long Tian Yun, who was publicly acknowledged to be the most excellent member of the younger generation, had been slammed in to the dirt by Li Xiao Xue. There were very few people in China who dared to criticise Long Tian Yun like this. Ling Chen's interest was piqued, as he asked, "Since you don't want to marry Long Tian Yun, could it be that you want to marry Long Zhen Yang?"

"Although Long Zheng Yang is currently single, and was quite handsome back in the day, but my standards aren't so low that I would want to marry someone who could be my father." Li Xiao Xue said as she wrinkled her nose.

"Then what do you mean by 'marriage alliance'? Could it be..." Ling Chen suddenly stopped speaking as he realised something,

and he looked at Li Xiao Xue as his gaze became sharp.

"You finally realised?" Ling Chen's reaction did not cause Li Xiao Xue to become scared. Instead, she laughed in delight, "Out of all the young men in China, it's not just Long Tian Yun who possesses the Long family's blood!"

"What... are you trying to say?" Ling Chen said expressionlessly as his body stiffened.

Li Xiao Xue's expression did not change as she whispered, "Ling Chen-that was your old name, right? Ling Tian Ya's your new name. However, wasn't Tian Ya a part of your name a long time ago?"

Ling Chen's expression darkened as he frowned.

"How do you know this?" Ling Chen coldly asked.

"Just a guess," Li Xiao Xue smiled, "After compiling all the information on you, and taking into account the hatred you had for the Long family, as well as incomprehensible logic, I had a sneaking suspicion about you. After entertaining that suspicion, I discovered many shocking coincidences. Before meeting you, I was less than 10% certain of my suspicion, but after meeting you, I was 90% certain that I was right. Now, after seeing your reaction, I can't find any reason to doubt that suspicion anymore... back then, the little Tian Ya, who contracted the Isrock Disease and disappeared... wait, no, I'm sure the true reason Tian Ya disappeared wasn't as how the internal of the Long family had

reported.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Ling Chen had already decided to leave behind the matters in the past forever, and would never bring up his identity. He thought that the quiet child in the Long family, who no one paid attention to, had been long since forgotten, and that no one would even remember that he existed. And yet, the big miss of the Li family had spoken his name from back then, revealing that she knew about his identity. He simply couldn’t understand how this woman knew about this matter that no one should know about! “I can tell you that you’re entirely correct. However, how did you discover this?!” Ling Chen’s eyebrows were tightly furrowed as a feeling of unease welled up within him.

“If a large family wants to survive, having a large intelligence network is a must. Without enough eyes and ears, they’ll be taken down sooner or later. My grandfather and father both valued information greatly, so of course, the intelligence network covered the Long family as well. Even now, many of the people within the Long family are spies for the Li family. However, those with the courage and ability to plant spies in the internal of the Long family can be counted on a single hand. As such, we have a rough idea of the happenings within the Long family, including some secret matters. That includes the Long family’s second son, who shouldn’t have been born.”

Chapter 530 – The Long Family's Second Son (2)

"What else do you know?" Ling Chen asked. Li Xiao Xue's answer didn't answer how she knew he was Tian Ya from back then.

Li Xiao Xue's expression became calm, with a hint of melancholy. She softly replied, "That poor boy was born in the most powerful family, and should have lived a life of riches and fame. However, fate played a cruel joke on him. As someone who possessed that family's bloodline, not only did he not enjoy what was rightfully his, he was isolated and rejected. His grandfather and father did not celebrate his birth or spread the news. Rather, they tried to suppress the information so that outsiders would not find out, and so that the truth would be forever sealed. However, in the end, he was still part of the Long family, and wasn't abused or malnourished. However, his seniors never acknowledged his identity, and barely anyone came to see him.

"Within the family, his identity was a secret known by all. However, no one dared to tell this to an outsider. Although he was a son of the Long family, his own relatives cast him aside, making everyone else feel quite curious. They knew he was someone who should not have been born, and that his existence didn't bring any joy to the Long family. Instead, he was like a thorn in the side of the Long family. It was possible that he would be disposed of one day. As such, even the lowest maids and butlers avoided him, and didn't treat him with respect, only pity."

Li Xiao Xue looked at Ling Chen's expressionless face as she continued, "It's incomprehensible why people would do this to

their own flesh and blood. Back then, my grandpa tried to analyse this matter. He thought that perhaps it was because the Long family always only had 1 successor. Before that boy, the Long family already had Long Tian Yun, and his birth caused the Long family to fall into chaos. In China, because of the rapidly growing population, there has always been a strict birth policy. This policy was created by the Long family, so they themselves must adhere to it. If it was revealed that the Long family had a second son, there would be an uproar all over China, causing irreparable damage to their reputation.

"Another possible reason is that perhaps his mother was of a low status, which was why the Long family did not want to admit the boy's birth. Furthermore, it was possible that the Long family was worried that these 2 successors would fight between themselves to inherit the Long family, and in order to avoid this, they steeled their hearts and neglected him, so as to prevent him from gaining the power to challenge Long Tian Yun."

Ling Chen remained silent.

"All of these reasons were hypotheses thought up by my grandpa. After thinking about it, he couldn't find any other reasons. However, the fact that that boy was Long Zheng Yang's biological son, and possesses the pure bloodline of the Long family is indisputable. Would you be able to tell me the true story that my grandpa was unable to find out?" Li Xiao Xue asked as she looked at Ling Chen.

Ling Chen shook his head, his expression terrifyingly peaceful, "I have even less of an idea."

“Oh?” Li Xiao Xue was quite surprised, then smiled as she said, “If your father knew that the person he feared most was-”

“I have no father!” Ling Chen coldly cut her off.

“Alright,” Li Xiao Xue scratched her head.

“You’re very intelligent,” Ling Chen said as he looked at Li Xiao Xue, “You bound yourself to me through what happened last time we met, making me lower my guard… Otherwise, I would kill you to silence you for what you just said. I won’t deny the things you said, because I don’t want to lie, nor do I want you to think that I’m still affected by those things. On the contrary, I’ve long since stopped caring about what happened during those years. In fact, I rejoice that they treated me that way, so I could leave that place with no regrets. Now, the only thing I feel for the Long family is hatred… but that hatred has nothing to do with how I was treated during those years. As for a father… I’ve never had one!”

“Then what about your mother?” Li Xiao Xue suddenly asked.

“… She died. She died when I was 1 year old. I’ve never met her, and I don’t even know what she looked like, what she was called, or how she died.” Ling Chen self-mockingly laughed, “However, none of this matters to me. You can just assume that I jumped out from a rock, and have no parents.”

“Oh…so it’s like that…” Li Xiao Xue said as she nodded. A look of hesitation appeared in her eyes as she decided not to say what she

was going to say next. Instead, she changed the topic, “I’m sure you know how you went missing, right? Mm... I’m already your woman, so I have the right to know this secret, right? I promise I won’t tell anyone.”

“Back then, I was infected with the Isrock Disease, but not through normal means. It was through Long Tian Yun stabbing me with an infected needle.” Ling Chen said slowly as he narrowed his eyes. Back then, it was this hatred that allowed him to make it through his years in Heaven. Talking about it now, he felt extremely calm, “Afterwards, I was put in quarantine. One night, I was put in a sack and buried alive hundreds of kilometres away.”

Li Xiao Xue’s hands trembled as a hint of rage flashed in her eyes. She took a step forwards and grabbed Ling Chen’s right arm with her right hand as she hurriedly asked, “What happened after that... why didn’t you die? Did someone save you? And how was your Isrock Disease cured?”

“When I was being buried alive, I was only conscious for part of the time. I heard from the 2 people who were burying me the truth, so I didn’t allow myself to die, and vowed to take revenge... as such, I lived on. When I was dug up, I had already been buried for 2 days and 2 nights... afterwards, I was sent to a place more terrifying than hell.”

Speaking to there, Ling Chen did not continue. He wouldn’t tell Li Xiao Xue the rest. Li Xiao Xue was smart enough not to ask, and the hand holding Ling Chen’s arm tightened as she said, “You’re so young, and yet you have such terrifying strength and such a monstrous body... I’ll never be able to imagine what you

experienced during those years."

"With your Li family's intelligence network, I'm not surprised that you knew about my existence back then. This is a well-known secret among some of China's highest officials. However, how could you know that I'm that person?! Everyone knows that once you contract the Isrock Disease, you'll have no hope of surviving! Even if I didn't disappear back then, I still would have died. How could you possibly think that I'm someone who's dead? Did you find some sort of clue on my body?" Ling Chen asked.

"In this world, there's no such thing as a secret that can be kept forever," Li Xiao Xue said, "First and foremost, it was because of my instincts as a woman!"

Ling Chen's eyes twitched, "I-Instict?"

"That's right," Li Xiao Xue matter-of-factly nodded, "Sometimes, a woman's instinct is the most terrifying thing in the world."

"Even if it was originally because of your instincts, surely you have some concrete proof!" Ling Chen said with a strange expression.

"Concrete proof... for example, the Sword Emperor. I knew that she knew your true identity." Speaking to there, Li Xiao Xue glanced at Ling Chen's reaction, then gave a meaningful smile, "The strange reaction between you and the Sword Emperor during your battle, and the fact that the Sword Emperor suddenly carried you out of the Long family's residence that night, and did not

return, gave me an idea. From my reports, that girl seems gentle and weak on the outside, but has an incredibly tough interior. She's also a completely love-sick girl, and the feelings she had from when she was 10 are still engraved on her heart. In fact, she wanted to destroy her entire life for a certain little boy, and sealed off all her emotions. Only that Tian Ya could make her react so strongly, right? What do you think?"

"I'm sure that if you realised this, the Long family would also realise that. However, it's common knowledge that anyone who contracts the Isrock Disease will die without a doubt, so it's impossible for the Long family to think that it's me. Why would you think I'm that person?" Ling Chen asked as he looked at her.

"The most conclusive evidence..." Li Xiao Xue rested her chin on her hand as she earnestly thought, then shook her head, "In order not to provoke an exaggerated reaction from you, I won't tell you just yet. However, I'm sure you'll find out soon."

"In that case, tell me your goal." Ling Chen didn't continue asking, and instead changed the topic, "You want to take advantage of my hatred to use me to kill or cripple Long Tian Yun, then reveal my own identity. At that time, I'll become the Long family's only successor, and may be able to control the Long family after some years. You then want to bind the Li family and the Long family together through me."

"You're completely correct." Li Xiao Xue beamed.

"However, there's something you didn't take into account," Ling Chen slowly shook his head, "I have no interest in power! As for

returning to the Long family… I have even less interest in that. In fact, after venting out my hatred, I want to get away from them as much as possible.

"Of course I know all of this." Surprisingly, Li Xiao Xue laughed, "If Long Tian Yun truly died or was crippled, in order not to become the greatest sinner of the Long family, Long Zheng Yang would have to beg you to succeed the Long family, even if he had to kneel down. However, you only possess hatred towards the Long family, and will definitely refuse. There are countless people who desire the power that the Long family possesses, but to you, you would rather die. As such, as your woman, how could I let you suffer like that? All you need to do is vent out your hatred and kill or cripple that Long Tian Yun. As for succeeding the Long family…" Li Xiao Xue placed her hands on her abdomen as she gently said, "Leave that to our child."

Pffft…

Ling Chen's legs weakened as he fell to the ground.

He had thought about the 'battle' with Li Xiao Xue the entire night. He knew that Li Xiao Xue had some sort of goal, but he couldn't figure out what it was. How could she have let him do such a thing? And now… he found that he not only had slept with Li Xiao Xue, but had fallen into a massive trap!

Chapter 531 – Returning To The Godchild Peak

"What... what child?! Don't joke around like that!" Ling Chen's scalp felt numb, and his voice slightly trembled. The shock from Li Xiao Xue's words was simply too great, giving Ling Chen a bad feeling.

Li Xiao Xue glanced at him, "Don't you know that there's a way to make sure a woman gets pregnant after sleeping with a man?"

"#$%....." Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded. He remembered that there was a saying about this in some movie or book! Could it be that this woman really...

Goddamit! I've got countless things to do!! I'm not prepared at all.....

Seeing Ling Chen's expression darken, Li Xiao Xue couldn't help but giggle, "Silly man, do you really think such a method exists? It's just something made up in a book. Yesterday was a safe day, so you don't need to worry. You're not in a great spot at the moment- I heard from Meng Xin that you're doing something incredibly important, so even if you like children, you wouldn't want to have a child now. How could I do such a thing to you?"

Ling Chen, who felt his heart beating incredibly quickly, wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. If Shui Ruo had said the same words, he would have been delirious with joy. However Li Xiao Xue's words... had nearly scared Ling Chen to death. If Li Xiao Xue

really had a child, not only would he have countless worries, he would be led around by her by the nose for a while... not only would he have to spend time and effort to protect her safety, but he would also have to cooperate with her on many things. Moreover, with Li Xiao Xue's ambition, it really was possible that she would have a child to bind the Li family to the Long family.

Luckily... it was just a joke.

"Don't make these sorts of jokes in future!" Ling Chen savagely said, "It's not that I don't like children. However, based on our relationship, it's impossible for us to have a child! This is only the second time we've met; what happened yesterday was just a one night stand! Moreover, I'm doing something that doesn't allow me to be distracted at all. If I have a child... that would only bring harm to the child, as well as many other people! Got it?!"

"Alright, alright, I was just joking. Why do you need to be so angry." Li Xiao Xue pouted, acting like a childish girl. Seeing the big miss of the Li family acting like this, Ling Chen felt quite strange, and couldn't feel angry anymore. He waved his hand, saying, "Since you already planned out everything from yesterday, then told me all of your wild ambitions... I hope you can tell me what you want me to do. If it's just dealing with Long Tian Yun, I can do that while doing what I need to do. Although I don't want to distract myself... I'll make that Long Tian Yun wish he was dead! I haven't truly acted yet; it's just that I haven't yet decided how I should vent my hatred out on him."

When talking about Long Tian Yun, Ling Chen's voice became incredibly sinister and ruthless, releasing a pressure that made Li

Xiao Xue feel suffocated. He looked at Ling Chen for a while longer before replying, “I’ve already achieved my goal in coming here. Since I’ve become your woman, I want you to understand me. I’ve never told anyone about those ambitions before, not even my father. Similarly, as your woman, I’ll always think about you first and won’t drag you down, especially during a time when you can’t be distracted.

“I’ve already said I wanted to say, and I’m sorry for coming here without asking you first… well, it’s your fault for making me miss you so much. I promise this won’t happen again!” Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled. Before Ling Chen could reply, she walked over as she said, “In that case, I won’t waste my man’s precious~~ time~~. I should be going back now.”

After walking over to Ling Chen, Li Xiao Xue suddenly stood on her toes and leaned in towards Ling Chen. Ling Chen subconsciously leaned back a bit, but still felt Li Xiao Xue’s hot and wet lips touching his face. Li Xiao Xue giggled, then warmly said, “My man, remember to live happily. Don’t let your burdens weigh you down-there are many people who want to help you carry them.”

Unexpectedly, Li Xiao Xue left without making any requests. This sudden meeting was very short, and most of it was Li Xiao Xue talking. Just as she had said, it was so that Ling Chen could understand her more, and she didn’t ask anything of him.

When Li Xiao Xue’s sports car had driven a short distance, it suddenly stopped, and the driver’s window was rolled down, “That’s right, the construction of the new city is about to be

completed, and there's still less than a week to go. Come and have a look when you have time-you'll definitely be shocked. Moreover, if I'm right, the Skyfall Dynasty should be moving against the Yan Huang Alliance soon, so also pay attention to that... also, after cutting off ties with the Skyfall Dynasty, my 'Snow Moon Loulan' is going to resurface again-there are a lot of pretty beauties in there!"

After saying this, the car's window slid up and the car's engines boomed as she sped off.

"... I just can't see through this woman," Ling Chen muttered as he shook his head. This woman was simply uncontrollable-although she had told him her biggest secret, showing her trust in him, she didn't ask anything of him, and had said that she wouldn't drag him down. However, Ling Chen did not feel at ease at all.

"Why do I feel like I fell into a trap... I hope I'm just overthinking."

There was something Ling Chen was certain of-that Li Xiao Xue wanted to become equals with the Long family that wielded the most power in China! Countless people had this desire, but no one dared to do anything about it.

Evidently, Li Xiao Xue intended to put her plan into action... including the matter about the 'child'. Even if it wasn't now, she would do it sooner or later. However, to Ling Chen, this didn't seem like a bad thing.

After thinking for a while, Ling Chen picked up his phone.

“Gui Ya, has Bing Yao recovered yet?”

“She has fully recovered. What would master like her to do?”

“Tell her to come to Su Hang… her duty will be to protect Li Xiao Xue.”

“… Roger, she’ll arrive by dusk at the latest.” Gui Ya’s voice sounded quite strange.

……

A flashy-looking, vermillion red sports car rushed out of the Bamboo Sea Wonderland, and stopped in front of Li Xiao Xue’s car team. Li Xiao Xue got out and looked back at the Bamboo Sea Wonderland as she smiled and tapped a rose-red nail against her lips, “Whoops, yesterday seems to have been a dangerous day… what should I do…”

……

After returning to the game world, there was no longer any lightning in the sky or on the ground. Within his field of vision, there was no one else around.

The chaos in the White Tiger City should have calmed down by now. Ling Chen wanted to enter the White Tiger City to have a look, but after thinking about it, he gave up on that idea. Although the White Tiger had told the White Tiger City's Mayor about what had happened, telling him that Ling Chen didn't bear any responsibility in killing the White Tiger, it was still the White Tiger City's guardian beast. It was something that the people worshipped, and if the citizens found out that he had killed the White Tiger, even with the White Tiger's explanations, they would still view him as an enemy.

After looking through his bag, Ling Chen found that he only had 2 Spatial Orbs left. After all, he had spent most of them climbing the Godchild Peak. Luckily, he still had a Spatial Stone from his adventures in the East Ocean Continent, which he could give to the Dwarves to make many more Spatial Orbs.

"After leaving for so long, I should go and have a look." Ling Chen muttered as he looked towards the east. Li Xiao Xue had told him that the new city was nearly complete, and it would be the first and only player's city in the China Region. It was the city of hope he had given to Meng Xin and Heart's Dream.

Now that most players had reached LV50, it was the game's second profession upgrade period. After their second profession upgrade, players became much more powerful, and the Fairy Forest would no longer be a place that ordinary players couldn't enter. This meant that the chances of the new city being discovered increased every day. Although there was still a week until it was completed, these 7 days would be filled with danger.

After so long, he wondered how Qi Qi and Meng Xin were doing...

Thinking to there, and remembering that he had no way to find the next Orb, his desire to go and have a look became stronger. He picked up a Spatial Orb, but after thinking, he decided not to go to the new city, but elsewhere.

A white light flashed and Ling Chen appeared within a bleak and white world. Qi Yue cried out before sealing herself off-this was the summit of the Godchild Peak. With the Aquarius Orb, Ling Chen didn't fear the cold, but Qi Yue couldn't endure it for very long. As such, she sealed off all of her consciousness within the Lunar Scourge.

Because not a long time had passed, the fissure in the ice was still there. After walking along the fissure, Ling Chen quickly found the place where he had fallen down, and he sank down into the ice as he quickly moved through it. When he found the 'entrance' with the strange barrier, he moved over to it, and jump down, falling on the cold, hard ground.

Ling Chen looked up. In front of him was the mysterious door hidden at the summit of the Godchild Peak.

Chapter 532 – A Dangerous Intruder

The summit of the Godchild Peak, an incredibly harsh and bleak environment. What sort of heaven-shaking secret could be behind this mysterious door?

Could it be something left behind by a True God from the ancient era?

Standing in front of the mysterious door, Ling Chen took out the Celestial Slayer, Heaven Slayer and God Slayer Insignias. The silver, light gold and gold insignias shone with a greater light when they were held together. After confirming where the 3 holes were, Ling Chen went and placed the Celestial Slayer Insignia in the first hole, then the Heaven Slayer Insignia in the second hole, then finally the God Slayer Insignia in the final hole.

Clang!

The instant all 3 Insignias were placed in their respective holes, they began to shine with a brilliant light, causing Ling Chen to squeeze his eyes shut. When he opened his eyes, he found that this dark, underground region was now filled with a white, pristine light. The mysterious door was also covered with a white light, but it didn't seem like it was going to open.

"The 3 Insignias were probably this door's keys. However, after putting them in their places, why isn't the door opening... Do I need to push it open myself?

As Ling Chen talked to himself, he stretched out his hand onto the door. As his fingertips touched the light on the door, something flashed in front of Ling Chen's eyes as a circle of light began to spin on the centre of the door. After a brief moment, the circle of light disappeared, leaving behind a black mark of a waning moon.

Above, the 3 Insignias continued to shine with a bright light, and the mysterious door was still covered with a white light. And yet, this black mark didn't seem to be affected by the brilliant white light at all, and still looked incredibly dark. It was as if the light did not dare to approach the mark, for fear that it would be devoured by the darkness.

Looking at the dark mark on the mysterious door, Ling Chen's eyebrows jumped... because this dark mark and the Lunar Scourge's shape... were exactly the same!!

Was it a coincidence?

If it wasn't a coincidence, could it be that this door's secret was related to the Lunar Scourge?

Ling Chen was quite shocked. After thinking for a while, he stretched out his right hand and touched the Lunar Scourge to the dark mark. As the Lunar Scourge touched the mark, the mark reacted as if it was an awakened beast, and spread at an astonishing rate. Soon, the entire door became jet black, and devoured all of the light. In front of Ling Chen was a wall of darkness.

At the same time, a powerful suction force came from in front of him, pulling his body forwards... into the space behind the mysterious door...

.....

North of the Fairy Forest.

The black-clothed Hundred Miles of Ice stood straight as a pen on the grass. If it wasn't for his clothes rippling in the wind, he would have seemed like a sculpture as his sharp eyes gazed in front of him.

He had maintained this pose for a long time.

Finally, a white light flashed in front of him as a white-clothed man appeared.

"Yohohoho!" As soon as Winter of That Year appeared, he started to yell out, "This elder here has finished his second profession upgrade! Even though the upgrade quest was a bit ridiculous, with this elder acting, it was but a simple matter."

He opened up his stats page as he delightedly showed his stats, which had greatly increased, to Hundred Miles of Ice, "Look, look, look, look! How is it? Reckon I can insta-kill you?"

Hundred Miles of Ice blandly looked at his stats page, then looked away.

Winter of That Year grinned, then put his stats page away as he went over, “How are things? Did anyone approach here ever since I left?”

“None,” Hundred Miles of Ice coldly replied.

“That’s good. I was afraid that without the handsome me, you wouldn’t be able to deal with the intruders. After the second profession upgrade, players have become much stronger.” Winter of That Year sat down next to Hundred Miles of Ice and waved his hand, “Alright, it’s your turn to do your profession upgrade. Don’t you worry about me-even if an army of thousands or tens of thousands people come, I’ll still shoot all of them in to hornet’s nests.”

Hundred Miles of Ice lowered his crossed arms and silently departed.

Winter of That Year, who was familiar with Hundred Miles of Ice, was used to him not saying any greetings or farewells. He turned around and looked towards the new city. They had watched as it had been built from the basic scaffolds to the current near-finished state. He and Hundred Miles of Ice had watched almost the entire process, and they could be said to be one of the witnesses of the new city. They had remained here the entire time, and now, their ‘mission’ was about to be completed. Both of their hearts had been greatly changed over this period of time.

Back then, Winter of That Year had rashly promised to protect

the new city when he saw Yun Meng Xin's beauty. However, watching the new city grow bit by bit every day, and staunchly defending it, they gradually felt that protecting this city was their responsibility.

This was because they weren't just protecting the first player city in Mystic Moon, but a miracle! "The creation of this new city will definitely shock the world. I can't wait for that day." Winter of That Year sighed as he gazed of into the distance, "Boss and I actually stood guard here for so long... then again, it's an incredible thing. These last few days will be the most important days. We definitely can't let anyone get through, otherwise it'll all be for nothing."

After talking to himself, Winter of That Year put his hands behind his head as he lazily lay on the grass. He closed his eyes, but his sensitive hearing scouted out any sounds around the area.

Although they had stood guard here for a long time, the high-levelled monster territories nearby meant that they did not lose out on training. Now, both Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice had reached LV50. Because at least one of them had to stand guard, they had to take turns in doing their second profession upgrade. Just then, Winter of That Year had upgraded his profession from Archer to Marksman. After he returned, it was Hundred Miles of Ice's turn.

Based on how long it had taken him, if everything went smoothly, Hundred Miles of Ice's second profession upgrade would take around 4 to 6 hours. If it didn't go well... for example, if his quest was even more ridiculous than Winter of That Year's, it

could take even longer.

After Winter of That Year rested for 10 minutes, his ears twitched and his eyes opened. He unhurriedly stood up as he grumbled, “Time for work again. Hmm, it’s only 1 person…”

In the distance, a person without a mount walked over. Indeed, it was just him alone. During this period of time, most of the people who had come here were by themselves. Some were in group of 2 or 3, and there was only a single party with more than 3 people. After all, in order to reach here, they needed to pass through the territory of LV70 to LV80 monsters. In the face of the harsh penalties for dying, most people didn’t dare to take this risk.

Those with the confidence and ability to come here were very few in number, and only experts among experts could do such a thing. With how vast the Forgotten Continent was, it was incredibly rare for anyone to come here. As such, Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice rarely saw anyone, and they usually came in few numbers. With their strength and ambushes, they were able to take care of these people easily.

Against a single person, they faced no pressure at all. You dare to come? We’ll kill you! Again? We’ll kill you again! You dare to come after dropping 2 levels? We’ll kill you! No one would dare to come back after dropping 3 levels.

During this period of time, the two of them had dealt with around 20 waves of players, and had defeated all of them. In other words, they had saved the new city from danger 20 or so times. Once the new city was exposed, disaster would befall it.

“Oi!! This is my road and these are all my trees. If you want to get past, go screw yourself! Not a chance!”

Winter of That Year jumped out from behind a rock and stood with his legs spread apart and his hands on his waist as he heroically blocked this intruder. The ‘intruder’ was wearing a crimson magic robe covered with flame inscriptions. He held a red Magic Short Staff, and even his cloak had fiery patterns on it. He stopped walking and looked up, his eyes giving off an incredibly sinister, cold light, revealing his arrogance, “A player? You want to stop me?”

“That’s right, I’m a player! And that’s right, I’m blocking you. See the village behind me? The boss and I got here first, so it’s our territory now. As such, before the boss and I leave, no one’s allowed to come in. Mm, I’ll give you 2 choices: turn around and leave, or the handsome me will send you off. I promise that I’ll send you far, far away, but I won’t be gentle. Lil bro, which option would you like to pick?”

Despite acting like this, Winter of That Year definitely wasn’t an idiot. Instead, his mind and senses were far better than a normal person’s. He could clearly see the savage gaze in this person’s eyes, so he didn’t show him any courtesy.

“Hahaha…” The intruder started to laugh. It was an incredibly cold and mocking laugh, and he looked at Winter of That Year as if he was an idiot who had made an incredibly funny joke, “What if I don’t choose any of those 2 options?”

Winter of That Year crossed his arms as he wildly laughed, “There’s no one who hasn’t chosen one of those 2 options. Looks like you’ve chosen the second option. Aiyaya, the handsome me has always been kind and compassionate, gentle and virtuous, Amitabh, and I dislike fighting the most. However, since you don’t want to leave, the handsome me will have to send you off.”

Chapter 533 – The Flame Emperor Who Kicked An Iron Plate

Cang Yan had been casually continuing his journey when a grasshopper jumped out and demanded to fight... At least, that was how it felt at that moment.

If this was a high-levelled Boss, he would consider fighting it. However, this was a player, and one with a face he was unfamiliar with!

As the number 4 ranked player on the Heaven Rankings, there were very few people in the China Region that Cang Yan took seriously. He knew everyone on the Heaven Rankings and Earth Rankings. He only feared the super experts on the Heaven Rankings, and was wary against the experts on the Earth Rankings. He did not take anyone else seriously at all. Because he had never seen this person before, he was sure that he wasn't on the Heaven Rankings or Earth Rankings. As such, he was merely a piece of trash whom he could easily destroy.

And yet, this person who was about to die was acting so arrogantly.

Cang Yan couldn't help but coldly laugh. Bullying the weak was one of his greatest pleasures. He slowly raised his right hand, as a red flame appeared in his hands. It grew bigger and bigger until it reached his shoulders, and he mockingly replied, "Really, now? I want to see if you can send me off, or if it'll be me who sends an idiot like you off to hell."

“Hoh! A Fire Mage... Wait, no... You’re a Flame Wizard who’s done his second profession upgrade.” Winter of That Year grinned as he inwardly cursed, “You dare to call my handsome self an idiot? I’ll beat you up so badly that even your mum won’t recognise you!!”

Winter of That Year seemed like a simpleton who easily fell for women. With just a few words and her beauty, Yun Meng Xin had coerced Winter of That Year into promising to stand guard there for a few months. He seemed stupid and harmless, but held grudges and wasn’t one to forgive easily. Hearing Cang Yan call him an idiot, the flames of his anger rushed up as he decided the way he would send this intruder off; he wouldn’t be so gentle anymore.

An azure bow appeared in Winter of That Year’s hands. The bow wasn’t very big, and it seemed to be made out of rattan wood. No matter the color or shape, it seemed to be a low-grade bow. After seeing this weapon, Cang Yan snickered in contempt and felt that it would be a humiliation for him to fight with this idiot. He sent the flames in his hands towards Winter of That Year with a ‘whoosh’ as he coldly spoke, “Idiot, remember to put on your glasses when you go out in future! There are some people who trash like you can’t afford to offend!”

As the Flame Emperor, Cang Yan had been superior to those around him all his life. With his extraordinary talent, as well as hard work, his arrogance grew more and more as his body also grew to maturity. This was special in the virtual world; apart from a few people, most players were just like ants to him, and he felt that even talking with them lowered his status. However, all in all,

he had the right to be so arrogant.

However, it was a pity that although he hadn't met a super expert from the Heaven Rankings... he had met someone who looked simple, but was actually an incredibly tough and solid iron plate!

Cang Yan had casually thrown out a 'Fire Wall' that Fire Mages after their first profession upgrade could use. However, this Fire Wall was much bigger than a normal Fire Wall, and was much faster as well. As a natural fire esper in the real world, this sort of talent came along with him into the virtual world. His control over fire was stronger than most Fire Mages by over 100 times! His title as the Flame Emperor and ranking as number 4 on the Heaven Rankings weren't just for show.

Just as Winter of That Year took out his weapon, he felt a wave of heat rush towards him. As someone who loved fighting, he had fought against quite a few Fire Mages before and had a decent understanding of Fire Magic. However, he had never seen such a huge and fast Fire Wall before. Despite feeling incredibly shocked, he reacted quickly and leapt back by 3 body spaces as the Fire Wall roared past him.

Holy moly! This Flame Wizard wasn't any simple guy... Winter of That Year, who had barely dodged the Fire Wall, looked at Cang Yan with a serious expression as he exclaimed inwardly.

Seeing that his attack missed, as well as Winter of That Year's strange movements, Cang Yan's eyes narrowed. He swept out with his left hand as 3 Fire Bombs flew out towards the place Winter of That Year had jumped. Against this fameless person who held a

weapon that was, at most Copper grade, Cang Yan didn't even bother using his second profession's upgrade skills.

These 3 Fire Bombs completely shocked Winter of That Year.

Mage attacks dealt great damage and had a long range. Moreover, most of them had a large AOE, but they also had a big drawback and that was that spells all require a casting time that varies according to each Mage's abilities. The casting time for Mages after their first profession upgrade was around 1 second, and after casting spells they were in a frozen state for 1 second. In other words, there was usually at least 1 second between casting spells.

And yet, less than half a second had passed between Cang Yan casting the Fire Wall and 3 simultaneous Fire Bombs!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The 3 Fire Bombs exploded simultaneously, creating a massive blast that covered Winter of That Year.

"Hmph, can't even take a single hit,"

Cang Yan coldly laughed, as a condescending look arose in his eyes and he noticed an icy glint. That icy glint came after the explosion and was extraordinarily fast... fast to the point that Cang Yan could only watch it get bigger without being able to evade at all.

The arrow precisely and accurately hit Cang Yan squarely in the middle of his forehead. Cang Yan grunted and fell to the ground.

After the fire from the explosion disappeared, Winter of That Year could be seen with a smirk on his face. His left hand gripped his bow with his right hand still in the air, maintaining his pose from releasing the arrow. There was a thin layer of cold sweat on his forehead as he muttered inwardly...

Goddamit... that was way too close!!

Cang Yan flipped his body up, his expression as disgusted as if he had just eaten a bucket of dung, “You... Impossible!!”

He didn’t believe that this person could dodge 2 of his attacks in succession, and even counterattack... What’s more, that attack hit him precisely in the middle of his forehead!

The amount of damage caused by a Bow-type attack depended on the region where it hit. When hitting the target’s head, the chance of Critical Hits was doubled. Moreover, when hitting the target’s forehead, the attack would have been a guaranteed Critical Hit, and it had a high chance of knocking the target over, cancelling out any skills that were being activated. However, the forehead was incredibly difficult to hit and even a slight deviation would halt this sort of effect. To Archers, hitting their target’s forehead was almost impossible. Even against a stationary target at close distance, it was almost impossible to hit this point. It was even more impossible during battles.

And yet, the arrow that hit Cang Yan hit him right in the center of his forehead, knocking him over. This was absolutely a stroke of luck! It definitely couldn't happen again!

"You bastard!" Not being able to kill this person in 1 hit, and instead taking a lucky shot like this, Cang Yan felt incredibly humiliated. His arrogance became fury as his expression darkened. After cursing, he stretched out his hands as 2 balls of purple flames lit them up... Cang Yan was so furious that he no longer held back and wanted to burn this tiny Archer into a crisp.

Winter of That Year had personally experienced how terrifying Cang Yan's flames were. Moreover, what he just used were skills from his first profession upgrade. If he used his powerful flames from his second profession upgrade... that would be no laughing matter.

In that case, if Winter of That Year didn't want to be burned to ashes, what should he do?

Of course! He shouldn't give this Flame Wizard a chance to release his Fire Magic!

Whoosh!

Winter of That Year stood his ground as he shot out an icy light; Cang Yan didn't even notice when Winter of That Year had nocked the arrow, nor did he see Winter of That Year drawing the Bow and releasing it. The icy light simply shot towards him suddenly.

The arrow was so abnormally fast that Cang Yan, who was still preparing his spell, only saw it right as it was about to hit him. Once again, it hit him squarely in the middle of his forehead.

Crash!

Cang Yan once again fell to the ground, and the flames in his hand instantly disappeared. His HP fell to less than half.

Mages usually had very low Defence and HP, but Cang Yan, who possessed a powerful background and immeasurable resources, had far more HP than most Mages. Moreover, Winter of That Year's weapon was simply trash. After all, he and Hundred Miles of Ice only stayed around this area, so obtaining this LV50 Copper grade Bow was quite fortunate. Trash weapons could only deal trash damage, but because he hit Cang Yan in the middle of his forehead twice and dealt 2 Critical Hits, Cang Yan had less than half of his HP left. At the same time, these 2 attacks were not normal attacks, but the strongest single-target attack of second profession upgrades: Crippling Feather Arrows.

If it was just once, Cang Yan could have dismissed it as luck. However, being shot in the middle of his forehead twice in a row would require a terrifying amount of luck. After once again falling to the ground, Cang Yan was so furious that he felt as if his internal organs were going to explode. He roared out as he got up, when yet another arrow flew towards him. As he got up, it appeared as if he was rising to meet the arrow.

The icy light once again shot into Cang Yan's forehead, causing his half-risen body to once again fall back down.

“Go screw yourself! You dared to call my handsome self an idiot! If you can stand up before you die today, I’ll change my surname to yours!!” Winter of That Year raised the Bow that Cang Yan considered trash high into the air as he angrily yelled out.

Chapter 534 – How Low Is Your IQ?!

Winter of That Year followed through with his words. The fourth shot once again hit the middle of Cang Yan's forehead, causing him to lose his balance.

"Arghhh!!!" Cang Yan roared out in anger as he cursed, while trying to get back up, "You goddamned piece of trash…"

Whoosh!

Another arrow flew over, accurately hitting him in the middle of his forehead and causing Cang Yan, who had nearly stood up again, to fall back down.

"The person who's repeatedly falling down has the nerve to call someone else a piece of trash? Why don't you take a piss and take a look at yourself? Hahaha!" Winter of That Year raised his Bow as he laughed with glee.

This time, Cang Yan tried something else. He quickly turned around and stood up with his back towards Winter of That Year, covering the back of his head with his hands as he did so. However, while he was doing this, Winter of That Year rushed up and kicked his bottom, causing him to fall flat on his face.

"Why are you raising your butt so high in the air?! Goddamn! Are you a gay prostitute or something? I'll have you know I'm a straight guy who only likes pretty ladies! Piss the hell off! Take another arrow!"

Winter of That Year's ability to insult was unparalleled, and his cursing almost caused Cang Yan to have a heart attack. However, he no longer had any chance to counterattack, and even his roars of anger were cut off. Winter of That Year continuously shot normal arrows at him, and no matter how Cang Yan tried to sidestep or roll around, every arrow would find the middle of his forehead, causing him to repeatedly fall to the ground. This was so for every single 1 of the 10 or so arrows. These 10 or so arrows made publicly-acknowledged strongest Mage, and the leader of the Yan Huang Alliance's Mage Alliance, look like a clown as he repeatedly fell over.

All Cang Yan could do was drink Advanced Potions over and over to recover his HP. He didn't want to die... How could the Flame Emperor die to a fameless player in such a pitiful manner? However, by now, even if he was a stupid pig he could see that this was no simple person, but a complete monster... No! He was clearly inhuman!!

More than 10 arrows had all hit him in the forehead without fail. With a human's eyesight and control, this was simply impossible! The only explanation was that this person was a mental esper... and an incredibly powerful esper at that!

However, this was no longer important. Cang Yan's mind was completely overcome by the humiliation and rage he felt. Before today, only Ling Tian had made him feel so humiliated. However, Ling Tian's strength was absolute; even the Sword Emperor had been defeated by him, and he had turned the entire East Ocean Continent upside down by himself. As such, it wasn't too embarrassing that he was insta-killed by Ling Tian. However, what

he experienced today was hundreds of times more embarrassing. After being knocked over again, he gnashed his teeth and hollered, “Give out your name, if you dare!!”

After first starting their guard duty here, Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice had concealed their names to avoid any trouble. As such, Cang Yan had no idea who he was. Winter of That Year smirked, as he said in a serious tone, “You want to know this handsome self’s name? Alright. My given name is Deer – yes, I know it’s strange – my middle name is Far, and my surname is Derr. Got it?”

“Deer… Far… Derr…” Cang Yan repeated.

Winter of That Year grinned, “Ayy! Good son! Say it a few more times!”

“I’ll kill you!!!”

“Ahhh! You unfilial son! As your father, I have no idea what went wrong with you, but you dare attempt to commit patricide? And you dare to be a gay prostitute, as well? You think I can accept that? There’s no use in keeping a son like you, so your elder will get rid of you now. Take some more arrows!”

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

A second profession upgrade skill, ‘Triple Rapid Star’ shot out, stopping Cang Yan from saying whatever he was trying to say. A

‘Crippling Feather Arrow’ followed, once again hitting Cang Yan in the forehead as he fell, emptying out his HP bar.

Cang Yan finally died and fell to the ground, unable to curse back.

Despite having incredibly high HP and Winter of That Year using a trash weapon, as well as consuming so many Advanced Potions to buy more time, he had still died. In the end, all he had done by using those potions was prolong the humiliation he had suffered.

Watching Cang Yan’s corpse disappear, Winter of That Year shrugged as he put away his weapon and muttered to himself, “That Flame Wizard looked pretty strong and was probably a fire esper. It’s a pity that his mouth was so foul, calling me a piece of trash and an idiot… Bleh! You want to compete with the my handsome self in insulting? Heh!”

From the flames Cang Yan used, Winter of That Year was able to guess that he was a powerful Flame Wizard, but he didn’t know that he was the famous Flame Emperor. If he had known this, he would have paraded this around all day.

After dealing with the ‘intruder’, Winter of That Year once again comfortably lay down on the grass and closed his eyes.

Azure Dragon City:

Currently, the Forgotten City was not completely opened, as only

players who were higher than LV50 had the right to enter. As such, it was not possible to set it as a revival point. When more than 40% of players in the Region completed their second profession upgrade, the city would be completely opened. Thus, Cang Yan revived in the Azure Dragon City.

This was the second time Cang Yan had died in the Mystic Moon world. The first time was because of Ling Chen, and everyone knew that he had not died a dishonourable death. However, this time, he, the Flame Emperor, was killed by a fameless person like this. He simply couldn't stand this humiliation!

"You bastard! I'll kill you! Kill you!! Kill your whole family!! Wipe out your 18 generations of ancestors!!"

The instant Cang Yan appeared at the revival point, he started cursing out loud, causing all the other players to run away in fear. Everyone knew that the Flame Emperor had a terrible temper, and being dragged into his anger was no laughing matter.

"I want a hundred people who have done their second profession upgrade to come to the Azure Dragon City revival point. Right now!!!!"

After roaring into his communication device, Cang Yan's body flashed and disappeared, reappearing at the town nearest to where he had been before.

When venturing through dangerous regions, players would only buy potions and other important consumables, as opposed to

teleport scrolls. This was because there were countless towns and villages across the Forgotten Continent; it was impossible for one's bag to contain a teleport scroll from every place they passed by. However, luckily Cang Yan had bought a teleport scroll from that town... The town was less than 20 kilometres from where he was humiliated by Winter of That Year. If he rode on a mount, it would take him less than half an hour to arrive.

However, in order to get there, one had to pass through a monster territory filled with LV70 to LV80 monsters, which wasn't something ordinary players could pass through.

After buying more than 100 teleport scrolls, Cang Yan returned to the Azure Dragon City where a team from the Yan Huang Alliance was waiting for him. There were exactly 100 of them, and all of them were above LV50. Cang Yan gave out the teleport scrolls as he yelled, "Come with me!"

As the crowd shattered their teleport scrolls, they all appeared in the town that Cang Yan had been earlier.

"Flame Emperor, where are we?" the leader of the 100 man team looked around as he cautiously asked.

"There's a territory filled with LV70 to LV80 monsters; if you don't want to die, follow me carefully!" .....

Half an hour later.

Winter of That Year, who had taken a short nap, opened his eyes and stretched out before sitting up. He tried to call Hundred Miles of Ice to ask how his profession upgrade quest was going, but received a notification that he was unable to connect. Evidently, Hundred Miles of Ice was still within the special quest's amp. Winter of That Year could only unhappily grumble and prepare to go over to the new city to have a look.

Just as he took 2 steps, his ears twitched. After standing silently for a moment, he suddenly jumped up as he exclaimed, "Holy fudge! 101 people!"

Despite the people being quite far away, Winter of That Year could detect exactly how many of them there were. This was simply astounding. He turned towards the direction the sounds were coming from. Very soon, a large crowd of people appeared, and the person at the front was evidently that Flame Wizard who he had humiliated!

Winter of That Year instantly realised that this guy had brought his gang to deal with him.

There's a monster territory about 10 or so kilometres wide filled with LV70 to LV80 monsters between this place and the nearest town, and yet so many people arrived here alive!! What's going on?! Winter of That Year stared with wide eyes.

It was impossible for these people to pass through that dangerous territory by themselves. However, Cang Yan had discovered a hidden path, which meant that they only needed to pass through a few kilometres of monster territory. By going along the hidden

path, Cang Yan had brought his entire party here.

“Oi!! This is my road and these are all my trees. If you want to get past, go screw yourself!”

Winter of That Year jumped out from behind a rock as he spread his legs apart, put his hands on his hips and raised his head, facing the 101 intruders. There was no fear in his eyes, as if he didn’t put these 101 people, who were around the same level as him, in his eyes at all. As soon as he appeared, a wave of killing intent swept towards him.

Cang Yan had never wanted to destroy a person so much before. He savagely gazed at Winter of That Year as the scenes of him being humiliated flashed in his mind, causing him to tremble with anger.

“You piece of trash! You’re going to discover the consequences of angering me!” Cang Yan roared.

“Ai, you actually came back…” Winter of That Year gave a long sigh, then looked at Cang Yan with a strange expression as his gaze became serious, “There’s a very serious question that I want to ask you. I hope you’ll take this question seriously.”

“Speak!”

“How low is your IQ?! Eh?? How long is your IQ?!” Winter of That Year roared with an expression of pain.

Cang Yan immediately exploded as he shrieked, “Screw your ancestors!! Attack!! Kill him!! Reduce him to scraps and feed him to the dogs!!!”

Chapter 535 – A Dark World

Fire espers naturally had a fiery temperament, as well as an explosive personality. Cang Yan was also cruel and arrogant, as well. Adding on his strength and position within the Yan Huang Alliance, no one dared to offend him. This was because Cang Yan became angry extremely easily, and the wrath of his fury was something that could not be looked down upon.

Winter of That Year's words caused the people with Cang Yan to feel incredibly anxious. They had never seen anyone who dared to talk to the Flame Emperor like that. When the Flame Emperor became enraged, not only did he vent out his anger in the virtual world, but often tracked down the person in the real world to make them disappear forever.

To them, this person standing in front of them was as good as dead.

As Cang Yan roared out, the 5 people at the front teleported forwards and equipped their Staffs, shooting various spells towards Winter of That Year. Cang Yan was the leader of the Yan Huang Alliance's Mage Alliance and had brought 100 Wizards, who had all completed their second profession upgrade. To them, 5 Wizards was definitely enough… No, it was already overkill.

The instant they teleported, Winter of That Year's eyes focused, and by the time they cast their spells he had somehow shifted back by 3 body spaces. It was as if he had been dragged backwards by something.

The 5 Wizards' first round of attacks all missed, and Winter of That Year took out the weapon that Cang Yan had looked down on before. He gazed at Cang Yan, whose face was turning purple from anger, as he said in a serious manner, "Tell me, just how low is your IQ?!"

Cang Yan almost coughed up a mouthful of blood.

The 5 Wizards closed in on Winter of That Year, and shifted to positions where they could surround him and attack him at an effective distance. Water, Fire, Wind, Lightning, and Earth attacks started to blast towards Winter of That Year. Winter of That Year stopped retreating, and instead moved around within a confined area. He jumped, sidestepped, and leaned back; continuously dodging the 5 Wizards' attacks without a single one of them hitting him.

Winter of That Year didn't attack as he continued to stare at Cang Yan, crying out as if he was painfully talking to his own son.

"How low is your IQ?"

"Tell me! How low is your IQ?"

"Eh? Just how low is your IQ?"

He had just finished humiliating this guy, and yet Cang Yan immediately ran back. Winter of That Year was sure there must be something wrong with his brain.

“Arghhhhh!!!” Cang Yan was so furious that he felt as if all of his veins and arteries were going to explode. He stepped forward and raised his hands, as a gigantic flame started to burn around his body... Evidently he was casting the strongest spell available to Flame Wizards right after their second profession upgrade, ‘Devouring Firestorm'. Once cast, the 20 meters in front of him would become a sea of flames, dealing incredible damage.

“Go die! Die!!”

The flames of fury within Cang Yan made him feel like exploding, and he wished he could completely annihilate Winter of That Year with this ‘Devouring Firestorm' so that not even his bones would be left.

The instant that the flames started burning, Winter of That Year, who hadn’t attacked this whole time, raised his hands so fast that they were just a blur. In the next instant, an incomprehensibly fast, icy light shot out.

Cang Yan, who was channelling the spell, had long been prepared for this. He instantly teleported to his right... the instant he teleported, he saw Winter of That Year’s arrow streak past where he had been, as he coldly laughed. This time, that arrow definitely wouldn’t hit him. Because of that, his ‘Devouring Firestorm' would be able to burn Winter of That Year to crisp!

Chi!

The sound of the air being torn rang out as Cang Yan, who had teleported 5 meters away, suddenly stopped in his tracks as a gigantic impact slammed into his forehead.

Bang!

The arrow hit Cang Yan right in the middle of his forehead without fault, causing him to fall to the ground. The ‘Devouring Firestorm', which had finished channelling and was about to be fired, was cancelled. Cang Yan’s eyes widened as he sat on the ground with a terrifying thought surfacing in his mind...

His arrows... can turn...

“How low is your IQ?!” Winter of That Year said seriously to Cang Yan, who had fallen to the ground.

“How low is your IQ?!”

“Tell me, just how low is your IQ?!”

“How low is your IQ??”

This was the first time Cang Yan believed that it was possible to be angered to death. By now, Cang Yan’s eyes were purple, and his face was incredibly dark, as his entire body trembled. He could even feel the blood rising to his throat, which he forced back down. The memories of being knocked down more than 10 times took away his courage to stand back up. He pointed at Winter of

That Year, who was still being attacked by the 5 Wizards as he shrieked, “Are you all dead? Hurry up and kill him!!!!!!!!!”

“Ai,” Winter of That Year sighed and shook his head, “Just tell me how low your IQ is?!”

Cang Yan’s vision darkened as he fell to the ground... He had been angered to the point of unconsciousness.

The other Wizards, who were staring dumbfounded, felt as if they had been woken up from a dream. At the same time, they realised just how terrifying this Archer wearing trash equipment was. Instantly, they stopped caring about the shame of bullying this Archer with superior numbers, and all charged towards him.

The might of 100 Wizards who had completed their second profession upgrade gave Winter of That Year a big fright. Without even thinking about it, he started running. What a joke! Dealing with 5 or 6 was like playing around, but dealing with so many at once... that was playing with his life!

Winter of That Year wasn’t so stupid as to run in the direction of the new city. Instead, he ran towards the west with a crowd of Wizards chasing behind him.

After their second profession upgrade, Archers unlocked ‘Gale Steps', which greatly increased their movement abilities. Mages had average Movement Speed, but had the ability to teleport, which was boosted after their second profession upgrade. As such, after their second profession upgrades, Mages and Archers’

movement abilities were about the same. In this kind of situation, equipment was key.

Winter of That Year had a set of Copper equipment. If it was in the early stages of the game, Copper equipment was considered quite good. However, at this stage of the game, Copper grade equipment was already mid to low quality. On the other hand, the 100 Wizards that Cang Yan brought with him were all experts from the Yan Huang Alliance, and all had excellent equipment. Most of them had full sets of Silver grade equipment, and some even had Gold grade equipment.

Winter of That Year completely lost out in terms of equipment. However, this wasn't his fault... after all, he had stood guard here for a long time, and there were only normal monsters to farm. It was incredibly difficult to find LV50 Silver grade equipment here. As for even higher grades, he didn't even need to consider those.

Winter of That Year's equipment caused the Wizards to all sneer at him. However, seeing his Movement Speed, they were completely dumbfounded.

He was faster than a rabbit!!

Not only were they unable to catch up, in less than 20 seconds he had increased the gap between them by more than 20 meters. Moreover, this distance was continuously increasing. What's more, he occasionally glanced behind him, looking as if he wasn't giving it his all.

What was going on? Even if he was a Marksman who had completed his second profession upgrade, he shouldn’t be able to run so quickly! Could it be that he had some sort of superb equipment or Crystal that greatly increased his Movement Speed?

After increasing the distance between them, Winter of That Year grinned evilly. He lifted his rattan wood Bow as he suddenly turned around while continuing to run, and 6 arrows flew out.

The Archer’s second profession upgrade skill, ‘Machine Gun Arrows', could shoot 9 arrows at most. Winter of That Year’s ‘Machine Gun Arrows' was currently only LV3, which allowed him to shoot out 6 arrows. ‘Machine Gun Arrows' was most effective against crowds, and most Archers used it to cover a large area. Controlling all 6 arrows was almost impossible.

However, this evidently didn’t apply to Winter of That Year.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

6 collision sounds rang out as all 6 arrows found their targets, hitting them in the middle of their foreheads. The 6 Wizards who were hit all fell to the ground.

This scene caused all of the other Wizards to stare, completely flabbergasted, with their mouths wide open. The shock on their faces was as if they had seen a ghost in broad daylight.

Winter of That Year didn’t stop, and in the next instant, he shot

out an ‘Exploding Arrow', which covered 3 of the Mages in its blast range and killed them simultaneously. These Wizards had far less HP than Cang Yan, and after being hit with a Critical Hit by the ‘Exploding Arrow', their HP bars were immediately cleared out.

Archers had a far longer range than Mages, and Winter of That Year maintained a distance where he could attack them, but they could not attack him. After attacking twice, the Mages had caught up with him to the point that they could finally begin to retaliate. Seeing this, Winter of That Year didn’t waste any time and started concentrating on running again, pulling away from them.

……

A Dark World:

Everything was dark and there was no light, or sound, or anything else.

Ling Chen stood completely shocked within the dark world. No matter if it was in front, behind, above, or below… it was completely dark. Ling Chen stretched out his hands, but found that he could not see them. He closed his eyes and reopened them, but found that the situation was still the same.

Where… was this? “……” “……”

What sort of place was this?

After the Lunar Scourge had touched that mysterious door, he had been pulled in by a mysterious suction force.

This seemed to be the world behind the mysterious door.

However, there was no door behind him.

“Qi Yue, do you know where we are?” Ling Chen asked.

“……”

“Qi Yue?”

“……”

There was no reply. Qi Yue seemed to think that they were still at the extremely cold summit of the Godchild Peak, and was still sealed away.

“Xiao Hui, come out,” Ling Chen had no ability to find his way around in this sort of completely dark environment. Perhaps Xiao Hui could scout out a path.

However, there was no reply.

“Xiao Hui?”

“Leng’Er… Snow Cherry…”

There was still no reply from any of them.

Ling Chen remained silent.

He felt that he had been sent to a dark world, which was completely disconnected from the rest of the world. Apart from him and the darkness, there was nothing else.

Chapter 536 – A Faint Voice

Ling Chen started to walk forward. The ground under his feet was cold, hard and smooth, and definitely wasn't plain soil. It felt almost as if he was walking on a slippery piece of glass.

"Where is this??"

Ling Chen yelled towards the area in front of him. However, even after waiting for a while he heard no echo.

Not only was it dark, it was an incredibly vast area.

Qi Yue hadn't responded, and Xiao Hui was unable to be summoned. Apart from himself and the darkness, there were no other creatures, living or dead.

Since he could come in, he could get out. However, he couldn't find where the exit was.

After a few minutes of walking, Ling Chen stopped. He couldn't tell where he was going in this jet-black world, and even if he walked for a year he might not achieve anything. He tried to call Qi Yue and Xiao Hui a few more times, but there was still no response.

If there was a special restriction on the space, such as being unable to summon pets, Ling Chen wouldn't have been very surprised. However, Qi Yue resided in the Lunar Scourge, and they could communicate telepathically. There was nothing that could

restrict such a thing. Thus, the only explanation was that Qi Yue still believed they were on the incredibly cold Godchild Peak, and was still sealed off, so she was unable to hear Ling Chen's voice.

Thinking to there, Ling Chen calmed down and decided to log off. With the current situation, even if he stayed here he wouldn't be able to accomplish anything. The best choice was to log off and wait for Qi Yue to unseal herself, so that he could ask her what sort of place this was and how to get out. With Qi Yue's knowledge, perhaps she would have a solution. Even if she didn't know, at least he could bounce ideas off of her.

However, after giving the command to log off, everything remained exactly the same, with no change at all.

There wasn't even a system announcement telling him that he couldn't log off, or providing a reason!

This left Ling Chen greatly dismayed. He once again tried to log off... Then tried another 5 or 6 times in succession. In response, there was only silence and darkness.

Ling Chen gave up. He took in a deep breath and opened his eyes wide, trying to take a look at this strange world.

A completely dark world... with no sound at all... he couldn't summon pets... he couldn't talk to Qi Yue... Although it was strange, it was something he could accept.

But not being able to log off...

That was incredibly terrifying!

If he couldn't summon Xiao Hui or talk to Qi Yue... and he couldn't log off or find the exit...

The result was that he would be trapped in here until he died!

It seemed that not only could curiosity kill the cat, it could also kill humans!

Ling Chen once again calmed himself down and avoided recklessly advancing anymore. After thinking for a while, he remembered something. He lifted up his right hand as he said in a soft voice, "New Moon... Come out!"

Hearing this command from Ling Chen, a silver light shot out from the Lunar Scourge. This light should have been incredibly faint and weak, but in this pitch-black space, it seemed intensely bright. The silver light rushed into the air, becoming an eye-catching new moon.

With the new moon hanging in the air, the space Ling Chen was in became dyed by the flawless moonlight. The new moon's light wasn't very strong, but it was enough to enable Ling Chen to see the world he was in. What he saw was a boundless region of nothing, and further on, even more darkness.

That's right, there was nothing here... not even a speck of dust. Ling Chen looked down and took in a breath of cold air; there was nothing under his feet either. He could feel himself standing on something solid, but under the moonlight he saw that in fact, there was simply nothing there. It seemed as if he was standing in mid-air within this dark space.

The light from the Lunar Scourge did not help Ling Chen answer any of his questions, and instead confused him even more.

What was this place?

Suddenly, the light from above flickered, causing Ling Chen to raise his head in shock. The new moon was released from the Lunar Scourge's power, so it should continuously give off a steady light for as long as Ling Chen wished it. It shouldn't be able to flicker, nor was there anything in this space that could block out the light. That flickering was extremely strange.

However, the unusual flickering did not stop. As Ling Chen looked up, the new moon in the air continued to fluctuate. At first, it would only flicker once every few breaths of time, but it became more and more frequent, until it flickered off and on about once every second. Seeing the new moon like this, seemed like a giant firefly.

The new moon had never done anything like this before. Ling Chen looked up towards the new moon's changes, and his frown became deeper and deeper. He was certain that this strange reaction was related to this space. That was because after arriving in this place, almost nothing had been normal!

After the new moon flickered for another half a minute, it finally stopped... and then it went out completely.

The space was once again filled with darkness.

Under normal circumstances, unless Ling Chen put it away, the new moon should have lasted for at least 10 minutes!

Just as Ling Chen was feeling exceedingly confused, the Lunar Scourge suddenly lit up with a faint silver moonlight. At the same time, it began flying forward, dragging Ling Chen with it. Ling Chen subconsciously resisted, but found that he couldn't resist whatever was attracting the Lunar Scourge, and was forcefully brought along with it.

"Are... you... here... to... save... me..."

Ling Chen raised his head in shock, and yelled while he was dragged along by the Lunar Scourge, "Who? Who is it?"

"Who's speaking?!" "....." However, after waiting for a while, he received no reply.

"Who is it? Is anyone here? Answer me immediately!" Ling Chen loudly called out.

There was still no reply.

He had definitely heard a voice; it was an incredibly small and weak voice, and it wasn't transmitted to his mind, but to his heart. After yelling for a while, the voice did not sound out again. However, he was certain that he had not imagined that voice!

.....

As the profession with the longest range, Archers were undeniably the profession that was most suitable for kiting, and leading enemies around.

If one had enough Movement Speed, as well as good judgment and agility, an excellent Archer could kite a powerful Boss to death without taking any damage at all. Of course, it would take them a long time.

Winter of That Year was a professional at kiting. However, this kite was quite large... He was leading around a crowd of 100 people!

Winter of That Year used his inhuman Movement Speed to increase the gap between them, then turned and ran, after attacking. In just a few exchanges, he had killed more than 10 of the Mages from the Yan Huang Alliance, while they had yet to even injure a hair on his head. They could only scream in anger as they chased after him, wishing that they could catch up and destroy him.

"If you're a man, don't run!"

“If you’re a man, don’t run!”

“You turtle! If you’re a man, stop running and fight properly with us!”

“Good joke! There’s 100 of you and 1 of me, and yet you want me to fight properly with you? Do you think my head was crushed by a pig’s ass or something?”

“Go screw yourself!”

“Fudge, you dare to act so disrespectfully to your elder, you beast?!”

“#$%...”

A crowd of Mages ran after Winter of That Year, eating his dust. There were less and less people on their side, while they hadn’t hit him even once. After 20 people died, they finally became a bit smarter and stopped chasing him. With Winter of That Year’s speed, they wouldn’t be able to catch up to him even if they chased him for 100 years. Instead, they would only be slowly picked off by him. Perhaps the best thing to do was to call other members from the guild to block him off from the front, then bombard him. However, this was their time coming here, so how could there be anyone else from the guild here?

Seeing them stop, Winter of That Year also stopped and raised

his Bow to shoot. He stopped in the perfect spot, where he was able to hit the Mages but they were unable to hit him, and could only endure the beating.

"Fudge... Retreat!!"

As the saying went, a wise man knows better than to fight when the odds are against him. If they continued to give chase, they would only suffer more casualties without being able to deal with this Archer. The leader raised and waved his hand, ordering the Mages to retreat. Winter of That Year stared as he hollered, "Don't run! Your elder hasn't played enough yet!"

The situation was instantly reversed and became the Mages running away, with Winter of That Year chasing after them. However, there was a major difference. They couldn't attack him while he was running away, but he could attack them; and now he was leisurely following behind them, attacking as he wished. When he was the one being chased, he was only able to attack once or twice after a period of running away. Now, he attacked much more frequently while giving chase. In just a short while, he had almost decimated the entire group of Mages. The Yan Huang Alliance' players, who were all high-levelled elites, were being chased around by an Archer with trash equipment. Not only did retreating not reduce their casualties, but instead made them die off even faster. The leader was so depressed that he felt as if his internal organs were going to explode, so he stopped in his tracks, screaming, "The hell are we running for?! Hurry up and destroy this brat!!!!"

The escaping Mages all turned around and furiously roared, as

they rushed towards Winter of That Year. Their vicious manner made it seem as if they wanted to skin him alive. Winter of That Year, who was having fun shooting, immediately turned and ran.

Winter of That Year's battle plan was very simple:

You want to chase me? I'll run. You can't catch up to me, so you won't be able to hit me, while I'll be able to hit you. If you want to chase after me, then you'll take a beating.

You don't want to chase anymore? I'll just stand here and hit you, while you still can't hit me.

You want to run? I'll chase after you and attack you. You think you can evade my handsome self's attacks with your speed?

If they chased after him, they would be hit. If they didn't chase, they would be hit. If they ran, they would be hit. Just like this, the Yan Huang Alliance's powerful group of Mages was tormented to the point that they wished they could die.

Chapter 537 – The Sword Emperor's Brief Appearance

It was undeniable that the Flame Emperor was powerful – he wasn't number 4 on the Heaven Rankings for nothing. However, his mental endurance was fairly ordinary. After all, the number of people who dared to curse at him could be counted on 2 hands. Moreover, he had never been mocked so relentlessly and viciously before. As a result, the Flame Emperor, who had rarely been insulted or mocked in his life, was angered to the point of fainting.

When he woke up, there was no one around him. Winter of That Year was long gone, as was everyone else. Only he remained in their original location.

Cang Yan crawled up, and the heaviness in his chest made him feel like coughing up blood. At this moment, his communication device rang and as he answered it. He heard a crying voice, "Lord Flame Emperor... wuu... we were completely annihilated... That Archer... was too strong... He's an absolute monster... We were all killed... If you're still there, quickly come back..."

On the other side of the communication device, the leader of the Mages was bawling his eyes out. They were killed too pitifully and shamefully. If their opponent was a monstrous expert like Ling Tian and they were insta-killed, they would at most curse at him for a few minutes. However, that Archer... he toyed with them to death. It was simply too despicable, too disgusting, too humiliating, too ruthless... He never wanted to see that Archer ever again in his life.

100 high-levelled Mages... had all been killed?!

Cang Yan's face darkened, and the hand that gripped the communication device went white.

After their second profession upgrade, Archers could become Marksmen or Hunters. Marksmen had powerful arrow attacks and movement abilities, and had the longest range. However, they lacked in melee fighting and fighting against crowds. Hunters' damage from their Bows and arrows was inferior to Marksmen, but could they summon a pet falcon to support them, and attack. Their main abilities came in setting up powerful traps. Once activated, they could affect large groups of enemies, which was why they were effective against crowds.

And yet a Marksman, who lacked crowd-fighting abilities, had completely annihilated a team of 100 Mages!

Cang Yan was flabbergasted and felt the air within his lungs become cold.

Who was this terrifying Marksman that Cang Yan was completely powerless against, and had destroyed 100 players singlehandedly?! Why didn't he know about such a powerful Archer? He didn't even know his name!

Did he have to return in shame again? Cang Yan was reluctant to do so. He looked up, and saw that in the distance, there was a decently-sized town. An idea sprang to his mind as he quickly walked over. Before, the Archer had blocked his way, yelling that

this was his territory... In that case, that town was probably one of his bases! After reaching it, he could find out which guild the Archer belonged to.

Not too long later, Cang Yan came to the boundary of the town. The town was very similar to the countless other towns scattered across the Forgotten Continent. If he passed through the town, he would immediately be able to see the new city under construction. As such, to Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice, they simply couldn't allow anyone to pass through the town.

Cang Yan didn't know about any of this. He simply wanted to know whether that terrifying Archer had any comrades, and which guild he belonged to. He couldn't help admitting that he was no match for the Archer, but there was no faction that the Yan Huang Alliance couldn't destroy!

However, when he was less than 10 meters away from the entrance to the town, a grey shadow appeared before him.

The grey shadow was simply too fast and was not visible to the naked eye. The instant Cang Yan saw that shadow, a cold aura arose less than 2 body spaces away from his throat.

Cang Yan stumbled back in shock and teleported 5 meters back. He thought the crisis was averted when his body suddenly erupted in a cold sweat. Just as he tried to see who was attacking him, he noticed that the cold aura was still right in front of him...

Chi.....

-29,800!

The cold light pierced through Cang Yan's throat, and just like that, he was insta-killed. The teleportation that could normally save him had only served to delay his death by a few split seconds.

Although it was an ambush, Cang Yan was still a natural esper and his mind was far superior to those of normal human's, as were his senses. There were incredibly few people who could get close to him without him noticing, and even less people who could do so and insta-kill him.

"Sword... Emperor..."

Cang Yan stared at the grey shadow in front of him as he hoarsely spat out the 2 words, then fell heavily backward onto the ground.

The silver sword, which had flown out, drew a beautiful arc and flew back toward the person in grey, returning to its sheath. The person in grey turned and silently left without leaving any trace of having been there.

Elsewhere, Winter of That Year had taken less than half an hour to kill all the Yan Huang Alliance's Mages, and had the time of his life. After the final 'toy' fell, he joyfully picked up the items they had dropped. As the most elite Mages of the Yan Huang Alliance, their equipment was all quite good, so the things they dropped were quite valuable. Winter of That Year happily picked up everything, even the potions, and cleaned up the entire area.

Finally, he picked up a LV50 Silver grade Earring, which made him delirious with joy. Although the stats weren't quite useful to his profession, it was still a pair of Silver grade Earrings!

After collecting all his spoils of war and looking at the empty scene in front of him, Winter of That Year felt something wasn't right. He seemed to be missing something. After a few moments, he whacked his head as he jumped out, "Goddammit! I forgot about that low IQ Flame Wizard! Fuuuuuudge!!!"

Winter of That Year instantly ran back towards their original location. However, once he arrived, he couldn't find Cang Yan. A sense of great worry erupted like a flame within him as he hurried towards the town. He desperately prayed that the guy hadn't passed through the town.

However, even after reaching the town and passing through it, he didn't see Cang Yan. Winter of That Year hurriedly called Yun Meng Xin, "Big sister goddess! Did anyone go over to the new city?"

"No..."

"No? Whew..." Winter of That Year instantly felt incredibly relieved, as if a massive stone had been taken off his heart. He wiped the cold sweat off his forehead as he said, "That's good, that's good."

"What happened?" Yun Meng Xin asked worriedly.

“Err… nothing much. Quite a few people came over just now, and were all killed by me. I was worried that some people snuck past and wanted to confirm that everything was fine.”

“…Thank you for your hard work,” although she felt quite suspicious, she did not ask more. She was completely grateful towards Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice. Without them, the new city would have been exposed long ago.

When she had first met Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice, in order to protect the secret of the new city, she had used her most powerful weapon: her beauty. Winter of That Year was mesmerised to the point that he couldn’t speak properly, and not only did he promise that he wouldn’t leak this information, but he even offered to help protect it. Back then she had simply smiled, believing that he said this recklessly and would give up after a few days.

However, unexpectedly, Winter of That Year had remained until now, and Hundred Miles of Ice had stayed with him. During this time, their strength completely shocked her.

Although they were only 2 people, they were like a solid fort. Over the past few months, no one was able to get past them. The “Emotionless Swordsman” Hundred Miles of Ice was once ranked 6th on the Heaven Rankings and was a lone wolf who didn’t join any guilds. However, Winter of That Year was someone who she had never heard of before. Yun Meng Xin had been quite surprised… With Winter of That Year’s frightening power, it wouldn’t be strange for him to appear on the Heaven Rankings, and yet, his name was so unfamiliar. Afterward, she realised that

Mystic Moon was actually the first virtual game he had played. Yun Meng Xin was certain that if the Heaven Rankings were updated, Winter of That Year would definitely take one of the spots.

Yun Meng Xin was incredibly surprised and moved that 2 experts who were capable of being on the Heaven Rankings would protect the new city until today, despite being complete strangers before.

.....

“What did you say? Feng Xie Yu?” hearing Cang Yan’s words, Long Tian Yun deeply frowned.

“That’s right! She’s the Sword Emperor, while I’m the Flame Emperor. How could I be mistaken?” Cang Yan said with a dark expression. Being killed twice in one day was a massive blow and humiliation to Cang Yan. He accepted being insta-killed by the Sword Emperor; although they were both ‘Emperors’, he understood how powerful the Sword Emperor was, and how easy it was for her to kill him. However, he simply couldn’t understand why she had killed him!

“Were there any conflicts between you and Feng Xie Yu?” Long Tian Yun suddenly asked.

Cang Yan thought for a moment before shaking his head, “To be frank, I was quite afraid of her. As such, I rarely took the initiative to talk to her, much less offend her.”

Long Tian Yun coldly laughed, “Feng Xie Yu has been missing for quite a long time. Both the Long family and Xuanyuan family have continuously searched for her in the real world and virtual world, but we haven’t found anything. This time, she revealed herself and killed you immediately. She has been consciously avoiding detection, so why would she kill you despite having no enmity with you, and reveal herself in the process?”

Cang Yan also felt incredibly confused.

“You’re not the first person to be killed at that place,” Long Tian Yun said in a low voice, “1 month ago, the Black White Double Demons were also there. However, apart from the Archer, there was another person. In the end, the Black White Double Demons were beaten pitifully, and they could only run.”

The Black White Double Demons were a famous duo who were both on the Earth Rankings!

“Half a year ago our number 1 Assassin, Lightning Snake, also went there, but was stopped by those 2 people. He wasn’t able to escape, and died there. He immediately returned to challenge them again, but died even more pitifully, and didn’t dare to go again.”

Long Tian Yun narrowed his eyes, “I never thought that even you would die there. Now, have you understood something?”

Cang Yan stared at him blankly.

“Even by conservative estimates, they’ve been there for at least a month. 2 super experts like them should be exploring everywhere… Why would they stay at a place that was so remote, where so few players go? And why would they not allow anyone to pass through? Moreover, it seems like they don’t even leave there at all. What’s more, Feng Xie Yu, who has been missing for a long time, exposed herself to kill you… There’s only one possible explanation…”

“They’re protecting something near that town! Within that town, or behind that town, is a gigantic secret that they can’t allow anyone to find out about!”

Chapter 538 – Recruitment

“What sort of secret is it?” Cang Yan asked in surprise.

“I have no way to know, and I don’t have much interest. However, you dying there and Feng Xie Yu appearing there after hiding away for so long, makes it necessary for me to personally make a trip there.”

Long Tian Yun stood up as he coldly smiled, “It doesn’t matter that you were insta-killed by Feng Xie Yu. However, I’m surprised that you were killed so easily by someone we’ve never heard about before. Is he really that strong?”

“He’s definitely a mental esper!” Cang Yan said as he gnashed his teeth, “I saw his arrows change direction! Even after their second profession upgrade, Archers can’t have such a skill; the only possible explanation is that he used his mental energy to control the arrow incredibly precisely. Not only is he a mental esper, he’s an incredibly powerful one at that. He’s probably even stronger than some of the mental espers in our forces!”

Long Tian Yun’s expression became cold. Espers were incredibly rare, and only about 1 in millions of people would be espers. The espers in the Long family’s seven main forces were found all over China. As soon as they had heard an esper had appeared, they would immediately go try to recruit them. If they couldn’t recruit them, they would use special methods to make their esper ability disappear. In extreme cases, they would make the person disappear from the world, out of fear that they would disrupt the balance. It could be said that apart from the ancient families in the south,

more than 90% of China's espers were within the Long family's forces.

In actuality, many people knew Winter of That Year's name because he had been in the top 10 of the Player Level Rankings for a long time. However, no one had any information on him, and no one had ever seen him before. Moreover, Winter of That Year had concealed his IGN, so although Cang Yan and Long Tian Yun knew what he looked like, they couldn't match him up to his name. This allowed Long Tian Yun to confirm that he wasn't an esper from one of the esper families in the south. Otherwise, he definitely would have known about him.

Mental esper abilities could be brought into the virtual world; this was no longer a secret. This was because mental esper abilities existed in one's mind, which was what entered into the virtual world. As such, it was not surprising that one could use their mental esper abilities in the virtual world. However, this did not affect the balance of the virtual game world too much. There were only 30 mental espers in China, which had the biggest population, and most of them were under the control of the Long family.

"Lead the way, I want to take a look," Long Tian Yun said in a low voice.

"Young master, I recommend that you don't personally go yourself," Cang Yan said earnestly, "That Archer is definitely more powerful that you expect. Apart from Ling Tian and the Sword Emperor, he's the only person who has caused me to suffer such a pitiful defeat. Moreover, I could feel that he wasn't going all out. Feng Xie Yu seems to be on their side, so if she comes to stop us, I

might not be able to protect young master. That's right... When Feng Xie Yu killed me, she was using the sword manipulation technique! It's possible that she has surpassed even Xuanyuan Dao!"

"Sword manipulation?" Long Tian Yun deeply frowned, then coldly spoke, "She's a genius of the Xuanyuan family who would be hard to find in even a thousand years. Adding on the fact that she has completely cut off her emotions and dedicated herself to her sword, she has progressed incredibly quickly. It can be said that no one has ever achieved this, and no one ever will again. If I remember correctly, within the past 300 years only 2 people in the Xuanyuan family have developed their sword intent to the level of sword manipulation. Both of these people reached this stage in their seventies. Xuanyuan Dao's 'sword manipulation' is merely using sword intent to forcefully control a sword's trajectory for a very brief period of time, and is not true 'sword manipulation'."

"If Feng Xie Yu truly reached the 'sword manipulation' level, she would be the first person in the Xuanyuan family to reach that level before the age of 30... However, it's a pity," Long Tian Yun's eyes flashed with a cold light, "She betrayed the Xuanyuan family and my Long family... What's even more of a pity is that right now, it's the age of technology. In front of modern weapons, cold weapons are simply pieces of scrap metal."

"Choose 200 elite players from each profession who have completed their second profession upgrade, and set out immediately!"

200 people from each profession was 1,400 people in total. With

Long Tian Yun personally going, all of these players had to be the elite among the elite. It was an incredibly impressive battle formation!

.....

2 hours later, Hundred Miles of Ice still had not returned. However, Winter of That Year was not too worried. When he had done his quest, it had taken 3 hours. To an expert like him, the quest wasn't very difficult, only incredibly time-consuming.

After facing those 2 waves of players, Winter of That Year didn't dare to leave. He had a feeling that the Flame Wizard might come back!

As expected, he did.

When Winter of That Year heard the rumbling from the distance, he jumped up as he looked toward the north. The look of relaxation disappeared from his face as his expression became incredibly serious...

Because the party that came this time... had more than 1,000 people!!

Winter of That Year felt his scalp go numb, and he looked up as he cursed, "Boss, you bastard! Why did you have to choose such a bad time to do your profession upgrade quest... arghh!"

After cursing loudly, he calmed down as he laughed and walked over. Just like before, he stood behind the 2 meter tall rock. When the thousand-man party was 50 meters away, he jumped out with his hands on his waist and yelled, “Halt! Everyone stop! The land behind this rock is my handsome self’s personal property. No one’s allowed to come close; please immediately leave!”

The 1,400 players were in perfect ranks, and even walked in step, creating a mighty aura of foreboding. And yet, a single person had jumped out, trying to block their army. Instantly, countless gazes looked at Winter of That Year as if he was an idiot.

“It’s him!” Cang Yan, who was standing beside Long Tian Yun, pointed out and spoke in a low voice.

When he spoke, Winter of That Year noticed him as he grinned, “Aiyoyo! Isn’t this the lil turd who I killed before? What, you miss your dear father?”

Winter of That Year inwardly cursed. That goddamn bastard had come back again! Last time, he brought 100 people, and this time he brought more than 1000 people! Fudge! Was this really necessary?!

“You!” Cang Yan’s expression darkened as a ball of flames arose from his body. However, seeing the crappy Bow that Winter of That Year held in front of him, he didn’t dare to attack. After all, Winter of That Year had left him with too much trauma. If he attacked, but was once again reduced to the state where he couldn’t even stand up, he would never be able to wash away the humiliation.

If it had been before and the Flame Emperor was insulted like this, he would instantly fly into a fit of rage. However, although the Flame Emperor had been infuriated to the point that his body lit up with fire, he stood there, unmoving. Long Tian Yun looked at Cang Yan before taking a step forward and asking, “Your name is ‘Winter of That Year’, right?”

Although it was phrased as a question, this sentence was spoken like a statement. Winter of That Year stared with wide eyes as he asked, “Eh? How did you know my handsome self's name? Could it be that my handsome self is so famous that everyone knows my name? Ahahaha! I knew it! With my handsome looks, which even the heavens are jealous of, how could I keep a low-profile? I knew that I would soon be envied by all men and admired by all women, ai…”

Long Tian Yun’s eyes twitched, and the Yan Huang Alliance’s players stared in disbelief as their stomachs flipped and turned, feeling as if yesterday’s lunch would come out.

“It was a guess. I didn’t think it would actually be you,” Long Tian Yun said as he narrowed his eyes, “Winter of That Year has remained in the top 10 of the Player Level Rankings for a long time, and is the highest-levelled Archer in all of China. However, we could never find any information regarding this unfamiliar name. And you, someone we’ve never seen before, were able to defeat 100 elites singlehandedly. As such, I couldn’t help but link you with that name.”

Winter of That Year chuckled, “Really, really? It seems that

you've been paying attention to my handsome self for quite some time. Don't tell me you're a loyal fan? Ahahaha! I get it, I get it. You've admired me for a long time and after finding out that I'm here, you decided to come see me with your own eyes, right? Don't worry. I'm a very easy-going person, and I won't treat my fans condescendingly. Look all you want! Do you want an autograph? My handsome self has already laboriously done autographs for 30 years, and every autograph is worth tens of thousands of dollars. However, seeing how sincere you are, I'll fulfill your desire."

The expressions on the Yan Huang Alliance's players faces darkened... The noble Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance... The number 1 person in the virtual world in China is your fan? Go screw yourself!

Long Tian Yun laughed, "Indeed, I've heard of your esteemed name before. However, there's no need for an autograph. Today, I came here to meet a legendary figure like you, as well as propose a deal."

"Deal? What sort of deal?" Winter of That Year asked with wide eyes.

"What do you think about joining my Yan Huang Alliance?" Long Tian Yun said as he smiled, "I'm sure you've heard of the Yan Huang Alliance before. As long as you join, I can promise that within 3 months, you'll become the President of all of the Yan Huang Alliance's Archers. When that time comes, let alone in China, players all over the world will know your name!"

Hearing this, everyone who had come with Long Tian Yun were

dumbfounded. The way they looked at Winter of That Year completely changed... There were millions of Archers in the Yan Huang Alliance, and Presidents were subordinate only to the Alliance Master. He would be on the same rank as the Flame Emperor! This was a promise that the Alliance Master Long Tian Yun had personally made!

What sort of abilities did this person have?! How could the Alliance Master suddenly make such a big promise?

They didn't know what had happened earlier, but Long Tian Yun did. This Archer, with trash equipment, had singlehandedly destroyed the Flame Emperor and took down 100 elite Mages while remaining unscathed. This sort of monstrous strength qualified him to be in the top 5 in China... No, top 3! If this person joined the Yan Huang Alliance, he could even replace the Sword Emperor's position.

Cang Yan's face became incredibly stiff, and he couldn't utter a word. After all, this Archer's strength was something that was undeniable, so it was no strange matter that Long Tian Yun would try to recruit him like this.

Chapter 539 – This Trash Is The Flame Emperor?

Although Long Tian Yun's offer was spoken in a few short sentences, it was something that almost no one could resist.

As the largest guild in the world, becoming the President of the Archers would mean that one would have millions of players at their command. Moreover, their name would be known by almost everyone. How many people had this sort of glory? Who could refuse such a thing?

Long Tian Yun was sincerely recruiting Winter of That Year. After being turned upside down by Ling Tian, the East Ocean Continent still had not fully recovered and most Japanese players didn't' dare to even mention Ling Tian's name. This caused Long Tian Yun to realise how terrifying Ling Tian was... He could bring disaster to entire cities... how much more so to a guild?! Against Ling Tian, numbers were essentially meaningless; what Long Tian Yun needed were super experts!

The Archer in front of him was one such person.

After speaking, Long Tian Yun put his hands behind his back as he stared at Winter of That Year with a bright gaze, waiting for his reply.

"What? Yan Huang... Yan Huang Alliance? You're from the Yan Huang Alliance?" Winter of That Year's face was full of shock, as if he was scared by the Yan Huang Alliance's name. Suddenly, he

started yelling out as if he had seen a ghost in broad daylight, “Wait, wait, wait, wait, wait! No wonder why you looked so familiar… Yan Huang Alliance… Yan Huang Alliance… Aren’t you the Alliance Master, Long Tian Yun?!”

The Yan Huang Alliance’s players all sneered… He only just recognised the Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance? Just how ignorant and stupid could this person be?

Although Long Tian Yun was quite surprised that Winter of That Year hadn’t recognised him immediately, seeing him react like this made Long Tian Yun feel quite pleased. He smiled as he replied, “That’s right, I am Long Tian Yun. As such, what I just said represents the entire Yan Huang Alliance. There’s not a single word of falsity.”

In actuality, when this army of people had arrived Winter of That Year had already recognised Long Tian Yun. Although he wasn’t very in touch with the rest of the world, he still wasn’t so ignorant as to not even recognise Long Tian Yun. When Winter of That Year saw him, he realised that the Flame Wizard who he had killed belonged to the Yan Huang Alliance! After failing twice, the Flame Wizard actually asked Long Tian Yun to come… There was only a single Flame Wizard who could make Long Tian Yun come out here.

And that was the Flame Emperor!

“Oh, my goodness! It’s actually Alliance Master Long, err, this…” Winter of That Year pretended to look at a loss, with a slight trace of fear in his expression. He stretched out his finger as he pointed

at Cang Yan, “Then that person… he… he’s…”

Long Tian Yun looked at Cang Yan as he replied, “I’m sure you’ve heard of the Flame Emperor before, right?”

“What?! Flame Emperor?” Winter of That Year started to yell as if he had heard the most incomprehensible thing in history. He started to furiously shake his head, “He’s the legendary Flame Emperor? What a joke! How could you, as the Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance, try to trick a pure-hearted person like me? How could that guy be the Flame Emperor? I heard that the Flame Emperor is ranked 4th on China’s Heaven Rankings, and is the number 1 Mage in China… No, the whole world! I heard that he could fight a hundred people at once… No, he could probably incinerate an army of a million people!”

“A peerless, invincible existence like him is someone who a tiny figure like me doesn’t even have the right to look up to. He’d probably be able to annihilate me with a pinky finger. Sure, this guy’s a Flame Wizard, but before when he fought my handsome self he was reduced to a pitiful state where he couldn’t even get up from the ground, and even called me his ‘dear father’, trying to beg me to show mercy.”

“Moreover, he has an incredibly vile mouth, shaming his entire family. If I was his father, I’d slap him to death. You’re saying trash like this is the Flame Emperor? Could the Flame Emperor be beaten like a dog by me, who just hit LV50 and has only trash equipment? Sure, I’d believe you if you said his mother’s a pig, but him being the Flame Emperor! No way! That’s an insult to the Flame Emperor’s great name! Are you trying to trick me? I won’t

believe you, no matter what!”

Winter of That Year spoke incredibly emotionally, and with an indignant tone. His spittle flew everywhere. He praised the ‘legendary Flame Emperor’ like there was no tomorrow, and insulted the real Flame Emperor as if he was less than a dog. The Yan Huang Alliance’s players all stared with wide eyes and opened mouths, and simply couldn’t process what was happening... Afterwards, they realised that the Flame Emperor must have been pitifully beaten by this Archer, and this Archer was evidently using the Flame Emperor’s fame to humiliate him even more.

In other words, he had defeated even the Flame Emperor to the point that ‘he couldn’t even get up from the ground’. No wonder why the Alliance Master had offered him such favourable terms in trying to recruit him.

“You... You... You... Bastard, I’ll kill you!!!”

All of the pores on Cang Yan’s body were letting out smoke, and even if he had 10 more lungs, they would have all exploded from anger. All of his rationality disappeared as he instantly went crazy. He teleported out as his entire body erupted with flames, and a ‘Devouring Firestorm’, which was channelled incredibly quickly, was about to be launched out towards Winter of That Year.

A cold light flashed in Winter of That Year’s eyes. Just as Cang Yan roared out, he made sufficient preparations. The instant Cang Yan teleported out, Winter of That Year shot out a ‘Crippling Feather Arrow’. No one saw him draw his Bow or shoot the arrow; they could only see a hazy blur of motion as the arrow rushed out.

Bang!

The instant the ‘Devouring Firestorm’ was about to be unleashed, the ‘Crippling Feather Arrow’ hit Cang Yan in the middle of his forehead, causing him to fall to the ground and roll as the flames around his body disappeared. Winter of That Year inwardly gave a cold laugh as he raised his rattan wood Bow and used normal attacks to unhurriedly shoot at Cang Yan. Cang Yan, who was furious to the extreme, tried to stand back up but was continuously shot down by Winter of That Year’s arrows. He looked like an animal repeatedly kowtowing on the ground. It was an extremely unsightly scene, but no matter what he did he simply could not stand up. Moreover, Winter of That Year’s voice continuously sounded out in his ears.

“Look! Look! Doesn’t he look like a dog? You’re saying this trash is the Flame Emperor? This is the Flame Emperor?? Look at my equipment! The best I have is Copper grade, and none of them have any skills! If this guy’s the Flame Emperor, then I’m the Emperor of Heaven!”

Long Tian Yun’s face fell, his mind overwhelmed by shock.

His shock wasn’t from the Flame Emperor being humiliated like this… It was because he personally saw every single one of Winter of That Year’s arrows hitting the exact centre of Cang Yan’s forehead! Every single arrow was incredibly precise!

Compared to Cang Yan’s narrative, seeing this sort of thing

personally shocked Long Tian Yun much, much more.

If an Archer's arrows hit the exact centre of their target's forehead, there was a 100% chance of knocking them down and interrupting any spells or skills they were about to cast. Normally, even if an Archer shot 10,000 times, it was unlikely they would be able to make even a single shot. Even for godly Archers, it was almost impossible for them to hit that point, even on a stationary target. And yet, this Archer in front of him was hitting that point on every single shot! What monstrous abilities! This was something that no one had ever seen or even heard about before.

This was a feat impossible for 'humans'.

Let alone retaliate, the Flame Emperor couldn't even stand up! If it was that Ling Tian... If he was hit even once, he would never be able to make a comeback!

Long Tian Yun became tens of times more desperate to recruit Winter of That Year. He walked up as he said in a loud voice, "This friend, please stop now. Cang Yan, immediately come back."

Hearing Long Tian Yun say this, Winter of That Year stopped attacking and put away his Bow as he gave a polite smile, "Hmph. Although this trash tried to attack me first, since Alliance Master Long has spoken, my handsome self will give him some face... Ai! Alliance Master Long, you can't do this! How could you say that trash is the Flame Emperor? How could the Flame Emperor be so useless! Even though he's Alliance Master Long's subordinate, my handsome self doesn't think this sort of joke is funny. No, this sort of joke is a humiliation to the real Lord Flame Emperor. Alliance

Master Long, please don't make this sort of joke again. If the real Flame Emperor heard about this, he'd definitely be furious, right?"

Cang Yan finally stood up, and his face was bright red as his body let off smoke. He deeply breathed in and out... The first time, only Winter of That Year had been there when he had been humiliated. This time, there was Long Tian Yun, as well as more than 1,000 other players. The humiliation he felt was much, much greater. His head buzzed, and he couldn't even hear what Long Tian Yun was saying. He stood in his place as he pointed at Winter of That Year, his entire body trembling. He couldn't even speak as his vision darkened and he fainted on the spot.

Winter of That Year rolled his eyes... He fainted again? This guy's mental endurance was way too low. How could the boss be ranked below this guy on the Heaven Rankings?

Long Tian Yun's expression did not change as he motioned for people to carry Cang Yan away. When he turned to look at Winter of That Year again, his expression was incredibly calm, as if nothing had happened. As he spoke, "Are you willing to join our Yan Huang Alliance? Also, I know you have a friend called Hundred Miles of Ice. If he is willing, we wholeheartedly welcome him to join us as well."

Winter of That Year was not at all interested in joining the Yan Huang Alliance. However, he did not immediately refuse, and instead stalled for time as he desperately thought... The army in front of him was not something that he could deal with, but escaping would be a piece of cake. However, if they passed through the area he was guarding and continued forward, the new city

would be exposed. It would be exposed to the Yan Huang Alliance, who could not find out about it, no matter what!

In that case, he should pretend to join the Yan Huang Alliance, with one of the conditions being that they couldn't step into his territory.

After making this decision, Winter of That Year excitedly and nervously rubbed his hands together, "The Yan Huang Alliance is China's biggest guild, and although I haven't played any virtual games before, I've long since known of it. Joining the Yan Huang Alliance is an extremely glorious matter, and becoming the President of all Archers is something that I don't even dare to dream about. It's just that once I join, I'll have to obey all of Alliance Master's orders and won't have my freedom anymore. I've become used to having my freedom, so I'm not sure if I should accept or not... How about... How about..." as he spoke, he suddenly made his decision, as he straightened up and said, "Mm, I only have 1 condition for joining the Yan Huang Alliance."

"Oh? What is it?" Long Tian Yun asked.

"Give me 10 days. After 10 days, I'll come join the Yan Huang Alliance," Winter of That Year said sincerely.

"Why do you need 10 days? If it's to do anything, my Yan Huang Alliance will help you," Long Tian Yun unhurriedly replied.

"I don't need to trouble Alliance Master Long with this. I just need to stand guard here for 10 days and not allow anyone to pass,"

Winter of That Year said, “That’s my condition. I hope that within these 10 days, Alliance Master Long will not try to pass by this place. 10 days later, I’ll come to join the Yan Huang Alliance.”

“So, in other words, the new city will be complete in 10 days?” Long Tian Yun said as he smiled.

“New city? What new city?” Winter of That Year looked perplexed.

Winter of That Year looked like he had no idea what Long Tian Yun was talking about, causing Long Tian Yun to feel surprised... Was he wrong? After all, Winter of That Year had been guarding this place for a long time, refusing to allow anyone to pass through. Evidently, he didn’t want anyone to see what was happening to the south.

Moreover, for him to stay here for so long, and be so wary, the only possibility was that some faction had obtained the City Creation Token and was secretly building a city! This was because unless one held absolute power, they couldn’t risk letting anyone else find out. The weaker the faction was, the more they needed to protect this secret. There was only a single City Creation Token in an entire region, and it was something that every powerful guild desired. If they found out that someone was building a city, and was weaker than them, they would definitely go to fight them in order to steal the City Creation Token.

Long Tian Yun was sure that for him to suddenly say this, if this really was the case, Winter of That Year would certainly have become flustered, giving away the secret. However, seeing him

look so confused, it seemed that it really might not be a new city.

However, apart from a new city, why would he stay here for so long?

Long Tian Yun became more and more curious, and deeply desired to know what was hidden towards the south. The Sword Emperor was only a minor part of the reason why he had come. The main reason was because he wanted to personally confirm just what was happening here.

Chapter 540 – Over My Dead Body!

“To my knowledge, you and your friend have stood guard here for nearly 2 months, possibly even longer. I’m very curious why experts like you would stay at such a place for such a long time,” Long Tian Yun slowly asked.

Although Winter of That Year had reacted perfectly, he was sweating all over his body. He beat his chest as he replied, “For a promise! A promise from a man to a woman! Because of this promise, I need to stand guard here! For 10 days! Alliance Master Long, I’m sure you would agree that promises are incredibly important to men!”

“Indeed,” Long Tian Yun smiled as he nodded, “In that case, what sort of secret are you protecting behind you? Mind to share it with me?”

“Since it’s a secret, I naturally can’t say. However, I can promise that Alliance Master Long won’t be interested in this secret at all,” Winter of That Year dryly laughed, “I’m sure Alliance Master Long won’t make things difficult for me, right?”

Long Tian Yun remained calm as he replied, “What if I must know?”

Winter of That Year shrugged, “Then I’ll never join the Yan Huang Alliance. I’m sure Alliance Master Long isn’t a person of such low tolerance.”

Long Tian Yun looked at him as he spoke in an indifferent tone, “Is there a difference? After all, you never planned to join the Yan Huang Alliance. If you did, you wouldn’t have dared to humiliate the Flame Emperor like this. After joining, you’ll have to work with the Flame Emperor... Even if there was enmity between you, you wouldn’t continue provoking him. Moreover, you agreed too quickly. You have an important friend who you’re always with. If you were truly considering joining, you would have first discussed with him. However, he’s not here, and yet you agreed too readily. Do you think I’d be tricked so easily?”

Winter of That Year’s mind froze as cold sweat started to rush down his body, and he inwardly cursed... Screw the Long family’s 18 generations of ancestors! I hope a big rock falls down and crushes you all into pancakes!!!!

Winter of That Year knew that there was no use pretending anymore, so he once again equipped his Bow and raised it up as he said helplessly, “Since Alliance Master Long’s determined to see what’s behind me, then there’s nothing left for me to say...” His expression became savage as he roared, “However, if you want to get past me, you’ll have to step over my dead body!!”

Winter of That Year stood incredibly straight with his Bow raised high. His expression was no longer uninterested and lazy, but fierce and resolute. He didn’t have any intention of retreating.

“Step over your dead body?” Long Tian Yun laughed, “There’s no need for that.”

Long Tian Yun’s expression became cold as he gestured with his

right hand, commanding, “All players! Ignore him and split up as you move to the south! I’ll say it again. Charge to the south as quickly as you can. Even if this person attacks you, ignore him!! Charge!!”

An order from Long Tian Yun himself was the highest order in the Yan Huang Alliance. Everyone roared out as they put away their weapons and put on equipment that gave them the most Movement Speed, rushing toward the south. They all completely ignored Winter of That Year.

This caused Winter of That Year, who had prepared for a massive fight, to feel quite shocked.

Before, if the 100 people Cang Yan brought with him had all split up and charged, even Winter of That Year would not be able to stop them. However, Long Tian Yun was different than Cang Yan... Cang Yan had come to kill Winter of That Year, and was not at all interested in what Cang Yan was guarding. However, Long Tian Yun was not interested in Winter of That Year, but wanted to know the secret behind him.

After Assassins did their second profession upgrade, they could either become Slayers or Shadowless. Slayers had the strongest Physical Attack Damage and explosive power, and could insta-kill unsuspecting targets, while Shadowless had the most powerful movement abilities. As such, in terms of movement abilities Shadowless were ranked first, then Slayers, then Marksmen, then Hunters. The army of over a thousand people split up into a massive line that spanned hundreds of meters and simultaneously charged.

Winter of That Year was completely dumbfounded. He had been prepared to die, and yet these people weren't attacking him. If it was just 2 or 3 people, he would have just dealt with them. Even 9 or 10 people would be no problem. However, even if he had 3 heads and 6 arms, he would be unable to stop them.

He had stood guard here for almost 2 months, and had long since made this his duty. Seeing the new city grow day by day, he grown quite attached to it. Moreover, he was completely smitten with Yun Meng Xin... How could he allow all of this to go to waste?

"Stop right there!! All of you stop right there!!!"

A 'Machine Gun Arrows' swept out, shooting the 6 Shadowless in the front to the ground. However, there were still more than 1,000 people charging up. When he tried to attack others, the 6 people who he had shot down got back up and continued to run... His equipment was simply too trash, and he was unable to insta-kill them. His obstructions, in front of so many people, were completely useless.

As he stood in shock, more than half of the Shadowless had passed by where he was and rushed south. After attacking, the Slayers also reached him and quickly passed by. Winter of That Year furiously roared and unleashed his full speed, quickly catching up to the Shadowless and Slayers as he swiftly attacked.

Every time he attacked, he would knock at least one person down. However, the army came closer and closer to the new city.

Even if he put in all his effort, it would be akin to pouring a glass of water on a burning house.

Long Tian Yun continued to stand in his place. There was no need for him to personally go and look, because if the players discovered anything, they would immediately notify him. Seeing Winter of That Year desperately try to stop them, he began to feel more and more curious... Just what was hidden there?

At this moment, he saw Winter of That Year suddenly stop in his tracks as he stood there.

“Ha, he’s given up,” Long Tian Yun said as he laughed.

If he had seen Winter of That Year’s face, he would have seen his pupils dilate to a terrifying extent.

“You... forced me... to do this!!”

Winter of That Year spoke slowly, each word as heavy as a boulder.

Winter of That Year slowly raised his rattan wood Bow as 6 ordinary arrows were placed on the bowstring... Only the ‘Machine Gun Arrows’ could shoot out 6 arrows simultaneously. As he released the arrows, they streaked through the air towards the 6 people closest to him.

This was an ordinary skill using ordinary arrows, and seemed

like the powerless attacks he had launched before. However, the only difference was that after shooting out those 6 arrows, he continued to maintain that posture, looking like a statue. However, his pupils continuously dilated and contracted...

Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish!

The 6 arrows all found their targets, and hit them all exactly in the centre of their foreheads! 6 Critical Hit damage figures floated up, as the 6 people who were hit fell to the ground.

Normally, unless an Archer's arrows had a piercing effect, or the skill had a piercing effect, the arrows would disappear after hitting a target. 'Machine Gun Arrows' didn't have a piercing effect, nor did Winter of That Year's Bow or the arrows that he had used. However, after hitting their targets, the 6 arrows did not disappear, and instead pierced through their heads and continued forwards. In the next second, they hit another 6 people in the center of their foreheads, then once again pierced through their heads and even sped up as they hit another 6 people.

In just an instant, 18 people had fallen. However, this was not the end; it was just the beginning.

The 6 arrows did not disappear, and instead, became faster and faster. They travelled so quickly that even a hundred meters away, one could hear the sound of them tearing through the air. Soon, they reached such a speed that they couldn't be followed by the naked eye. It seemed as if these 6 arrows would never stop, and instead became like 6 deathgod's scythes as they passed through 1 player every second, then 2 players every second, then 3... 10...

20...

Their range also became larger and larger.

6 wild gusts of wind swept up on the grassy plains, within which pitiful cries sounded out. The 6 arrows continuously sped around, piercing through bodies. That's right, the 6 arrows covered the entire area within 100 meters, creating a 100-meter-wide net. Everyone who had passed by Winter of That Year was caught within the net as the arrows pierced through their bodies...

-2984, -2888, -2649, -2758, -2552.....

Winter of That Year's Attack Power was incredibly weak, and despite his attacks resulting in a Critical Hit each time, they never exceeded 3,000 damage. However, the 6 arrows passed through over 700 targets. All of them were pierced by at least 1 arrow around every second. No matter how much HP one had, it was impossible to defend against such terrifying loss of HP. The 6 arrows created a net of annihilation, as the Yan Huang Alliance's players died in droves.

The players further back stopped in their tracks as they stared at the spectacle in front of them. Half of them became so shocked that they almost lost their ability to think, and the other half slowly retreated in terror.

Whoosh...

The storm of arrows that had persisted for 10 or so seconds suddenly stopped as the 6 arrows disappeared. The places where they had travelled left corpses strewn across the ground. Not a single player remained alive within those 100 meters.

Long Tian Yun's expression froze, and his throat became so dry that he couldn't utter a sound.

Winter of That Year heavily fell to his knees, his eyes incredibly dim. He kept his body upright with his arms, not allowing himself to fall into unconsciousness as he spoke with a trembling, but incredibly resolute voice, "If you want to get past me... you'll have to step over my dead body!!"

Chapter 541 – Man-Made God

The Yan Huang Alliance's players all stood there transfixed, their minds completely blank after the shock of seeing what had just occurred? Did that really just happen? Was it a hallucination? Was it some sort of superpower that only appeared in sci-fi movies? Were they dreaming? The enormous grassy plains fell into a terrifying silence as everyone stood still, exactly where they were. Not a single one of them dared to advance.

Long Tian Yun felt just as shocked. However, he was the Long family's young master, and the Long family had the largest esper unit in the world. As such, Long Tian Yun had come into contact with many espers before. It was obvious to him that that shocking scene wasn't some Archer ability... but that this Archer used his mental energy to control those 6 arrows, enabling them to become a hell storm of arrows!

6 arrows... in the end, every arrow's speed surpassed the speed of sound... and each one of them had precisely hit each player in the middle of their forehead... Just how terrifying did his mental energy have to be to achieve such a thing?

Despite seeing so many espers before, Long Tian Yun had never met such a powerful one. Even Murong Xiong Tian, who was called the strongest esper in China, wasn't at such a level! In fact, this sort of power was no longer an esper ability... After all, despite being powerful, esper abilities were still within the limits of an ordinary human range. What had just happened... was something that could only occur in a legend!

What sort of monster was this young man, who appeared to be no

more than 20 years old? How could there be such a person in China without the Long family knowing?! After Ling Tian, how could another monster appear, which the Long family had no idea about?

Looking at Winter of That Year, who was kneeling on the ground and hadn't stood up, Long Tian Yun quickly calmed down. He looked around him as he said in a low voice, "What are you all standing there for? I told you to run towards the south and ignore everything else! Are you all deaf? This person has used up all of his mental energy, and can't even stand anymore. What are you afraid of?"

Hearing Long Tian Yun's voice, the Yan Huang Alliance's players felt as if they had just awoken from a dream. However, the shock within their hearts couldn't be dispelled so easily, and they suppressed the trembling within their hearts as they looked at Winter of That Year in fright, finally running towards the south again.

Hearing the noise, Winter of That Year tried to get up, but whenever he tried to use his strength, the pain in his head became even worse. He felt as if his head was going to explode... let alone standing up, he couldn't even speak.

Realizing they were not being stopped, the players all let out a sigh of relief as they continued to run. They ran over the corpses of the players from before and didn't even turn to look at Winter of That Year. After running far away, Winter of That Year was still kneeling in the same place.

Long Tian Yun slowly walked over and stood to the side of Winter of That Year with his hands behind his back as he calmly said, “To be honest, that spectacular performance from before gave me quite a scare. From what you did just then, I can say that all of the espers I’ve seen combined together are inferior to you. Moreover, you’re much younger than all of them.”

“Hmph...” Winter of That Year gave a cold harrumph as he closed his eyes and calmed himself down, trying to recover as quickly as possible. He wasn’t surprised that Long Tian Yun knew what he had just done.

“I’ve heard them talk about the consequences of overusing their mental energy... a pain akin to 10,000 arrows piercing your brain... as if you’ve fallen to the 18th level of hell. And yet, you haven’t even cried out once, and even formed a complete sentence just now. I can’t help but respect you... You deserve the title of a ‘true man’,” Long Tian Yun said as he smiled.

“Tell your people... to stop!” Winter of That Year said as he gritted his teeth.

“Which ‘Man-Made God’ are you?” Long Tian Yun suddenly asked a seemingly random question.

Hearing this, Winter of That Year felt as if he heard a peal of thunder. He suddenly raised his head as a look of shock appeared in his eyes, “You!”

“So, I was right!” Long Tian Yun frowned deeply. He hadn’t

expected anything out of this, but Winter of That Year's reaction gave him a terrifying answer.

After Winter of That Year reacted like that, he realised Long Tian Yun had been guessing. If he was in his normal state, hearing the words 'Man-Made God' would bring a great shock to him, but he wouldn't have reacted so intensely. However, he had used up all of his mental energy, and hearing that name, he responded instinctively.

"How... do you know... that name!!" Winter of That Year's face slightly twisted, as he coldly asked.

Long Tian Yun felt utterly dismayed. He never thought that 'Man-Made Gods' actually existed. He said in a low voice, "In the Bei Zhou City's northern parts, nearest to the North Pole, the temperature has always been below 0 degrees Celsius and is always covered with snow. There aren't many people living there, and nothing usually happens there. However, a few years ago, a large number of children from 8 to 12 years old disappeared. Despite all the investigations done, nothing was found.

"6 years ago, there was an explosion in the center of the Indian Ocean, which could be heard hundreds of kilometers away. Many countries worked together to investigate the source of this explosion and found a nameless island. The island was mostly blown up, and there were still some remains left... Some of them had DNA that was able to be extracted. Through my Long family's investigations, we found that some of the DNA matched with the children who had gone missing from the Bei Zhou City!"

Winter of That Year: “…”

“Moreover, within all the wreckage, we also discovered a bit of data that was not completely destroyed, although it was heavily damaged. After being analyzed by the world’s top deciphering experts for 2 weeks, we discovered information about the ‘Man-Made God Plan’, as well as some fragmented data about ‘Man-Made Gods’.”

Long Tian Yun lowered his head as he looked at Winter of That Year and said, “Your home was in the Bei Zhou City, right? You are one of those children who went missing back then. After disappearing, you were taken to that nameless island that was blown up and became one of the experiments that became known as a ‘Man-Made God’. From the information we obtained, the ‘Man-Made God' Plan greatly reduces a person’s lifespan in order to develop a terrifying ability.

“These people are able to surpass humanity’s limits, and reach the level of ‘gods’. However, the consequence of such power is that their lifespan is shortened to merely another 10 years. Moreover, this cruel experiment causes the subjects to feel indescribable pain, and the success rate is terrifyingly low. Only around 1 in 1,000 experiments succeeded, and those who investigated this were all completely shocked to learn about it.”

“That’s the information we received from restoring the data, and it was listed as a national secret by the 5 countries who investigated it, as well. Less than 30 people in the world know about this. The mental abilities that you just displayed, combined with your age, made me think of the ‘Man-Made Gods’, so I

decided to ask and see if I was right. I never thought that you would actually be a ‘Man-Made God’ though,” Long Tian Yun said as he frowned.

“Back then, they deduced that the explosion was caused by an experiment that went wrong and that a mysterious terrorist organization and all of their experimental subjects, were blown to smithereens. Now, it seems like this national secret wasn’t as everyone thought. You’re a ‘Man-Made God’, so does that mean the terrorist organization that created you still exists?” Long Tian Yun coldly asked.

“Organisation? Heh…” Winter of That Year gave a frigid laugh, What organization? It was a single person! A person who called himself the ‘Mad Scientist’, and was terrifying beyond belief! But who would believe such a thing? Winter of That Year endured the pain in his head as he gritted his teeth and replied, “That island was equipped with technology that surpassed everything on earth, and even the most high-tech of satellites couldn’t detect its existence. Even boats and ships that came near were redirected away by the interference so that they could never arrive at the island. If the island hadn’t exploded, none of you would have found it… and the one who caused the explosion… was me!”

“You?”

“That’s right!” Thinking back to the scene from that year, a look of delight appeared on Winter of That Year’s face, “I waited for a rare opportunity and blew up the island. I thought that I would definitely die, but unexpectedly, I survived. However, I fell into a coma for a few years. When I woke up, I was already back in China.

As for the terrorist organization... Hehehe... It would be best for you if they died in that explosion. However, if they haven't died, even if there were 10 Long families, you wouldn't be able to find them."

Long Tian Yun looked at him as he asked, "Is Hundred Miles of Ice also a 'Man-Made God'?"

"That's right!" Winter of That Year didn't deny it, "There were 3,000 experimental subjects for the 'Man-Made God' Plan, and only 4 were successfully lived. Hundred Miles of Ice and I were 2 of them. After the explosion, we were the only survivors. Feeling relieved?"

Long Tian Yun thought for a moment before slowly saying, "From the amount of time that has passed and your age, it seems that your life should almost be up, right?"

The power Winter of That Year had displayed was simply shocking. However, he had obtained this power at the cost of 90% of his lifespan... if it was Long Tian Yun, even if he was offered 10 times as much power, he wouldn't accept such a trade.

"I'll have to disappoint you," his headache was receding, and Winter of That Year's mind was recovering at an incredible rate, "Hundred Miles of Ice and I still have about a year to live. Within that year, we can do many things."

"1 year, was it?" Long Tian Yun looked at him meaningfully as he calmly said, "Join my Yan Huang Alliance then. I'm sure you don't

want the power that you exchanged with your lives to go to waste. If you join my Yan Huang Alliance, you'll be able to fully use your powers. Moreover, as the Alliance Master, I can promise you that your position will only be lower to mine, and you'll be famous everywhere under the heavens. Most importantly..." Long Tian Yun's eyes flashed as he said in a low voice, "With my Long family's abilities, perhaps we can find a way to extend your life spans!"

Chapter 542 – Exposed

"You want me to join the Yan Huang Alliance and become your Long family's lackey?" Winter of That Year asked, as he coldly laughed.

"Lackey?" Long Tian Yun shook his head, "If you join the Yan Huang Alliance, it'll merely be a relationship of cooperation between us. I'll borrow your power to fulfill my goals, and you can receive whatever you want from us. If you feel that we can't give you what you want, or that what we've given you is less than what you've given us, then you can leave and we won't try to stop you. I simply can't understand why you're hesitating. Don't you think that wasting the power you've obtained, at the cost of your lifespan, is incredibly stupid?"

"So, what if it's stupid... if it's for a promise that you made?" Winter of That Year coldly smiled, "Since I don't have long to live, why can't I live as I wish? I just want to do the things that I want to do. For the things I don't want to do, even if the Emperor of Heaven kneels down and begs me, I still won't do them."

Long Tian Yun raised his eyebrows as he said, "Promise? You said that you made a promise to a woman. It seems that that woman is quite important to you. In that case, you probably harbor some romantic feelings towards this woman, but you know that given your circumstances all you can do is bury those feelings inside your heart. Moreover, you feel inferior to her. As such, you didn't say anything, and only stood guard here for her, right?"

Winter of That Year was speechless... Long Tian Yun was

completely correct.

"If you join my Yan Huang Alliance, I'll make that woman yours. How about that?" Long Tian Yun said, smiling calmly. To him, this was an incredibly simple matter because there were very few women who his Long family couldn't control.

"No need to answer quickly," before Winter of That Year could reply, Long Tian Yun continued, "I'll give you enough time to think about it. Right now, your mind isn't too well, so have a think about my words after you've fully recovered."

After speaking, Long Tian Yun turned and began walking toward the south. He truly wanted to rope in Winter of That Year. The power Ling Tian had displayed in the East Ocean Continent was like a nightmare to him, making it difficult for him to eat and sleep. He desperately needed someone who could suppress Ling Tian, and he saw this hope within Winter of That Year! Moreover, as a 'Man-Made God', Hundred Miles of Ice's strength would be similar to Winter of That Year's!

Long Tian Yun remembered that in the previous China Mock Battle, the silent Hundred Miles of Ice was the greatest dark horse. He slaughtered his way into the top 10, and he was given the right to enter the Heaven Rankings, causing all of the Chinese players to know of this solitary swordsman's name. In the Heaven Ranking Battles, he defeated Xiao Qiu Feng, then battled the Sword Emperor, Feng Xie Yu... However, never appeared at that battle, and Feng Xie Yu had won by default.

In the end, Xiao Qiu Feng was ranked 6th out of the 9 people who

had shown up. However, because he was defeated by Hundred Miles of Ice, Hundred Miles of Ice was ranked 6th, while he was ranked 7th.

In other words, this result was only because Hundred Miles of Ice had suddenly left! Most people guessed that Hundred Miles of Ice had left because he knew he was no match for the Sword Emperor, so he attempted to save face by skipping the battle. That was what Long Tian Yun had originally thought too... However, now he knew that things may have been different than they appeared at the time.

It was very likely that Hundred Miles of Ice was trying to hide his true power!

If he could recruit Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice into the Yan Huang Alliance, adding on the equipment that the Yan Huang Alliance could provide, they could definitely defeat Ling Tian! When the time was right, they could even bring them to the Long family and extract the secrets of the ‘Man-Made Gods’ by experimenting on them... Once they did this, the Long family would be able to mass-create these 'Man-Made Gods'. When that happened, who could possibly stand up to the Long family?

In just a few breaths of time, countless ideas sped through Long Tian Yun’s mind. He had walked quite far away, and yet Winter of That Year had not yet caught up... The mental fatigue he was dealing with was not something that could be overcome quickly.

“Alliance Master!! We’ve discovered something!!”

The voice coming from his communication device was incredibly excited. Long Tian Yun stopped walking as his eyes became serious, “Speak!”

“Less than 10 kilometers away from this town, there’s a city under construction… No, it’s nearly complete! The city’s quite large, and because we’re quite far away we can’t confirm if it’s a city built by players. Although it’s unlikely, if it is… then…”

A city? And it was about to be completed?

Blood rushed to Long Tian Yun’s head, becoming so excited that he nearly dropped the communication device he was holding in his hand.

It was a city! A player’s city! He had been correct!

Apart from building a city, what could take such a long time? Moreover, there were 2 super-experts guarding here, day and night, for a few months!

That meant that a few months ago, someone had already obtained a City Creation Token! The only City Creation Token of the region!

A City Creation Token was the only thing that gave players the right to build a city in the virtual world. Moreover, in the virtual world, only 1 city could be built by players in each region. In that

case, this city would become the capital for all players, while the owner of this city would become an emperor! Who wouldn't want such honor and glory? Long Tian Yun desired it so much that it was almost an obsession! After more and more people in the Yan Huang Alliance completed the second profession upgrade, he had ordered the entire Yan Huang Alliance to obtain the City Creation Token at all costs!

However, who would have thought that someone had already obtained the City Creation Token a few months ago, and the new city was about to be completed!

Long Tian Yun's body erupted with sweat... If Cang Yan hadn't stumbled across this place... If he hadn't come here personally he would only have found out about the new city after it was complete. When that time came, it would have been too late. This was because other factions could only attack and stop a city from being built while it was still being constructed. Moreover, because this was a battle between players, NPCs could not interfere. However, if the city was complete, the situation was different. If the city was completed and NPCs were residing there, they could also retaliate and protect the city.

How could players fight against high-leveled NPCs? Even if no NPCs were residing within the city, the owner of the city could recruit some high-leveled City Guards from main cities, or the Royal City, and use them as their own City Guards. Those LV100 City Guards could slice apart players like vegetables. As such, even for the Yan Huang Alliance, taking down a completed city would be incredibly difficult.

However, what Long Tian Yun never expected was that within the new city were Mysterious God grade beings, like Greenwood. If the new city was fully constructed, even if the Yan Huang Alliance attacked with their full strength, they would be decimated as easily as Greenwood waving his head.

“Hurry up and confirm which faction that city belongs to!” Long Tian Yun roared out, “That side should know that all of you are drawing near, so they’ll have many troops stationed there. Even if you all die, I want to know who the owner of the city is!!”

After hanging up, Long Tian Yun’s expression changed as he quickly hurried over. He wanted to personally have a look at this new city!

Just as he had expected, because Winter of That Year was unable to stop all of them, he must have reported to the new city to make preparations... However, what he would never have expected was that there was only a single player guarding there—Yun Meng Xin. There were no defensive troops at all!

The construction of the new city was still ongoing, and it had not stopped since the very first day.

The most glamorous Administrative Region was already complete, and the construction spread out from there, creating the outline of a beautiful city. After working for a few months, the Dwarves remained just as enthusiastic. Every day, they wiped their sweat, ate delicious food, and watched in delight as their new home came closer and closer to completion. They felt an incredible amount of joy every day. The Fairies were not idle either; some of

them used their special abilities to transport wood and stones from the Fairy Forest, and others continuously cast their blessing magic, helping the Dwarves recover their strength.

“Big sister! Big sister! Oh no, there are so many people coming over! Big sister!”

Cai’Er flapped her wings as she hurriedly flew over, crying out in panic. Yun Meng Xin turned around, her eyes also filled with worry... Just then she had received a message from Winter of That Year saying that they had been exposed. What’s more, it was Long Tian Yun who had personally led an army here!

“Cai’Er, don’t worry. The heavens won’t let all of our hard work to go to waste. Tell your father and all of the Dwarves not to worry. I know how to deal with them.”

After smiling and reassuring Cai’Er, then watching Cai’Er hurriedly fly away, Yun Meng Xin stood as she faced towards the north, watching the black dots come closer and closer.

“Xiao Xue, there’s a very unfortunate piece of news.”

“We’ve been exposed?” that was the worst thing that could happen, but also the thing that was most likely, as well.

“That’s right. What’s more, the people who found us are the Yan Huang Alliance. Long Tian Yun also personally came,” Yun Meng Xin spoke into her communication device.

Li Xiao Xue fell silent for a while before replying, “That worthless little fox must have smelt something. How many people did he bring?”

“He probably came to scout this place out, so he only brought 1,000 or so people. Now that we’ve been found out, Long Tian Yun definitely won’t allow the construction of the city to go on. In order to take the City Creation Token, I wouldn’t be surprised to see him mobilize the entire Yan Huang Alliance,” Yun Meng Xin said pensively.

“You don’t sound very worried, though,” Li Xiao Xue replied with an interested look on her face.

Yun Meng Xin gave a light laugh, “Because you said that if this happened, you’ll be able to contact Ling Tian.”

“Hehe,” Li Xiao Xue laughed, “the Yan Huang Alliance has tens of millions of players! If it was just protecting himself, I’m sure it would be impossible for them to kill him. However, even if he had 10,000 hands, he wouldn’t be able to protect such a large city. Blindly worshipping someone isn’t good, you know…”

“However, no matter how desperate the situation, he’ll be able to rescue it. No matter how impossible something is, he’ll still be able to do it. That’s the impression he has given me. He is the only person I am willing to blindly follow,” Yun Meng Xin said as she smiled.

“Alright, alright,” Li Xiao Xue said in a strange voice, “I’ll immediately contact big brother Ling Tian, who you blindly worship and will blindly follow. My Snow Moon Loulan will also immediately go over to defend the city... However, right now, you’re the only person there. What are you going to do?”

“After being blocked by Winter of That Year, there are only a few hundred people left. Long Tian Yun won’t use these few hundred people to do anything. I’m sure that after he has personally confirmed it, he will leave. In order to destroy this new city, he’ll immediately have to return to make preparations, as opposed to wasting time here.” After pausing, Yun Meng Xin continued, “He’ll probably gather more than 1 million people to attack, so as to destroy the new city in one fell swoop. According to my rough estimates, the earliest he’ll be able to organize so many people will be around midnight, and at the latest, early morning tomorrow."

Chapter 543 – Massacre!

The timeline Yun Meng Xin estimated was quite close to what Li Xiao Xue was also thinking. After hanging up, she thought for half a minute before picking up her phone and calling Chao Ying and Chao Xi. She informed them of the situation and told them to tell Ling Tian immediately. She was certain that no matter what he was doing, he would immediately hurry back.

The new city didn't just belong to Yun Meng Xin and Ling Chen. Li Xiao Xue had also bet quite a lot on this new city. As such, especially when the new city was about to be completed she didn't want it all to go to waste, especially if the other side was the Yan Huang Alliance, who could cover the sky with one hand!

"Snow Moon Loulan needs to move out before planned," Li Xiao Xue muttered to herself, then sighed, "It's just that secretly developing has limited its scale. We'll be like grasshoppers trying to stop a car. Ling Tian, we'll need you to show the might you displayed back in the East Ocean Continent. You were able to destroy the top 3 guilds in the East Ocean Continents... I don't see why you can't stop a single Yan Huang Alliance."

Speaking to there, Li Xiao Xue thought of the 2 times she had met with Ling Chen, and how they had communicated deeply on a physical and psychological level. She started to laugh lightly, and her anxiety slowly disappeared.

After hanging up the call with Li Xiao Xue, the intruders were only a few hundred meters away from Yun Meng Xin. Most Hunters were able to use high-level detection abilities at this range

to discover who the new city belonged to. Yun Meng Xin calmly stood there, waiting for them to come closer. In actuality, she had long since made preparations for this day. From recruiting the Fairy Clan and the Dwarf Clan, to the entire construction of the new city, everything had gone far too smoothly. As such, it wasn't strange that during the most important time, some problems would arise.

Yun Meng Xin's gaze flitted around continuously. However, she didn't see Long Tian Yun among the players who were coming closer and closer. Instead, the players who drew near all emanated bloodlust. It was as if they were spending all of their efforts in the running, and didn't plan to go back alive.

Yun Meng Xin felt incredibly surprised, but the Yan Huang Alliance's player's hearts were all rapidly thumping. They had already confirmed that the city ahead of them belonged to a player and were all completely shocked. None of them could believe this. To be able to construct something of such a scale, even if it went on day and night, would take at least 3 or 4 months. How was it possible that 3 or 4 months ago, someone had killed an incredibly high-grade Boss and obtained the City Creation Token?

Moreover, from what they saw, this was achievable only with great power and wealth. To achieve such a feat, it was definitely one of China's 10 biggest guilds. During the construction of a city, there were usually countless troops stationed there to defend the city. As such, a few hundred players rushing towards the city would be akin to suicide. However, by the time they had nearly reached the entrance of the city, they could only see a goddess-like woman standing there. As for the troops that they expected, there was no trace.

“Young master! We’ve confirmed that this place belongs to a player! This means that a faction has obtained the City Creation Token and is building a city here! This is something confirmed by all of the Hunters and is definitely correct. Also... this city is incredibly large and spans nearly 2000 square kilometers. If this city is completed, it will be the biggest city ever constructed in the virtual world! It’ll be larger than the largest city our Yan Huang Alliance has constructed, by more than 6 or 7 times! For something of this scale, the creator of this city must have poured in an astronomical amount of money for this land, labor, and resources. It’s impossible to imagine who could have such a fortune!"

“What’s even more incomprehensible is that this city has remained a secret for so long. In the few months, it would have taken to reach this point, they would have required more than 100,000 high-level builders. Even if they hired all of them, it’s impossible for them to do it so quietly! Before today, no one has detected anything!"

“If the creation of this city was made known to the public... it would send the entire world into a frenzy!”

“We’re already less than 300 meters from the boundary of this city, but we haven’t seen any troops stationed to defend it yet. However, there seems to be a woman standing there.”

One of the leaders reported to Long Tian Yun in an extremely shocked and excited voice. After continuing on forward, they still didn’t see anyone, nor did anyone come out to stop them. The Yan Huang Alliance’s players, who had been charging forward,

gradually slowed down and gathered together as they looked at the solitary person, Yun Meng Xin.

“This is my territory. Please leave immediately.”

The few hundred-people faced off against a single woman who wore a white veil. She didn’t give off any pressure at all. However, before they could say anything, a cool voice sounded out.

If they were facing a beauty, with so many men present, they would have revealed mocking and lewd smiles. However, facing Yun Meng Xin, not a single one of them could smile. Instead, they tried to look away; the woman in front of them had her face covered, and calmly stood there. However, she gave off an incredibly noble and regal aura. Although she was standing right in front of them, she emitted an aura as if she was standing on clouds, while they were buried in mud. They felt completely inferior and as if they could not think any impure thoughts towards her.

Hearing Yun Meng Xin speak, all of the Yan Huang Alliance’s players looked at each other. The leader immediately came out and looked away as he asked, “Is this your territory? Are you the owner of this city?”

“You can put it that way,” Yun Meng Xin’s tone remained cool and collected. She was sure that Long Tian Yun would be here soon, “Don’t you think that it’s rude of you to intrude into my territory without seeking permission?”

“Your territory?” the leader smirked as he chuckled, “Beauty, you should prepare yourself. Perhaps before this place was yours… however, within at most 3 days, it will belong to us!”

This sentence revealed just how domineering and ambitious the Yan Huang Alliance was. As the largest guild in the world, the Yan Huang Alliance was an unstoppable force. Even as a low-ranking leader, his self-confidence was immeasurable. He was completely certain that now that this city had been found by their Yan Huang Alliance, even if it was completed, the Yan Huang Alliance would still destroy it and take the City Creation Token! Ever since the Yan Huang Alliance had become a major power, the power to create cities had always been in their hands. Mystic Moon wouldn’t be an exception to this!

After speaking, the leader half-raised his head and took a step forward. However, at that moment a cold wind suddenly blew past, causing him to involuntarily tremble, and his foot paused in mid-air. About 5 steps away, a gray shadow appeared.

The gray shadow appeared far too quickly, and no one in the Yan Huang Alliance saw when it had appeared. They only saw a blur, after which the gray shadow appeared. The person was dressed extremely strangely—nothing was exposed under the gray cloak, and even the hand holding the sword was wrapped with a gray cloth. The gray shadow stood there unmoving, looking like a statue. However, an incredible pressure emanated out from this person, making it seem as if even the air stopped flowing.

“Sword… Sword Emperor!”

The leader spoke in a shocked and trembling voice, and when he called out this name, the other Yan Huang Alliance players also realized who this gray-clothed person was. Their faces fell as their hearts almost stopped.

They definitely wouldn't misrecognize this person! This was the Yan Huang Alliance's incredibly famous Sword Emperor! A legend among players! The Sword Emperor's position within the Yan Huang Alliance was lower to only Long Tian Yun. The Sword Emperor was an existence no one dared to offend, no one could defeat, and no one could get close to. Simply looking at the Sword Emperor made these people feel as if a wave of coldness had passed through their bodies. Anyone could dress up like this, but no one could give off the Sword Emperor's aura.

Everyone in the entire Yan Huang Alliance knew that the Sword Emperor had turned traitor and left the Yan Huang Alliance. Seeing the Sword Emperor suddenly appear, the deep fear and respect they felt caused all of the players to retreat a few steps. The sword in the Sword Emperor's hand would have looked ordinary and unappealing in a normal player's hand... But in the Sword Emperor's hand, the light it gave off caused them to tremble in fear, and some of them didn't even dare to look at it.

"L-Lord Sword Emperor," The leader called out with trembling lips.

The Sword Emperor finally responded... by lifting the sword and pointing it towards his face.

The leader subconsciously took a step backward, and his face

became incredibly pale. This was the first time in his life he had been pointed at with a sword by the Sword Emperor. Although the sword was evidently 5 steps away, he could feel it pressed against his heart. He did his best to calm himself down as he spoke with great difficulty, “Lord Sword Emperor… are… are you going to stop us?”

Whoosh!!

Just as he spoke, the sword in the Sword Emperor’s hand disappeared, while an icy light reflected in his eyes.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi…

The Sword Emperor did not move, but the sword seemed to have a life of its, as it flew out from the Sword Emperor’s hand. It sped through the air like a comet, and in an instant, it had passed through more than 10 players.

Even after they all fell and died, not a person cried out. They were completely unprepared and didn’t even know how they had died. In fact, some hadn’t even yet realized that they were dead.

Swish!

The sword suddenly flipped in the air and flew back towards the Sword Emperor. By the time it returned to her hand, another 10 or so players had been pierced… No matter if they were Archers, Swordsmen, Shield Bearers, or Mages, they were all insta-killed!

In just an instant, around 30 players from the Yan Huang Alliance had died. Only then did they realize what was happening. They all cried out in shock and fear, causing the scene to become chaotic. The Sword Emperor, and the sword, charged into their ranks. Wherever the gray shadow traveled, there would be 10 or so beautiful arcs of light. Wherever the light traveled, at least 1 player fell...

Chapter 544 – Decimation

The name "Sword Emperor" was a synonym for "legend" within the Yan Huang Alliance. These Yan Huang Alliance members never thought that they would one day face the Sword Emperor, as they had neither the guts nor the qualifications.

The Sword Emperor charged into the group of Yan Huang Alliance players, her sword as cold as steel and her heart as hard as iron. Wherever she traveled, an icy light would flash, and despite the battle being 1 against 100, her frigid bloodlust caused those around her to tremble.

In the distance, Yun Meng Xin watched in shock. She was not unfamiliar with the Sword Emperor, and when the Sword Emperor had appeared, Yun Meng Xin's mind froze. She couldn't understand why the Sword Emperor, who had once been part of the Yan Huang Alliance, would appear here or why the Sword Emperor would help her!

Yun Meng Xin was sure that she had never interacted with the Sword Emperor before; they had never even spoken. However, she thought to what Li Xiao Xue had told her in the past... that when Ling Tian charged into the Long family's residence by himself, Feng Xie Yu had saved him, then cut off ties with the Long family and Xuanyuan family. No one knew why she did this.

Could it be... that the Sword Emperor... was doing this for Ling Tian?

Could this Sword Emperor, who had supposedly cut off her emotions, have some sort of special relationship with Ling Tian?

Because players all started at the same point, even players on the Heaven Rankings were not too much stronger than other players during the early stages. Against normal players, 1 on 1, they would definitely win. Against 10 players, they might barely be able to win. They only became truly powerful after they completed their second profession upgrade, which was when it became possible for them to fight up to even 100 players alone. For the Sword Emperor, facing even 1,000 enemies was not impossible! From the very beginning, the Sword Emperor's name had hung at the top of the Player Level Rankings and was the first person in China to complete their second profession upgrade. Back then, when she had fought with Ling Tian, she was already extremely powerful... and now, she was hundreds of times more powerful!

To these players, fighting against the Sword Emperor was simply a nightmare!

The sword shot forward like a silver bolt of lightning. Wherever it passed, even the air, light, and space were affected, as if they were being devoured by the sword. Under the might of this sword, even the Shield Bearers (who had high HP and high Defense) were insta-killed.

The leader of these people knew how terrifying the Sword Emperor was, but never expected that the Sword Emperor could decimate hundreds of people in just a few seconds. The Sword Emperor was still quite far away from him, and yet the cold aura emanating from her caused his heart and body to violently

tremble. The Sword Emperor's name weighed down on his heart like a heavy mountain. Although his side had hundreds of people, he felt as if they could not retaliate at all. He shook as he took 2 steps back and hoarsely yelled, "Retreat! Quickly retreat!"

An order like this sounded simply angelic to the Yan Huang Alliance's players, who had fallen into complete fear and chaos. Not a single person hesitated as they turned and ran as fast as they could.

Chi... Chi... Chi... Chi...

The sounds of bodies being penetrated continuously sounded out as another 7 people were pierced through their chests. The pierced players stopped in their tracks, looking at their chests in disbelief, then fell to the ground. The sword flew in a beautiful and exaggerated arc, then instantly returned back to the Sword Emperor's hand. The Sword Emperor turned into a gray blur and began to give chase. Seeing that the Sword Emperor didn't stop after they started running away, and instead started chasing after them, the Yan Huang Alliance's player's faces fell, as they gritted their teeth and ran as quickly as possible.

However, how could their speed compare to the Sword Emperor's? Whenever the sword slashed out, the Sword Emperor seemed like a silent deathgod. As the icy light flashed out, droves of players were executed without the ability to retaliate at all. The Sword Emperor flipped her palm, causing the sword to fly out again, stabbing through another 6 or 7 players...

Chi... Chi...

The sound of bodies being pierced continuously rang out. No matter how fast the Shadowless and Slayers ran, they simply couldn’t outrun the Sword Emperor’s sword, which was like a comet, and were all mercilessly slaughtered. They were all elites within the Yan Huang Alliance, but in front of the Sword Emperor, they were like ants. Under the Sword Emperor’s sword, all that was left for them was death, and could not even think about retaliating.

When Long Tian Yun arrived, he immediately saw the Sword Emperor’s massacre. The 700 or so players had been whittled down to less than 200 players, and the survivors were all desperately escaping, as they screamed in fear.

Sword Manipulation! Seeing the sword flying through the air, killing droves of players... Although Long Tian Yun had heard about this from Cang Yan, he still felt incomparably shocked. Not only was the sword incredibly fast, it was incredibly powerful and precise. The furthest it traveled from the Sword Emperor was more than 30 meters away. This sort of Sword Manipulation was not something someone could achieve upon barely mastering it! She was already incredibly proficient!

When she had betrayed them, she didn’t have this ability; at least, she had never revealed it before. And now, she was wielding it at such a frightening level! Even a genius who was difficult to find in a thousand years couldn't do such a thing!

Behind Long Tian Yun, Winter of That Year, who had somewhat recovered, hurried over. Seeing this scene, his jaw dropped and his

eyes bulged.

Holy crap! From this person's attire, isn't this the Sword Emperor who the boss mentioned quite a few times? Is that person this powerful? They're cutting through hundreds of people like they're cutting through cabbage! With this sort of power, even if the boss used his special power, he might not be able to win.

Wait, is this person also a 'Man-Made God'? How could a normal human possess such a terrifying ability?!

The escaping Yan Huang Alliance players saw Long Tian Yun and felt as if they had found a sliver of hope. They all rushed towards him because in this world, Long Tian Yun was the only person who could command the Sword Emperor! Although the Sword Emperor had betrayed the Yan Huang Alliance, Long Tian Yun was still the Sword Emperor's superior in the past. Surely the Sword Emperor wouldn't dare to do anything to him.

"Young master, the Sword Emperor... the Sword Emperor's attacking us!"

The leader rushed over to Long Tian Yun as he spoke breathlessly. More and more people ran over to Long Tian Yun in fright. Only then were they able to calm down a bit. Since Long Tian Yun had arrived, tens of players had been killed. Long Tian Yun frowned as he looked at the Sword Emperor, who was rapidly approaching. When she was 10 steps away, he took a step forward and said with a serious expression, "Stop right there!"

Just as he spoke, Long Tian Yun's pupils contracted; an icy glint shot closer and closer towards him...

-29550 !

Chi...

-29,550!

Not only did the Sword Emperor disobey his command, but she even attacked him unhesitatingly!

A look of deep disbelief appeared on Long Tian Yun's face, and his eyes stared wide open, as he silently fell backward. The instant he fell, he also saw Yun Meng Xin.

"Y-Young master!!"

The Yan Huang Alliance's players were all dumbfounded. They never thought that the Sword Emperor would attack Long Tian Yun, and she didn't even hesitate at all. The Sword Emperor didn't even give Long Tian Yun another glance as if he was just a minor character. She didn't stop as she spun, sending her sword flying towards the Yan Huang Alliance players who were still gaping in shock.

Less than a minute later, the Sword Emperor finally stopped. There was not a single person around her still standing; all that remained were disappearing corpses.

The sword flew back into the Sword Emperor's grasp. After turning her wrist, it disappeared, leaving behind only a single person wrapped in gray clothing. Yun Meng Xin had walked over during all of this and stood behind the Sword Emperor. Facing the Sword Emperor, who had once been number 1 on the Heaven Rankings and was a legend among Chinese players, and had just decimated hundreds of players, Yun Meng Xin was able to remain extremely calm. She cautiously said in a soft voice, "Big brother Sword Emperor, although I don't know why you helped, thank you."

The Sword Emperor didn't reply and didn't even turn around to look at her, instead silently walking forward. After taking 3 steps, a shriek tore through the air and flew towards the Sword Emperor.

Clang!!

The ear-splitting sound of metal hitting metal sounded out as the arrow that was about to hit the Sword Emperor spun away from her. The Sword Emperor still didn't turn around, but 30 meters away, Winter of That Year's expression became serious as his face paled. The sword hovered right in front of his forehead, only a pinky finger's distance away from hitting him.

"B-B-B-B-B-Big brother! D-Don't overreact, this little brother was... was just too in awe of what you did, and wanted to have a small spar against you..." as he spoke, cold sweat poured down his body, and he froze. After witnessing the Sword Emperor's power, he was itching to test out that strength. Rather, he decided to play with fire and shot out a 'Crippling Feather Arrow'.

The arrows he shot out were not to be taken lightly. The Flame Emperor couldn't even retaliate against such arrows. Just as the arrow was about to hit the Sword Emperor, he suddenly lost the connection that his mental energy had formed with the arrow... because that arrow had been sent flying by an incredibly strong power. Before he could react, the sword suddenly shot towards his head, and even he, who had far stronger mental energy than normal humans, couldn't react in time.

He had taken quite a great fright, and if his mind wasn't so strong, he would have fallen to the ground in fear.

Winter of That Year was completely certain that if the Sword Emperor hadn't stopped the sword right there, he would have a massive hole in his head.

Clang...

The sword flew back to the Sword Emperor, who still did not turn around, and silently left. The speed at which the Sword Emperor walked didn't seem very fast, but in just a few moments, she was already quite far away. Very soon, she had completely disappeared.

"Whew..."

Winter of That Year fell to the ground, his heart rapidly thumping. He was not a coward and was someone who knew that he would die in a year, so there was nothing to be afraid of.

However, for that sword to suddenly shoot right in front of his forehead without him being able to react... that was simply too terrifying. It had caused him to sweat many years' worth of a cold sweat. After putting away his Bow, he muttered to himself, "I thought that a special ability obtained at the cost of one's lifespan would make one a god. Who would have thought there would be such a monster! Controlling a sword from a distance, and at such a speed that even I couldn't react in time! Even the boss would find it difficult to block my arrows... Did this guy eat a legendary Great Asura Golden Pellet?"

"Winter, are you alright?" Yun Meng Xin walked over, with an anxious expression. The Sword Emperor's appearance had resulted in the deaths of the Yan Huang Alliance's players, but would also cause Long Tian Yun to become furious, and for his next move to become even more savage. Although she trusted Ling Chen, she couldn't help but worry even more about the new city.

"It's him!" Winter of That Year finally stood up and spoke as he looked towards the direction the Sword Emperor had walked.

"Hmm?" Yun Meng Xin was a bit confused.

A month ago, I felt someone observing us. Although I felt it quite a few times, I always passed it off as me overthinking. I was overconfident and thought that no one could evade my senses... However, it seems that I was being too arrogant. This person deserves the title of 'Emperor', and is much more terrifying than the rumors make them out to be," Winter of That Year said sincerely. This was the first time he had earnestly praised someone before in recent years, "However, luckily, he's not an enemy.

Otherwise, I definitely would have been insta-killed by him just now. Err, big sister goddess, I remember that the Sword Emperor should be part of the Yan Huang Alliance. Why would he suddenly help us? Plus, he's been here for at least a month and is evidently helping to protect the new city."

Chapter 545 – The Imminent Crisis

Yun Meng Xin shook her head, “I don’t know, it’s the first time I’ve spoken to her.”

Although Yun Meng Xin was sure that the Sword Emperor had acted because of Ling Tian, she wasn’t certain what the main reason was.

“Oh…” Winter of That Year replied, then looked down as he said apologetically, “I’m sorry, I couldn’t properly protect this place, and allowed the Yan Huang Alliance to find it. I… I…”

Yun Meng Xin smiled, “It’s fine. If it wasn’t for you and Hundred Miles of Ice, the new city would have long since been discovered. I only feel eternal gratitude towards you both. For you to be able to protect the new city until today is already quite amazing, and I have no idea how to repay you… if the Ling Tian City is built, if you’re willing to stay, I’ll wholeheartedly welcome you both.”

The one who suffered the most from the new city being discovered was Yun Meng Xin. However, not being able to fulfill the promise made at the beginning of this endeavor, and being comforted by Yun Meng Xin, Winter of That Year felt incredibly guilty. He gripped his fists tightly together, then opened them as his expression became vicious and he said with great determination, “Big sister, don’t worry. Although the boss and I are quite weak, if the Yan Huang Alliance attacks again—even if we die tens of times—we’ll still stop them.”

He then scratched his head, feeling vexed as he said, “The boss left at such a bad time. If he was here... Ai, forget it. With Long Tian Yun coming here, even if the boss killed them all, Long Tian Yun would have come back.”

“Don’t worry, as long as Ling Tian comes back, everything will be fine,” Yun Meng Xin said as she smiled, her voice full of confidence. Hearing this, Winter of That Year paused for a second, then looked at Yun Meng Xin before a look of sadness briefly appeared in his eyes, then disappeared. He grinned, “Ling Tian, eh? I quite want to meet this legendary figure. Even the boss is quite interested in him.”

.....

Bamboo Sea Wonderland:

After receiving the news from Li Xiao Xue, Chao Ying and Chao Xi realized how serious the situation had become and immediately left the game. They went to where Ling Tian and Tian Tian stayed and entered the hall. They saw Tian Tian holding a large bowl, drinking some soup she had made and looking rather lonely.

“Big sister Ying, big sister Xi!” seeing them come in, Tian Tian happily stood up, “Have you eaten lunch yet? I’ve got a lot of soup here; it’s very yummy!”

“We’ve already eaten,” Chao Ying replied. She looked at the time; it was already 2 pm. She walked over and asked, “Tian Tian, why are you only now eating lunch? Where’s master?”

“I finished making lunch ages ago, but I couldn’t wake big brother up from the game. I waited until now, but big brother still hasn’t come out, so I decided to eat first by myself,” Tian Tian replied. Normally, Ling Chen would come out from the game to eat at the same time every day, but occasionally, (because of some special circumstances such as important quests or fighting powerful Bosses) he wouldn’t be able to immediately leave the game at his normal time. As such, Tian Tian was unconcerned. Tian Tian knew that there was probably something important going on within the game, which was why Ling Chen couldn’t come out.

Chao Xi and Chao Ying looked at each other, then said to Tian Tian, “Tian Tian, you can continue to eat. We’ll go take a look.”

They went to Ling Chen and Tian Tian’s room, and saw Ling Chen peacefully lying on the bed, his game bracelet activated. Since the situation was so urgent, they needed to wake him up at once. They stood on his left and right and repeatedly called out to him; they told him about the danger the new city was in, but there was no reaction from him, nor did he exit the game.

After about 15 minutes, Tian Tian finished eating lunch and came over. Chao Xi and Chao Ying asked her worriedly, “Tian Tian, how long does master usually remain like this?”

“Umm…” Tian Tian thought about it seriously, “I’m not sure. Sometimes it’ll just be a bit longer, sometimes it will be a lot longer. The longest time… he ate breakfast and only came out at midnight. Big brother’s probably doing a very dangerous quest at

the moment. Big brother said that for some quests if you leave halfway through, all of the progress would have been for naught. Big brother will probably be done and come out soon though."

The new city was facing the Yan Huang Alliance! Moreover, the new city's defensive capabilities were incredibly weak; let alone the Yan Huang Alliance, even a moderately-sized guild could destroy it. Their only hope was Ling Chen, who had decimated the 3 largest guilds in the East Ocean Continent. The Yan Huang Alliance could attack the new city at any time, and the new city drew closer to danger every second. If Ling Chen did not come by the time the Yan Huang Alliance began attacking, then the consequences would be unimaginable, and the situation would be beyond hope.

As such, they simply couldn't wait.

"Tian Tian, today, you need to stay by master's side. If master comes out, you need to tell him that the new city has been discovered by the Yan Huang Alliance and that he needs to immediately go and protect the new city!" Chao Ying said.

"Ah? I... I've got it." Tian Tian nodded in confusion. Although she didn't know what this 'new city' was, seeing how anxious Chao Ying and Chao Xi looked, she knew that something big had happened.

.....

Ling Tian City:

How could the Fairies and Dwarves not notice the ruckus that the Yan Huang Alliance's players had caused? When Yun Meng Xin returned, the 2 clans' leaders immediately went up to her. Greenwood frowned as he asked seriously, "Have we been discovered?"

Yun Meng Xin nodded, "In the end, we were still discovered. Chief Dilo, how long will it take for the city to be completed if we work as fast as possible?"

"3 days! 3 days will be enough... Great Moon Goddesses, please don't let anything happen to our new home," Chief Dilo said emotionally. During these few months, he had sufficiently understood the situation in the Forgotten Continent, as well as the factions in the human world. Moreover; he also understood what the consequences of this new city being discovered were. All of the Dwarves were praying day and night for the new city not to be discovered. However, what they were most afraid of had already happened.

"3 days..." Yun Meng Xin repeated this in a low voice as she replied, "Chief Dilo, please do your best to calm all of our Dwarven friends down; don't panic, no matter what. Put all of your efforts into completing the new city, and don't worry about anything else."

"I've got it! Don't worry, we Dwarves have experienced so much and have suffered many hardships. How could we lose our composure over something small like this?" Chief Dilo said resolutely.

“We’re unable to interfere in the conflicts between you otherworlders. We’ll have to rely on you to deal with this crisis. All we Fairies can do is provide high-grade consumables,” Greenwood calmly said, “If there’s anything else we can do, let us know.”

Yun Meng Xin nodded, then gave a relaxed smile, “Chiefs, please don’t worry. Although we’re unable to borrow your strength, I’m certain we’ll be able to get through this crisis. After 3 days, the storm will have passed and the skies will be clear again. All of this is just a light drizzle to welcome the completion of the Ling Tian City.”

Although the Fairies were powerful, they were unable to participate in the defense of the city. The heavy responsibility of protecting the city fell on Yun Meng Xin. As such, no matter how worried she felt, she had to look relaxed and confident in front of the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan.

“That’s right, that’s right!” Chief Dilo became relaxed as well, as a look of gratitude and excitement appeared on his face, “I’m sure our Dwarf Clan’s great benefactor, little friend Ling Tian will definitely come. He even defeated the guardian god who has protected our Dwarf Clan for 10,000 years. I’m sure it will be incredibly easy for him to defeat these otherworld intruders.”

Greenwood laughed, nodding his agreement. He had personally witnessed Ling Chen’s power before.

Winter of That Year, who still felt quite guilty, lowered his head

as he stood behind Yun Meng Xin, not daring to say anything. Hearing Dilo and Greenwood mention Ling Tian, as well as their praise towards him, his eyes flashed. After looking at Yun Meng Xin, his desire to meet Ling Tian increased even more.

This Ling Tian... what did he do to deserve the good graces of so many people?!

At that moment, Yun Meng Xin's communication device rang out. Yun Meng Xin looked at it and immediately picked it up. Li Xiao Xue's voice sounded out, "Meng Xin, there's a piece of bad news."

"What is it?" Yun Meng Xin's heart tightened. At such a critical time, the last words she wanted to hear were 'bad news'.

"Ling Tian is currently in the game. He's been in there from early morning until now, but he hasn't come out. I told my 2 little sisters to call him, but he hasn't responded at all. Evidently, there are some special circumstances from which he can't extricate himself. You know that Ling Tian has cut-off all communication within the game, so it's impossible for us to communicate with him from inside," Li Xiao Xue said solemnly as she spoke with a heavy expression.

"You're saying..." every sentence Li Xiao Xue spoke, Yun Meng Xin's heart felt a bit heavier.

"Currently, Tian Tian's staying by Ling Tian's side. If Ling Tian comes out from the game, Tian Tian will immediately tell him

about the situation. However, I don't know when Ling Tian will come out from the game, nor does anyone else. It could be immediately, or in 1 or 2 hours... or 1 day or 2 days... or even longer!"

Yun Meng Xin: "....."

After deeply sighing, Li Xiao Xue continued, "In this sort of situation, we can't bet on the best-case scenario, which is Ling Tian coming out of the game as soon as possible. This is because we can't afford to make such a bet! If we bet incorrectly, we will have wasted all of our blood, sweat and tears, and we will have destroyed the city that the 2 clans placed so much hope in! We must plan according to the worst-case scenario, which is that Ling Tian cannot make it at all."

Hearing Li Xiao Xue's words, Yun Meng Xin felt as if thunder was booming in her ears. The new city had been discovered by the Yan Huang Alliance and was faced with the threat of destruction. Yun Meng Xin had been worried, but she didn't panic because she was completely confident that even against the Yan Huang Alliance, Ling Tian would be able to protect the new city. Ling Tian had become her mental support regarding the new city's crisis; if Ling Tian really didn't appear, this support would completely crumble.

Chapter 546 – For Her…

"What happened?" Seeing Yun Meng Xin's eyes become lifeless, Greenwood frowned as he asked caringly.

Yun Meng Xin put down the communication device, and her stiff expression was replaced with a smile. Li Xiao Xue's news caused her heart to fall into disarray, but she couldn't panic. At least, on the surface she couldn't panic, because her emotions would also affect the Fairies and the Dwarves, "Chief Greenwood, Chief Dilo, please rest assured that we will definitely get through this without any trouble. Chief Greenwood, I remember that your clan can use Nature's energy to quickly grow vines. Is that possible here? And if so, how long can the vines remain for?"

Chief Greenwood seemed to understand what Yun Meng Xin was thinking. His eyes lit up as he nodded, "This place is quite close to the Fairy Forest, so Nature's energy is quite dense here. Although the efficacy can't compare to when we're within the Fairy Realm, it's definitely possible. The vines that we create will remain forever unless they're destroyed or we release them. For the current otherworlders, the walls of vines put up by ordinary Fairies will take them quite some time to destroy."

"Very well. Chief Greenwood, as well as all of the other Fairy friends, please build a wall of vines that are at least 5 meters tall and 45 kilometers long at the north end of the new city. Of course, the longer it is, the better. Chief Greenwood, with all of the Fairies helping, is it possible to do this before the end of today?"

Greenwood thought for a moment before solemnly nodding, "It

should be no problem. However, the west, east, and south... we won't be able to cover those."

Yun Meng Xin shook her head, "It's fine; it's more important that we protect the north. Before, even with the strength of the current players, it was only possible for a very small number of people to reach this place. However, for Long Tian Yun to bring so many people this last time, the only possibility is that they found a safe route from a town in the north to here. This sort of route is incredibly rare, and it's essentially impossible for them to find another one.

"As such, if they want to attack the city, they will need to first arrive at Little Peace Town, then go to the Azure Forest Village. If Long Tian Yun bought teleport scrolls from the Azure Forest Village, it's likely they'll directly teleport there. No matter where they attack from, they'll come from the north. If they try to attack from other directions, they'll need to pass through high-level monster territories, which might decimate their troops before they even arrive. Thus, we only need to protect the north."

"I'll immediately take the Fairy Clan to do this!" Knowing how dire the situation was, Greenwood didn't dare to dally and quickly left.

"Chief Dilo, please tell all of the Dwarf friends that your job is to complete the new city as soon as possible. These few days, please stay calm and put all of your efforts into building the city. Don't worry about anything else! No matter how fierce the battle outside is, or how desperate the situation seems, ignore it all. Even if the enemies have broken through our defenses and have rushed into

the city standing right next to you, just ignore them. By doing your best to construct the city, all of you will be fighting an important fight."

"I understand! We Dwarves will do our best to fight to protect our home! The heavens will protect all of us!" Dilo spoke emotionally as he raised his hands high in the air. He then turned and rushed back into the new city while yelling, and personally joined the other Dwarves in constructing the city. The Fairies all gathered together, then split into 2 teams, which headed to the west and east... even Cai'Er was included among them. A 5-meter-tall, 1-meter thick wall of vines sprouted out from the ground amidst green light, rapidly extending in an arc towards the north.

By now, Yun Meng Xin had completely calmed down. She picked up her communication device as she called Yun Feng, "Big brother, there's something I need your help with... Where are you? I'll talk to you face to face."

After asking where Yun Feng was, Yun Meng Xin disappeared amidst a flash of white light, leaving behind the perplexed Winter of That Year. Seeing the wall of green vines rapidly extending, his jaw dropped as he scratched his head and stamped his feet. He heard some noise behind him as he suddenly turned around and saw Hundred Miles of Ice, who had finally returned. His emotions burst out, "Boss!!!!!! Why did you take so long!!!!"

Hundred Miles of Ice expressionlessly took a step back. He was already used to outbursts like this as he calmly replied, "Quest."

Hundred Miles of Ice's calmness made Winter of That Year want

to go crazy. He roared, “Something bad happened, you know!! This place was discovered! And it was the Yan Huang Alliance, personally led by Long Tian Yun!!!!”

Hundred Miles of Ice’s eyebrows jumped. Evidently, this piece of news affected even him greatly.

Previously, he had stood guard with Winter of That Year in front of the Azure Forest Village because of Winter of That Year. However, Winter of That Year hadn’t decided to leave after calming down. Instead, he had continued to stand guard. After a while, guarding the new city had become a duty he had set for himself. His reward was the satisfaction of seeing the new city grow day by day, as well as a faint sense of happiness.

“Forget it... Boss, I can’t really blame you for this. No one could have known that this would happen while you were away. I can only blame myself for being useless,” Winter of That Year sat on the ground as he powerlessly spoke and looked at the wall of vines. No one, including Yun Meng Xin, blamed Winter of That Year. She felt only gratitude towards him, as well as that she owed him. The only person who felt guilty was Winter of That Year, who put all of the blame on himself.

“Boss, while I was still unconscious, you entered the virtual world and have many more years of experience than I do. You understand the Yan Huang Alliance more than I do, and you definitely know that the Yan Huang Alliance won’t allow this city to exist. However, both of us know that the new city has practically no defenses... Only tens of thousands of Dwarves and a few thousand Fairies, but they’re all NPCs.

“You told me that at its peak, the Yan Huang Alliance had tens of millions of players. How can this weak city survive?” He pointed in front of him, “With just this wall of vines? It’s created by the powerful Fairies, and a player would not be able to open a hole even in hours. However, facing hundreds of thousands, or even millions, of players, how long can it last?”

Hundred Miles of Ice silently sat down next to Winter of That Year, his eyebrows still knit into a frown.

Winter of That Year continued to speak, “I wasn’t able to keep the promise that I so boldly made; it was all because of me. As such, no matter what, I must take responsibility. I’ll stay here and defend against the intruders… Even I can’t stop them anymore… Even if I have to use that ability.”

Hearing Winter of That Year’s words, the calm Hundred Miles of Ice suddenly stood up as he stared at him.

“Heh… You think I’m crazy, right? Or maybe that I’ve become incredibly stupid?” Winter of That Year laughed self-mockingly, “I made a promise to someone who I had just met and stood guard here for a few months, using up what little of my lifespan I had left. I completely ruined my plan of traveling around the entire Mystic Moon, and I even dragged you in with me. And now, in order to make up for my failure, I’m willing to make myself turn into an idiot… Boss, you must think that I’m the most ridiculous person in the world, right?”

Hundred Miles of Ice: “……”

“Boss, have you ever met someone where the instant you saw her… you felt as if your body, soul, and even the whole world was melting? To the point that you couldn’t feel yourself breathing, or your own heartbeat? When she speaks, you believe there’s nothing more beautiful in the world? Or that her eyes are so beautiful that you don’t dare to keep looking for fear of defiling them? A person who your soul tells you to give everything for them, despite not knowing who they are, or if they’re a good person or bad person?”

Hundred Miles of Ice: “……”

Winter of That Year closed his eyes as he said softly, “I’m sure you haven’t met such a person, or you would have acted even more stupid than I am now. However, I met such a person. My brain capacity is far greater than a normal person’s, so perhaps that’s why I reacted much stronger than most people would to such a thing. However, I’ve completely fallen for her. Before, I only used silly ways to flirt with pretty girls for fun. After all, I only have 1 year of lifespan left, so I want to have fun. However, I’m not playing around this time. Although I know I’m not good enough for her, and that she already has someone else within her heart, I don't care.

“Perhaps if I had a normal person’s lifespan, I would do my best to chase after her. However, I don’t have that sort of right. If she really fell for me, I would be overjoyed, but I would silently leave to a place where she could never find me so that she could forget about me…

“Haha… Of course, that’s impossible. As such, I can rest easy. Boss, do you know how happy and blissful I feel to be able to see her everyday, and to help her? I feel that, apart from not being able to meet my parents again, there’s nothing else that I regret in this life.”

Hundred Miles of Ice slowly sat back down next to Winter of That Year and remained silent. He had never met someone like what Winter of That Year had just described. However, something that would never change was that he would protect this person next to him and never abandon him.

Back then, during the intense explosion, Winter of That Year had used his body to shield him and had lost consciousness for 6 years as a result. He had walked along the boundary between life and death countless times. After Winter of That Year finally woke up after those 6 years, how could Hundred Miles of Ice abandon him?

……

A dark world:

Within the perfectly dark world Ling Chen had no idea where he was going, nor did he know how much time had passed. He was pulled forward by the Lunar Scourge, unable to see anything at all.

Where is this place?

Where’s the Lunar Scourge taking me?

These 2 questions surfaced in Ling Chen’s mind thousands of times.

Chapter 547 – Desperate Straits

Within the dark world Ling Chen had no idea that already half a day had passed in the outside world, nor did he know how desperately he was needed. Although there were countless people calling for him and hoping for him to appear, he, who had been cut off from the rest of the world, definitely would not make it back in time.

There were more and more players who had completed their second profession upgrade, and every day, there would be countless more players rushing towards their second profession upgrade. As this happened, the date for the Royal City to be unlocked came closer and closer. Many large guilds and families had long since made preparations to charge into the Royal City as soon as it opened.

During this period of time, where the focus was ‘second profession upgrade’ and the ‘Royal City’, extremely explosive news spread out among the Forgotten Continent’s players.

“What? Constructing a city? Almost complete? 2,000 square kilometers? And it’s not the Yan Huang Alliance… Are you sure?!”

“Did you hear? Our China region’s City Creation Token was dropped ages ago! The new city is almost complete, and it’s said that the city is to the south of the Azure Forest Village! This has been completely verified! Moreover, it doesn’t belong to the Yan Huang Alliance! If it was the Yan Huang Alliance, the entire world would have known about this by now; why would they do it so secretively?”

“Of course, I heard about it! Who doesn’t know about this? This is something that was confirmed by the Yan Huang Alliance; it’s definitely true. Holy crap, which big faction was so OP that they obtained a City Creation Token so early? However, now that they’ve been discovered by the Yan Huang Alliance, they’re completely screwed. The Yan Huang Alliance will definitely go destroy it so that the City Creation Token will appear again, and then snatch over the City Creation Token! What? They haven’t even finished constructing it? Fudge! Won’t it just be like playing around for the Yang Huang Alliance then? If they can save this city, I’ll run around the Forgotten Continent 3 times!”

“Alliance master! Big news! The City Creation Token has appeared, and the new city is about to be completed. It’s to the south, and we don’t know who it belongs to!”

……

“President! We just received a shocking report! The City Creation Token you’ve been looking for has already been found… They’re building a city south of the Azure Forest Village!”

……

“All members, pay heed! Each of the 5 halls are to assemble all players within 5 hours. Apart from those necessary to defend, our entire alliance will gather at our headquarters! This operation will affect our honor and future development, so no absences will be excused!”

.....

“To be able to construct a player’s city is my, as well as the entire alliance’s, dream. We have the ability and power to construct a magnificent city, but we’ve never been able to obtain a City Creation Token. This is our biggest chance! We definitely can’t let this opportunity slip by. Assemble the entire alliance!”

.....

“The City Creation Token has appeared, and we don’t need to look for it! This time, the Yan Huang Alliance is determined to obtain it, as are many other factions. However, we still have a chance! We’re going to fight for it honorably! Weaklings have no right to possess the City Creation Token. Brothers, assemble the entire alliance! How can we miss out on this battle? We’re the truly powerful ones! Even if the Yan Huang Alliance snatches it before us, we’ll take it from them!”

.....

As the news about the new city spread, the entire virtual world almost exploded. In every country the appearance of a City Creation Token caused a massive frenzy. This time, it created an even greater uproar because the new city did not belong to the Yan Huang Alliance.

This made players feel incredibly shocked and excited, and it caused countless factions to go crazy because they saw the hope of

stealing the City Creation Token!

After talking to Yun Meng Xin and learning about the situation, Yun Feng froze, unable to speak for a while. He never would have thought that Yun Meng Xin had been acting mysterious, constantly disappearing over the past few months, because she was constructing a new city! The shock it brought to him was greater than even Mars hitting Earth! The words ‘constructing a city’ were simply too dumbfounding.

Hearing that the new city had been exposed less than 3 days away from completion, and that it was Long Tian Yun who had discovered it, Yun Feng was horrified. He, of all people, knew what this meant.

Just as his forehead began to rapidly sweat, his communication device started ringing. Because Yun Meng Xin was present, and he felt incredibly anxious, he didn’t immediately pick it up. However, the communication device repeatedly rang out, forcing him to pick it up. Just as he was about to roar out in anger, he heard the report from the other side, causing his face to become ashen.

“What happened?” Seeing Yun Feng’s face, Yun Meng Xin felt that something was off.

“A very bad piece of news,” Yun Feng gritted his teeth. If Yun Meng Xin hadn’t told him that the new city belonged to her, hearing this news would have made him incredibly excited, and he would have gone to see the fun. However, now that he knew it was hers, this piece of information was incredibly terrible, “Long Tian Yun’s so sinister and malicious! He spread the news about the new

city!”

Yun Feng spoke somewhat hoarsely. This piece of news was simply too cruel to Yun Meng Xin, who was already so powerless.

“What?!” Yun Meng Xin felt as if she had been struck by lightning, and her body began to sway.

Yun Feng gripped his fists together, the whites of his knuckles showing, “According to normal logic, after discovering the new city Long Tian Yun should have suppressed this information, then secretly destroyed the new city to obtain the City Creation Token. With the Yan Huang Alliance’s power, this should have been extremely easy. However, if this news was spread other guilds and alliances would come to fight for the City Creation Token as well, hindering the Yan Huang Alliance... and yet, Long Tian Yun has spread this news. Long Tian Yun is not an idiot; the only reason he would do such a thing is because he knows of the relationship between you and the new city!”

Yun Feng became more and more emotional as he spoke, and his forehead beginning to drip in a cold sweat, “More likely than not, he spread the news so that the ones who wanted to destroy the new city went from just the Yan Huang Alliance, to countless factions, destroying any hope you have. This is partially revenge for you rejecting him and causing him to lose face. At the same time, he wants to force you to beg him for mercy, or to simply hand over the City Creation Token to him. Moreover, he wants you to know that despite there being so many people desiring the City Creation Token he will still obtain it in the end. He wants to show his arrogance and might to you; he wants to tell you that you’ll never

be able to escape from within his palm.”

“Ding... Ding...”

Yun Meng Xin’s communication device rang and Yun Meng Xin, who appeared to have spaced out, only picked it up after 3 seconds. Looking at the name, "Flowing Clouds and Flying Snow’, Yun Meng Xin quickly answered it, “Xiao Xue, Ling Tian, he... he...”

“He still hasn’t responded. Tian Tian has been calling him the entire time...” Li Xiao Xue’s voice sounded quite helpless, and after pausing she gave a sigh as she spoke, “Meng Xin, you probably know of that piece of bad news, right?”

“Mm,” Yun Meng Xin said as she nodded.

“Before, with just the Yan Huang Alliance, we were already in a hopeless situation... But now, even if Ling Tian appears, nothing will change... Meng Xin, tell me your plans,” Li Xiao Xue said slowly. Her words were quite cruel, but they were the cold, hard truth.

“Plans...” Yun Meng Xin’s vision became a bit hazy. If Ling Tian didn’t come, how would she defend the city? Perhaps the main defensive force would be Li Xiao Xue’s Snow Moon Loulan, and maybe her big brother would also take the risk to help her. However, what else was there?

With these meager forces, even defending against the Yan Huang

Alliance alone was wishful thinking, let alone countless other forces. Trying to defend would simply result in the people who tried to help her losing everything… There was no other outcome. Moreover, with countless factions attacking, even if Ling Tian returned, he wouldn't be able to defend against all of them.

Give up? At least if they didn't retaliate, they could prevent much death and great losses…

However…

Yun Meng Xin closed her eyes as countless scenes from the beginning of the new city, through the construction progress, flashed through her mind. She softly spoke, "Ling Tian gave me the City Creation Token, but what he gave me wasn't just a token that contained countless people's dreams; it also contained hope for me, as well as the destroyed Hearts Dream. He not only left behind the City Creation Token, but also many other things, and described how he had met the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan. At that time, he had already made a plan, but he didn't tell me. Instead, he gave me these things because he wanted me to create Heart's Dream's future and hope, myself. This was the first time in my life that I believed I could control my own fate.

"As such, I started to work hard, and found you, the Fairy Clan, and the Dwarf Clan. I then went through the Forgotten Continent's history, as well as the rules related to building a city. Afterwards, I focused all of my time and effort into constructing the new city, and did not leave it, day or night. If this new city was built, I would be able to finally have my own freedom. I could wait for Qi Qi and Su Su to come back, and witness an even greater and

more glorious Heart's Dream.

"In order to not let their race go extinct, the Fairy Clan left the Fairy Realm and decided to build their new home in the human world. Every Fairy has done its best, using all of the resources they had stockpiled to help the construction of the city to go faster; they even used mystical wood and mystic stones from the Fairy Realm…

"And the Dwarf Clan, Xiao Xue, they've been working even harder. Every day, all of the Dwarves are covered in sweat, but their smiles are incredibly jubilant. Even the elderly, whose hands and feet shake, and who use walking sticks, work every day, and refuse to rest… Children who have just learned to walk look forward to growing up so they too can help out, because the new city is their hope and their future. If the new city was destroyed, do you know how cruel this would be to them?"

2 streaks of tears slid down Yun Meng Xin's face, "I will continue to protect the new city no matter what; even if Ling Tian doesn't appear, I won't give up. Ling Tian once told us that no matter how desperate the situation seems or how difficult the task is, as long as we're still alive, we can't give up. Because if we don't give up, then a miracle might just happen."

Li Xiao Xue gave a long sigh, "I understand. Meng Xin, just like you, I will persist until the end. Snow Moon Loulan has 90,000 players in total, and all of them will arrive in front of the new city within 3 hours. That's all I can do. Also, not too long ago the Skyfall Dynasty broke off our partnership. However, even if we were still in a partnership, the Skyfall Dynasty still would not help us. After all, they're one of the biggest contenders for the City

Creation Token."

"I understand," Yun Meng Xin replied as she gently wiped the tears from her face.

"Meng Xin, you also have your big bro!" Yun Feng said. Yun Meng Xin's words greatly moved him; she had put everything into this new city. If the new city was destroyed, it was possible that her entire world would shatter. Yun Feng grinned, "I'm going all out this time! I'll bring the entire Disillusion Alliance within 6 hours!"

The Disillusion Alliance was a subsidiary guild of the Yan Huang Alliance. Yun Feng knew exactly what the consequences of this were, but at this moment in time, he couldn't care less. Even if it was akin to a grasshopper stopping a car, in order to protect his little sister's new city, he had to bet everything could.

Chapter 548 – Snow Moon Loulan

“Thank you, big brother,” Yun Meng Xin said, feeling touched. She knew that Yun Feng would help her, and she knew how much pressure this would bring on him, as well as the consequences.

Yun Feng waved his hand, “I’m your big bro; there’s no need to thank me. Meng Xin, give me some teleport scrolls to the Azure Forest Village, then return to the new city. Although the Disillusion Alliance isn’t very big, I’m certain that I’ll be able to assemble everyone within 3 hours, then rush over. Although Long Tian Yun telling so many people about the new city will destroy all hope for the new city’s survival, he will have to pay a price to be able to be the one to obtain the City Creation Token at the end.

“As such, he has to make sufficient preparations, and most likely will not make a move by today. If the Yan Huang Alliance does not make a move, neither will the other guilds because the one who attacks first will become cannon fodder. During this period of time, it’s likely for Ling Tian to return, and we can also search for other aid… aid… That’s right! Xiao Qiu Feng can help us!”

The Battle Alliance was one of China’s 10 biggest guilds, and it was larger than even the Disillusion Alliance, and Snow Moon Loulan added together. Although it was a subsidiary guild of the Yan Huang Alliance, this was only in name, and they only possessed a relationship on the surface. In reality, the Battle Alliance was completely independent, and Xiao Qiu Feng would not allow his Battle Alliance to become a true subsidiary. If the Battle Alliance was willing to stand on the side of the new city, they would be a great help.

After sending off Yun Meng Xin, Yun Feng gave the order for the entire alliance to assemble within 2 hours, then hurriedly went to the Battle Alliance. He had been close friends with Xiao Qiu Feng since they were young, and Yun Meng Xin was close with his little sister, Xiao Qi. The new city also contained some of Xiao Qi's hopes, so it wasn't impossible for Xiao Qiu Feng to help protect the new city.

After entering the Battle Alliance without any issues, Yun Feng quickly reached Xiao Qiu Feng. Before he could speak, Xiao Qiu Feng coldly spoke, "If you've come to ask me to help protect the new city, then don't waste your words."

This one sentence forced back all of the words that Yun Feng had wanted to say. He paused in shock for a moment before replying, "You already know that the new city is related to my little sister?"

"Oh? Your little sister? It wasn't Ling Tian?" Xiao Qiu Feng sounded quite surprised, but he calmly continued, "It's said that the city is nearly completed, and taking into account its scale, it would have been in the works for at least 3-4 months. Only Ling Tian would be able to obtain a City Creation Token so early on. So Ling Tian gave the City Creation Token to your little sister."

"That's right!" Yun Feng gritted his teeth, "You should know that my little sister has essentially no defenses. For the new city to be exposed, she has no way to defend against such a large-scale attack! Even if my Disillusion Alliance goes, they'll be almost useless. What's even worse is that Ling Tian is missing, and we can't contact him. Xiao Qiu Feng, you must help me with this!"

“Tell me this first, if my Battle Alliance goes, what are the odds of successfully protecting the new city?”

“…” Yun Feng moved his lips as his face became red, unable to say anything. The answer was quite obvious, as well as quite cruel… Unless some miracle happened, even if there were 10 Battle Alliances, they still would not be able to save the new city. Moreover, even if a miracle happened, it wouldn’t be the Battle Alliance that would create it.

“And tell me, if my Battle Alliance goes, what are the consequences that we’ll have to bear?” Xiao Qiu Feng continued.

Yun Feng’s throat went dry, unable to reply.

Xiao Qiu Feng continued to speak calmly, “Countless factions want to obtain the City Creation Token. Anyone who has even a bit of confidence in obtaining the City Creation Token will be attacking. Even if there are not thousands of factions, there’ll still be a few hundred… one hundred, at the very least. Anyone who dares to go will have a formidable force. Moreover, with the Yan Huang Alliance attacking with their full force, I don’t think there’s any faction in the world who could defend against them.

“If my Battle Alliance goes, the only result will be my people being completely annihilated. Protecting the new city is simply a joke. At most, we’ll buy a bit more time, but we’ll also receive retaliation from the Yan Huang Alliance after and will be mocked and suppressed by the other guilds for a long time. Yun Feng, why

would I sacrifice my guild for a new city that has nothing to do with me, and bear those consequences?”

“I understand all of that.” Yun Feng’s voice sounded quite helpless. Xiao Qiu Feng’s words had clearly shown his position, but Yun Feng felt reluctant to give up. Xiao Qiu Feng was the only support he could find. If even Xiao Qiu Feng refused, then any other reinforcements would simply be wishful thinking, “However, the new city doesn’t just belong to my little sister, but also Ling Tian, and the entire Heart’s Dream, which includes your little sister, Qi Qi!”

Xiao Qiu Feng: “……”

“Heart’s Dream was destroyed by the Yan Huang Alliance. After Ling Tian left, the girls also went their ways, so that they could become stronger and create a stronger Heart’s Dream. This new city can be said to be the new Heart’s Dream! Xiao Qiu Feng, after your little sister returns, do you want her to see more hopelessness and destruction? As a man, there are things that you should do and things that you shouldn’t do-for my little sister; I would rather act recklessly and disregard the consequences! Moreover, without trying, how do you know what will happen? Perhaps the time that your Battle Alliance buys will be enough for Ling Tian to get back!”

Xiao Qiu Feng deeply breathed in, and tilted his head up as he coldly replied, “Yun Feng, after knowing me for so many years, do you not know what sort of person I am? After I make a decision, I don’t go back on it.”

“Sorry for taking up your time.” Yun Feng didn’t waste any

words as he turned and heavily walked away.

Yun Feng's words sounded so heavy that Xiao Qiu Feng's heart trembled. He walked forwards and raised his hand in the air, but then let it fall powerlessly as he watched Yun Feng walk further and further away.

Yun Feng, please don't blame me… At least you have a little sister who can make you act recklessly so as to disregard any consequences. However, Qi Qi has reached the point that doctors said would be the end of her life and still hasn't come out from within the game. I'm unable to eat or sleep properly, and I'm afraid that she'll pass away before she comes out of the game. I desperately want her to come back and for the "miracle" that she told me was about to happen to occur finally…

I don't have any strength or mind to worry about anything else.

"All Hall Masters, heed my orders! Assemble all of your players as soon as possible, and wait for further orders!"

After giving this order, Xiao Qiu Feng left the game. Recently, he had spent most of his time outside of the game. Xiao Qi still hadn't returned from the game, and her time was nearly up. He had not been able to feel at peace for a while.

……

North of the new city, a gigantic, 5-meter-tall, 1-meter-thick wall

of vines was rapidly growing, and it extended as far as the eye could see.

Not only did the wall of vines block the front of the new city, but it also blocked in front of the Fairies and Dwarves. 3 people stood in front of the wall of vines: Yun Meng Xin, Winter of That Year, and Hundred Miles of Ice.

At this moment, a snow-white shadow quickly approached from the distance and reached them in an instant. Seeing her name, Winter of That Year yelled out, “Mu Bing Yao... Wah! Are you the Frozen Hearted Man-Eater on the Heaven Rankings?”

“Big sister Bing Yao, you’re here,” Yun Meng Xin walked over. She hadn’t seen Mu Bing Yao in a while, and seeing her now, she felt much more reassured.

However, Mu Bing Yao arriving didn’t mean that the entire Dark Night had come. They were all deathgods of the Dark Night and were Reapers who only obeyed Ling Chen’s orders. They didn’t fight in such open battles, being unsuited for large scale battles. Moreover, without Ling Chen’s orders, they wouldn’t expose themselves.

After Mu Bing Yao arrived, a large crowd appeared behind her. The Snow Moon Loulan, with Li Xiao Xue personally leading them, had arrived even faster than Li Xiao Xue had said.

“92,730 people in total, all female. I never thought that I would have to bring them out so early,” Li Xiao Xue said as she casually

waved her hand and the players behind her fell in ranks. The age of the Snow Moon Loulan's players covered a great range. The youngest was around 13 or 14, and the oldest was around 40 or 50. The Snow Moon Loulan was publicly acknowledged to be the largest female guild in the world.

At their peak, they had more than 500,000 players. However, in the Mystic Moon world, Li Xiao Xue had changed her focus from fighting to expanding financially. As such, the Snow Moon Loulan seemed to fall into stasis; they began developing secretly, and their scale was much smaller than in the past. The current Snow Moon Loulan contained the cream of the crop, and none of them were new.

A guild of 90,000 players was by no means small, but in front of the Yan Huang Alliance, as well as all of the other factions, they seemed incredibly small and weak.

Although they were all female players, they were all extraordinarily disciplined. After arriving, not a single one of them spoke, and they all had serious and determined looks on their faces. After standing in their ranks, they gave off a faint sense of bloodlust. Their equipment was all excellent and could make anyone drool. With the Li family's vast finances, how could the Snow Moon Loulan's players not possess the best equipment?

Winter of That Year looked around with wide eyes. 2 eyes were not enough with which for him to look at all of these beauties.

It was the first time in his life that he had seen so many women!

Winter of That Year's respect for Li Xiao Xue skyrocketed to new levels; this little beauty was simply too amazing. She had built such a large guild, comprised entirely of women, and brought them all here. This was definitely the eighth wonder of the world!

2 hours later, another large wave of people arrived. This time, it was Yun Feng's Disillusion Alliance, who numbered 138,000 players.

In total, there were 230,000 people.

This was all of the defensive power they had.

Although more than 200,000 people had arrived, it was incredibly quiet. The storm had not yet arrived, but the dark, foreboding clouds that hung in everyone's hearts gave off a suffocating feeling.

Chapter 549 – Pure White Maiden

Time passed minute by minute, second by second, gradually approaching midnight. In front of them, everything was silent.

Every 10 minutes, Yun Feng would ask the scouts to give reports as to whether the large guilds had made any moves. The Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan's players continued to stand guard, and not a single person left. Their expressions were surprisingly similar; they were all incredibly calm, without any trace of fear or panic. This was not because they were all incredibly mentally stable but because all of them knew the consequences of defending this place. Just a Yan Huang Alliance was enough to decimate them completely, and there were other factions as well. Since the outcome had already been decided, what was there to be afraid of or nervous about?

Players rarely appeared at the Azure Forest Village, but countless players arrived there today. After seeing each other, none of them spoke, and all headed towards the same place. The Item Shop. The Item Shop usually had quite poor business, but the threshold was almost destroyed by players continuously stepping on it. They only bought one thing, which was the Azure Forest Village's teleport scrolls, which they bought in the thousands and ten thousand. In a single day, over 10 million teleport scrolls were bought, making the proprietress of the Item Shop delirious with joy.

As the clock struck midnight, the old day ended and a new day began. The people defending in front of the new city tensed, looking into the distance silently: Yun Meng Xin, Mu Bing Yao, Winter of That Year, Hundred Miles of Ice, Li Xiao Xue and Yun Feng. The 6 of them, 2 of whom were not battle professions, as

well as 230,000 players from the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan were the entirety of the defensive force for the new city.

Within their hearts, they all waited for their only hope... Ling Tian.

Tian Tian stayed by Ling Chen's side the entire time, and Chao Ying and Chao Xing continuously checked up on whether Ling Chen had returned from the virtual world. Every now and then Li Xiao Xue would ask about Ling Chen's condition, but every time the answer would be the same... That Ling Chen still had not come out from within the game. Just like that, their hope began to die, bit by bit.

Yun Feng's communication device suddenly started to ring, as did Li Xiao Xue's. As they simultaneously answered, they revealed the same expression.

"They've finally come!" Yun Feng closed his communication device forcefully as he spoke in a low voice. His eyes became cold and alert as he yelled out, "Disillusion Alliance, heed my orders! Everyone advance by 300 steps, then assemble into battle formation within 3 minutes! Our Disillusion Alliance has been developing in a low-profile manner, and this is our first large-scale battle. Perhaps the battle will be incredibly fierce, and most of you will die. However, though we may be defeated, though we may be killed, we will never flee! Understood?"

"Yes, sir!!"

The sound of more than 100,000 people shouting together was quite deafening, and the entire Disillusion Alliance marched forwards, causing the ground to shake. When they stopped, they formed a perfect wing-like formation, protecting the new city and the Snow Moon Loulan's players behind them. Their task was to protect the new city as much as possible, but protecting women was something that was in every man's nature. As men, how could they allow women to encounter harm, though it was just a virtual game?

All of their expressions revealed that they had completely accepted death as an inevitable outcome and that the new city behind them was doomed to destruction. They all knew that their task today was to use their lives for a desperate final struggle.

Nearly everyone within China's player base of around 1 billion knew where the new city was. Countless discussions were happening, and countless players were coming to watch the fun. And yet, there was only 230,000 standing guard. At this moment, it seemed like a tragedy to them. However, what they didn't know was that them defending the Ling Tian City was something that would bring them glory, something that they would boast of for the rest of their lives.

"Big brother, how many people have the Yan Huang Alliance sent?" Yun Meng Xin calmly asked. It was definitely the Yan Huang Alliance who had acted first. If the Yan Huang Alliance didn't make a move, the other guilds wouldn't do anything either.

"Around... 2 million players," Li Xiao Xue replied.

“W-What?! 2 million players?” Yun Meng Xin did not react, but Yun Feng’s face fell as he yelled out. He had estimated that at most, the Yan Huang Alliance would send 1 million players. After all, 1 million players were already more than enough to completely destroy the new city. As such, he was completely shocked that Long Tian Yun would send out 2 million players. This number caused Yun Feng’s vision to darken, taking away almost all hope.

In the distance, the dust flew into the air as dark masses of dots suddenly started to approach from the distance, coming closer and closer. All of the defenders acted in unison, equipping their weapons almost simultaneously.

“Big brother, Xiao Xue, I’ll leave this to you.” Yun Meng Xin took 2 steps back and calmly smiled.

……

A dark world:

To stay in such a dark and silent place without anyone else around for such a long time felt like torture. If Ling Chen’s mind wasn’t so strong, he might have gone crazy already.

Ling Chen lost track of how long he had been there, and he had continuously been dragged by the Lunar Scourge during that time, step by step as if he was looking for the boundary of this dark world.

Finally...

Ling Chen's eyes found a spot of light.

The bit of light was very faint and would have been undetectable to a normal human's eyes. After being in the darkness for so long, despite this light being so weak, it seemed incredibly bright in Ling Chen's eyes. That bit of light looked like a heavenly light to Ling Chen, causing his mind to become alert again as his heart rapidly thumped.

Light!! It's light!!!

Ling Chen screamed inwardly, and his heavy footsteps became many times faster as he rushed towards the tiny bit of light. The place that the Lunar Scourge was dragging him to just so happened to be towards that light.

As he quickly traveled towards it, the light became clearer and clearer, brighter and brighter. This caused Ling Chen to become delirious with joy... This meant that he wasn't just imagining things.

Only someone who had spent so much time in darkness and isolation would understand how much joy that tiny bit of light could bring.

As he came closer and closer to the light, he found that it was an

orb of light, which had a hint of blue in it. It wasn't the blueness of the sky, nor was it the blueness of the ocean, but a mystical, dream-like, light blue. The orb of light became larger and larger, and after half an hour, Ling Chen finally stood in front of this orb of blue light, looking at a strange scene.

It was a light blue colored crystal ball and was about 1 meter in diameter. This was what was giving off the dream-like blue light. It was the only source of light in this dark world, and because of the boundless darkness which devoured the light, the light seemed extremely faint.

There seemed to be a light blue mist swirling around within the crystal ball, making it difficult to see what was inside the crystal ball. Around the crystal ball, there were blue motes of light slowly floating around, which looked like fireflies. Some floated in front of Ling Chen, and he tried to grab them. When his fingers came into contact with them, they popped like bubbles and dissipated.

The attractive force pulling the Lunar Scourge disappeared. Evidently, the Lunar Scourge was leading him here.

Where... was this place?

"Qi Yue, can you hear me?"

"....."

There was still no response. During this entire trip, even if he

hadn't called her 100 times, it would have been at least 80 times. However, she had not replied this entire time, as if she had completely fallen asleep.

There was nowhere else to go and nothing else around, so Ling Chen could only walk towards this crystal ball.

Standing in front of the crystal ball, countless motes of light sensed a disturbance and hurriedly cleared away. Ling Chen tried to see what was inside the crystal ball, but could only see that same mist. After hesitating for a moment, Ling Chen stretched out his hand and pressed it against the crystal ball.

In that instant, the Lunar Scourge shot out a piercing silver light, which quickly covered the crystal ball and combined with its light blue light. The mist within the crystal ball started to spin rapidly, and at the same time, a wild attractive force dragged Ling Chen forwards before he could react. His 1.8-meter tall body somehow suddenly vanished within the crystal ball that was about 1 meter in diameter.

"Ahh... what happened?"

The world in front of him had completely changed. When Ling Chen came back to his senses, he found that fog surrounded him. It was a completely different world.

He remembered that he had been dragged towards the crystal ball, and had ended up here.

Could this be the world within the crystal ball?

However, the crystal ball was so small - how could this space be so large? Could it be some sort of special magic or illusion?

After looking around in surprise, Ling Chen found that apart from the blue mist, there was nothing else. He prepared to walk forward when his entire body suddenly trembled, his foot pausing in midair. His eyes widened as he dumbly stared in front of him.

This world was completely different to the dark world outside. It was filled with a dream-like, misty blue light. Above, it was pure white, as it was below… as if he was walking on pure, white clouds. In front of Ling Chen, there was a person peacefully lying on the ground.

It was… a small girl.

From her body, she looked around 8 or 9 years old, and she lay curled up like a little kitten. She wore a thin, white dress, and her head was covered by her snow-white hair. Her skin was also completely white, but it was not a sickly white; it looked impossibly pure and flawless, to the point that people wouldn't dare to touch her. Her eyes were closed, her eyelashes quivered, and beneath them was her intricately shaped nose…

This girl's entire body was pure white and looked completely flawless. She was too white and almost melded into this white world, making it difficult for him to see her and causing him to almost step on her.

Chapter 550 – Shadissika

It was the first time Ling Chen had seen a girl like this before: white clothes, white hair, white skin – everything was a pure white color, to the point that his eyes were bewildered. Rather than a girl, Ling Chen was much more likely to believe that she was a fox demon.

However, how could there be a girl here?!

Was she a creature of this strange world?

Ling Chen slowly squatted down gently, for fear of waking up this pure white girl. Although he was quite close to her, he couldn't feel her breathing. All he could see was white; he could see any signs of life.

Could it be that this girl... was dead?

At the end of the dark world, within a blue crystal orb, was a completely white girl in a completely white world... Ling Chen felt like he was in some sort of movie because all of this seemed like more of a fantasy than a fantasy story.

Ling Chen stretched out his hand towards the girl's face, wanting to see if she had any body temperature. As his finger touched the girl's face, a gentle warmth traveled from her face through his finger to his heart, making his body feel incredibly relaxed and pleasant.

He couldn’t understand how someone could possibly have such soft and supple skin. A human’s skin couldn’t give off such a feeling – it felt like a jade sculpture that had been sculpted by nature over millions of years and gradually weathered and nourished by nature’s energy over millions of years.

Just a simple touch caused Ling Chen’s entire heart to tremble. He pulled his hand back and couldn’t bear to touch her again. This girl was simply too pure and flawless, and he felt that touching her would be akin to defiling her, a type of blasphemy.

At this moment, Ling Chen saw that the girl’s long, white eyelashes suddenly moved. Although it was a very faint movement, Ling Chen saw it clearly. He wasn’t sure what to do when her eyelids started to move as well, and her eyes slowly opened.

Everything was completely white, and only her eyes were incredibly dark but bright. They became the most eye-catching things in this white world and looked as stunning as the stars in the night sky.

Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded. He, who was never at a loss as to what to do, felt like his mind went blank when this girl suddenly opened her eyes, rendering him soundless. The girl, whose eyes had just opened, noticed him immediately. Her body remained curled, but she raised her head, looking at the dazed Ling Chen.

As the girl moved, a flowery fragrance wafted over, intoxicating Ling Chen. He watched as the girl gently raised her head, and he was able to see her face properly.

BOOM.....

Ling Chen's consciousness felt as if something had heavily hit it, and his mind went completely blank. Within this white world, he forgot to breathe and couldn't feel his heartbeat. He felt as if everything had been cut off; all that his eyes, heart, mind, and soul could see and feel was this incredibly beautiful, and dream-like, face.

There had never been a lack of beauties around Ling Chen. Shui Ruo was incomparably beautiful and, after being with her for so many years, his taste for beauty had reached new heights. These years, only a few girls and women had truly moved his heart with their beauty. Before today, the most beautiful woman he had ever seen was undoubtedly Qi Yue. He had always believed that she was already the pinnacle of beauty and that such a woman could only appear in the virtual world. It was impossible for such a beautiful demoness to appear in the real world. Yun Meng Xin was also magnificently beautiful and was the only girl in the real world who could compare to Qi Yue.

However, the face in front of him... This girl, who looked less than 10 years old, completely crushed his preconceptions towards beauty.

Qi Yue's beauty was that of a seductive demoness' and could cause him to blank out; it almost made him lose his self-control on

some occasions. Yun Meng Xin's beauty was that of a goddess', and whenever he thought of her looks, he could only marvel in awe. And yet, this girl's beauty... The instant he saw her, he lost control of his mind as if her beauty had stolen his soul.

The beauty and intricacy of this girl's face made Ling Chen feel like there were no words for him to describe her. This was because no matter how elegant one's words were, they would be unable to capture her beauty fully; instead, it would simply be an insult. If Qi Yue's beauty was such that it could not appear in the real world, then this girl's beauty... was simply impossible, and couldn't even be dreamed of.

"How... could there be such a beautiful girl..." Ling Chen shouted inwardly. He had never thought that he would have such a strong response because of someone's looks.

"Big brother, you've finally come to save me."

The girl spoke in a tender voice, which sounded like it came from a heavenly waterfall. Her thin, white eyebrows were uplifted in delight as her dark eyes stared at Ling Chen.

The girl was smiling, and her smile was one of the most beautiful scenes Ling Chen had seen in his life. Looking at her smiling, crescent-eyes, Ling Chen's vision became hazy. His mind trembled, as he started to fall into intoxication; he didn't even hear what she said clearly.

Under Ling Chen's gaze, the girl started to uncurl her body as she

pulled at her white clothing and lazily half-sat up. Her expression still looked just as delighted, “Big brother, can you tell me your name?”

Name…

“I’m called… Ling Chen…”

Ling Chen had said this half-unconsciously. After giving out his name, he seemed to realize something as his body trembled and he wrestled back control of his mind, causing his head to become clear again. Looking at this girl, she still looked incomparably beautiful, but there were many questions within his heart.

Who is this girl? This should be within that crystal ball, so what is she doing here?

How could there be such a beautiful person in the world? She’s so young, so when she grows up, who under the heavens would be able to resist a single smile from her?

Her waking up caused me almost to lose control of myself, and when she saw me she didn’t look shocked or scared, instead, smiling at me happily as if I was her family…

“Ling Chen… What a strange name,” the girl muttered to herself in a small voice before blinking a few times and saying clearly, “Alright, I’ll call you Ling Chen in the future then.”

“Ah… What about you? What’s your name?” Ling Chen calmed himself down as he asked his first question.

“I’m… I’m called…” this was an incredibly simple question to anyone else, but the girl started to hesitate. After thinking for a while, her eyes lit up as she happily replied, “That’s right, my name’s Shadissika! Is Ling Chen going to remember it?”

Sha.. dis… si… ka…

What a strange name!

Ling Chen repeated it a few times and committed it to memory, as he asked in a gentle voice, “Shadissika… is this really your name?”

“Of course it’s my name! Is there something wrong with it?” The girl looked quite confused.

The girl’s face was incredibly white and tender, and Ling Chen felt like he wanted to touch and kiss it. Just suppressing this desire was incredibly difficult. Facing her question, Ling Chen hurriedly replied, “Of course not. Then how about I call you… Sha Sha? Shadissika is a bit long.”

The girl nodded unhesitatingly, “Sha Sha… of course you can! As long as Ling Chen likes it, you can call me whatever you want.”

For him to meet her in such a strange place, Ling Chen was very

wary toward this girl, and yet, she spoke so affectionately with him. She seemed to like saying his name a lot, and whenever she said the words, “Ling Chen,” her eyes would always light up as if she was truly delighted to say this name.

“Alright, Sha Sha,... Can you tell me what this place is? And why you’re hiding in here?” Ling Chen asked as he averted his gaze from her eyes. He was afraid that if he stared for too long, he would simply lose his mind.

In response to Ling Chen’s question, a look of confusion once again appeared in the girl’s eyes. She looked around her, then looked back at Ling Chen as she suddenly smiled, and replied, “No idea.”

“No idea? Then, where’s your home? Where are your parents? And who brought you here?” Ling Chen asked.

After this barrage of questions, the girl still looked quite confused, and she smiled, “I don’t think I know the answer to any of those questions either.”

This girl was simply too pure and flawless, and doubting that she was telling the truth almost seemed like a sin. A word appeared in Ling Chen’s mind – amnesia? This was within the crystal ball, and a person wouldn’t just appear here. They were either brought in by some sort of power or person. Could it be that this girl had lost her memories after being brought in here?

However, she remembered her name.

“Then do you know? Can you tell me?” Ling Chen had wanted to gain some knowledge about this strange space, then find some way to escape. However, it seemed that this plan wasn’t going to work out.

“Hmm…” The girl thought earnestly, then gave an angelic smile as she replied, “I know my name, and that… and that… I knew that you would come to save me.”

“Save you?” Ling Chen was quite shocked, “How did you know that I would come to save you?”

“Eh?” The girl’s smile disappeared as she looked at Ling Chen in shock, “Could it be that you didn’t come here to save me?”

Chapter 551 – 1 Step, 2 Worlds

“Of course, I came to save you. However, how did you know I was coming to save you?” Ling Chen said confidently without reacting at all. As he spoke, he remembered the voice he had heard when he had just entered the dark world, “Are you here to save me?”

Could it have come from this girl?

However, that voice evidently wasn’t a girl’s voice.

The girl smiled cheerfully. She lifted her skirt as she lightly stood up. She was barely up to Ling Chen’s ribs, and she tilted her head back as she looked up, saying earnestly, “Because… I knew.

“Wah! Ling Chen, you’re so tall! You’re so much taller than me!” The girl shouted out something that was completely unrelated to what Ling Chen was asking. She lifted up her arms and stood on her toes, but was still far from how tall Ling Chen was.

“When you grow up, you’ll become taller as well,” Ling Chen said as he smiled.

“Grow up? How can I grow up?” The girl asked in curiosity as she looked at Ling Chen expectantly, waiting for his reply. She stood incredibly close to Ling Chen, less than half a body space away from him-so close that Ling Chen could easily pull her into his embrace. Her words, actions, and expressions made her seem quite intimate with Ling Chen, and did not seem like a stranger at all, nor did she suspect that Ling Chen could be a bad person. Perhaps

within her pure mindset, there was no such thing as a ‘bad person.'

“You don’t have to do anything; you’ll grow bit by bit every day. After a year, you might be this tall,” Ling Chen motioned with his hands, “After another year, you’ll probably be around here. After 7 or 8 years, you’ll be quite tall.”

“Eh?” the girl’s mouth parted as a strange light appeared in her eyes, and she smiled, “I can grow taller after a few years? Hehe… Since Ling Chen said it, I’ll definitely grow bit by bit.”

Ling Chen was quite amused, hearing her words. People grew naturally day by day; this was common sense.

Of course, that was only to humans.

“Sha Sha, apart from your name, as well as knowing that I’d come to save you, do you really not know anything else?” Ling Chen asked seriously.

“Mmmmmmmhm! I don’t remember anything else,” the girl said as she smiled. It was as if she didn’t mind that she didn’t know anything except her name.

“Then… Then…” Ling Chen felt like smashing the ground. He had thought he finally found a way out, but it turned out that this ridiculously beautiful girl knew nothing. He thought for a moment, then asked, “Sha Sha, do you know how long you’ve been here.”

“I don’t know,” The girl replied with her ethereal voice incredibly decisively... It wasn’t that she didn’t know, but that there was no way of knowing. Without anything to serve as a reference, it was impossible to tell how much time had passed.

“Then have you been here the whole time without leaving?”

“Yep, yep! I wanted to leave, but I couldn’t. Afterwards, big brother Ling Chen came to save me.” The girl’s smile became even brighter.

“... What did you do by yourself then?”

“Sleep!”

“... And apart from sleeping?”

“Apart from sleeping? Hmm... Oh, when I’m not sleeping, I’m waiting for Ling Chen to come save me.”

“.....”

Ling Chen was sure that even if he spoke with her for 3 days and 3 nights, he would not be able to obtain any useful information from her. He scratched his head as he looked at the Lunar Scourge. He suddenly thought of something and showed the girl his right wrist, “Sha Sha, do you know what this is?”

Ling Chen had entered the dark world and come to the crystal ball, within which the girl resided, because of the Lunar Scourge. The Lunar Scourge had brought him to this girl, and the girl had confidently told him that she knew he would come and save her... Could it be that there was some sort of connection between this girl and the Lunar Scourge?

The girls' gaze fell on the Lunar Scourge. After looking at it for a while, she leaned forwards to take a closer look. She raised her eyebrows as her lips opened and closed, and she slowly spoke, "Lunar... Scourge..."

Ling Chen felt quite excited as he hurriedly asked, "Sha Sha, have you seen it before?"

"Nope," Shadissika said as she shook her head, "Why does Ling Chen say that?"

"You haven't?" Ling Chen frowned, "Then how do you know its name?"

"Its name... eh? Is 'Lunar Scourge' its name? What a strange name. Look, Ling Chen, its name is carved here. You can see it if you look closely." The girl stretched out a snow-white finger as she pointed at the words 'Lunar Scourge' carved on the edges.

Ling Chen almost smacked himself in the head. So she had been reading the words engraved on the Lunar Scourge!

“Ling Chen,” The girl looked up at him. With how tall she was, she could only fully tilt back her head. Otherwise, she could only see his chest, “Since you’ve found me, why don’t you take me away from here? I don’t like this place, so Ling Chen, can you take me away from here as soon as possible?”

“Alright… but how do I take you away from here?” The desire in the girl’s voice caused his heart to tremble. This girl’s looks were simply too enchanting-even if she were an evil demon, he wouldn’t be able to refuse her. Ling Chen looked around him, but could only see mist. He had no idea how to exit from there.

“It’s very simple!” The girl stretched out her white and tender hand, “You just need to hold my hand and walk forwards. If you keep walking and walking, you’ll be able to talk me away from here. It’s true.”

Hold her hand… Keep walking… Was it that simple?

This…

Ling Chen could only nod and agree, then hold the girl’s outstretched little hand… Immediately, an incredibly soft and supple feeling was transmitted from his palm into deep within his heart, then spread throughout the rest of his body. This caused his heart and body to tremble inadvertently. He hurriedly loosened his grip, afraid that he would accidentally destroy this little hand. However, after he loosened his grip, the small hand held onto him tightly, as if she was afraid that he would let go.

The feeling in his palm caused Ling Chen almost to lose control of his mind, and he didn't talk anymore. He decided to unconditionally believe what the girl had said about the ridiculously simple way to exit, so he gently held her hand and walked out...

The instant he took that step, the white world, and light blue mist suddenly disappeared. In front of him was boundless darkness.

"Wah! Wow! We're out! I finally came out!"

Ling Chen stared in front of him as the girl's joyful cheers sounded out. The movement of the girl's hand told him that she was happily jumping up and down, but she didn't seem like she was going to let go-instead, she began to hold on even tighter.

Ling Chen could see some faint blue light out of the corner of his eye, and blue motes of light floated around in the air. Ling Chen turned around and saw the blue crystal orb. The crystal orb looked exactly as it had when Ling Chen had first seen it, and there was still mist swirling around within it.

The crystal orb looked around 1 meter in diameter, but he had just been inside and had seen how large it was. Holding the girl's hand, he walked out in a single step... In just that one step, he had walked out from the world within the crystal ball to this dark world.

What was this space? Why were there so many things in here that could only appear in fantasy movies? These things couldn't be explained with science!

"Ling Chen, you're so awesome; you took me out so easily. This is great! You're so powerful!"

Ling Chen looked over and saw the girl's eyes filled with tremendous appreciation and worship. Facing the girls' smile, much of the confusion within Ling Chen's heart disappeared as he smiled and asked, "Sha Sha, how did you know I would be able to save you by doing that?"

"I don't know how I know; I just know." The girl continued to grin.

Ling Chen didn't quite know how to respond to this. He looked up in front of him, and said in anguish, "Even though we came out from that place, but even I can't exit from here."

"Does Ling Chen want to go home?" Sha Sha asked.

"Mmm."

"Then will Ling Chen take me with him?"

Ling Chen was a bit surprised, then smiled, "If Sha Sha's willing, then, of course, you can."

This girl was quite mysterious, and Ling Chen knew nothing about her. She seemed to know nothing about him, but it appeared that she did not mind at all. Taking this girl home... Once this thought appeared, it took root within Ling Chen's heart and became something that he could not get rid of. If he could keep a girl like this by his side, the world would gain a beautiful, resplendent pearl... Beauty like this was irresistible to anyone... Including Ling Chen.

"Really? Yay!!" The girl once again started to cheer, her smiling face looking like millions of blossoming flowers. Looking at her, Ling Chen almost spaced out again. The girl raised her other hand high in the air as she held out her pinky finger, "Ling Chen, you said this yourself. Ling Chen's an adult, so you need to keep your promise, and you can't go back on it!"

Ling Chen laughed. He stretched out his pinky finger and hooked it with the girl's pinky finger, "If I can find my way home, I'll definitely take Sha Sha home and won't go back on my word!"

Chapter 552 – Heavy Pressure

Apart from her name, it seemed that this girl also knew of other things. After all, she obviously knew what a pinky promise was. After the big pinky finger and little pinky finger entwined, then shook for a bit, the girl let go with great satisfaction. She pointed towards the blue crystal ball, “Ling Chen, I’ll tell you a secret. This crystal ball contains very powerful magic; if you tell it where you want to go, it will point you in the right direction. It’s true! Ling Chen, as long as you tell it where your home is, it will tell you how to get home. Quickly try it out.”

Ling Chen’s brain froze as he looked at the crystal ball dumbly without doing anything for a while.

After entering this dark world, he had encountered many strange and wonderful things, including the white-haired girl next to her. Her beauty, her background, the place where she resided, were all completely mystical, and if this crystal ball could really do what Sha Sha said it could…

This would be much too fantasy-like!

Standing in front of a crystal ball, telling it where you wanted to go, then having it point out the way for you… This seemed like something that would only happen in a children’s story book. Only kids younger than 3 would believe such a naïve plotline.

However, apart from this, what other option did Ling Chen have?

Since there was only Sha Sha here, and no one else, Ling Chen was afraid of losing face. He stood in front of the crystal ball, adjusted his emotions, then grimaced as he said, “I want to... Return to where I was before I came here.”

Clang...

A strange scene appeared. Just as Ling Chen spoke, the crystal ball suddenly lit up, as the blue motes of light around the crystal ball became denser. Following that, a 2-meter wide ray of blue light shot out from the bottom of the crystal ball, extending as far as Ling Chen could see, creating a blue road of light in this dark world.

“It’s this! If you follow this path, Ling Chen will be able to return to where he wants to go.” Sha Sha said as she pointed at the road of blue light.

Ling Chen stared at it, and his jaw almost fell to the ground.

It... actually succeeded!

What the heck?

Can this be any more fake?

“Ling Chen, let’s quickly go. I want to go home with Ling Chen;

that's what we agreed on." As Ling Chen stared in shock, Sha Sha became incredibly impatient. Only when the little hand vigorously pulled on Ling Chen's hand did he robotically nod his hand, and he held Sha Sha's hand as he stepped onto the blue road.

"Sha Sha, how did you know that the crystal ball was magical?"

"Hmm... I don't know, I just knew it was."

"....."

"Ling Chen, when will we get home?" She began to call his name more and more affectionately and seemed very eager to go to this 'home.' It was as if Ling Chen's home was her home.

"I don't know; it might take a long time, because my home is very far away from here," Ling Chen replied. After entering the dark world, it had taken him a long time to reach the blue crystal ball. If the blue road under his feet were taking him back the same way, it would take the same amount of time... And with a girl by his side, perhaps it would take even longer.

"As long as I'm with Ling Chen, it doesn't matter how long it takes!" The girl loudly said as she looked in front of her.

As they walked forwards, the parts of the blue road that they had already walked on disappeared. This way, even if they stopped to rest, they wouldn't have to worry about going the wrong way. After walking for a while, Sha Sha suddenly stopped walking, but

she didn’t let go of Ling Chen’s hand.

“Are you tired?” Ling Chen turned to face her as he asked caringly. Deep down, he didn’t want this girl who he had just met to endure any pain or suffering.

“No…” Sha Sha shook her head, giving Ling Chen an adorable smile. She used her left hand to slightly lift up her white dress, showing her bare feet, “I’m not wearing any shoes, so my feet are a bit cold. Ling Chen, can you pick me up?”

Sha Sha’s voice and expression, which were filled with hope and expectancy, almost melted Ling Chen’s heart. He couldn’t resist at all, nor did he hesitate as he picked her up, causing her to whoop in joy. She comfortably nestled in his arms and leaned against his chest… He didn’t even consider looking for a pair of shoes in his bag. Sha Sha’s arms were around his neck, and a smile of happiness that could melt mystic ice that had been frozen for 10,000 years was on her face.

As for Ling Chen, both his soul and body felt incredibly satisfied. From the instant he had seen Sha Sha, he had wanted to hug her and kiss her. It was natural for anyone to desire beautiful things, and Sha Sha’s charm was something that Ling Chen could not resist.

Hugging this snow-white girl, a sense of peace and satisfaction blossomed within Ling Chen’s heart, just like when he carried Shui Ruo. He looked at the girl’s face, which even the heavens would be jealous of, and walked forward. With a girl in his arms, his footsteps didn’t become heavier but instead became even lighter.

On the way here, his only companion had been the darkness. However, now, he had a pure white girl affectionately holding on to him. It was the same journey, but the difference was like heaven and earth. Ling Chen reveled in the sensation of holding this girl, and almost wished that the road would go on for longer so he could continue holding this girl.

For Ling Chen to feel this way, this girl was incredibly charming...

.....

North of the new city, dark clouds covered the sky, and the atmosphere was so dense that the players almost couldn't breathe.

The grassy plains, which rarely had players pass over it, was filled with a sea of players. At a glance, this sea of players seemed to extend forever. Above the players, 3 incredibly large, golden flags were blowing in the wind. Each of them was many meters wide, and a single golden character was embroidered on each of them. Together, they spelled out 'Yan Huang Alliance.'

With Long Tian Yun personally leading them, 2,000,000 Yan Huang Alliance players came to attack the new city.

Comparatively, the forces guarding in front of the new city seemed incredibly minuscule. The Yan Huang Alliance had 10 times as many players, and it was only a portion of their strength. On the other hand, the defenders had already brought out all of the

forces that they could muster. What's more, there were, even more, factions coming, looking for an opportunity to strike. With so many armies pressing in, before the battle, the defenders faced such massive pressure that they felt that they were going to collapse. No matter if it was the Disillusion Alliance's players or the women of the Snow Moon Loulan, they were completely ready for death and had no fear in their hearts. However, when the massive armies arrived, they couldn't help but feel their hearts tighten as the hands holding their weapons slightly trembled.

This scene caused Yun Feng and Li Xiao Xue to silently sigh. They had completely expected this. Facing such a view, very few people would be able to remain completely calm.

The Yan Huang Alliance's army did not immediately attack the city. Instead, they all stopped in front of it. After a few minutes of silence, a person came out from the center of the army and unhurriedly moved towards the defenders. Next to him, there were tens of powerful elites wearing golden equipment.

That's right, it was Long Tian Yun. His head was raised, his eyes as piercing as a cold knife. He was riding on a Mottled Tiger. This mount was gifted to him by one of the subsidiary guild's leader and was one of the incredibly rare LV5 mounts in the world. Long Tian Yun was very pleased with this gift and often used it to travel. After all, only the king among beasts was fit to be the mount of the king among men.

After moving to an appropriate distance, Long Tian Yun stopped as he vindictively looked past all the people, towards Yun Meng Xin and the others. He then said in an arrogant tone, "I heard that

Ling Tian has been traveling here and there recently, and went to the East Ocean Continent not too long ago. After coming back, he disappeared and hasn't been seen since. Even now, he hasn't appeared – it seems like he doesn't plan on showing up. Meng Xin looks like you've been abandoned by Ling Tian."

Long Tian Yun's words were evidently targeting Yun Meng Xin, causing Winter of That Year's anger to flare. He stepped forwards as he coldly laughed, "Hoh hoh! So the Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master has been monitoring Ling Tian. Looks like you're quite scared of Ling Tian, eh? Hehe, no wonder why you had the guts to come here-it was because you knew Ling Tian isn't here."

It was true that Long Tian Yun was quite afraid of Ling Chen, but of course, he couldn't admit it. Long Tian Yun's gaze fell on Winter of That Year as he started to wildly laugh, "Me? Afraid of Ling Tian? Hahahaha, if it were just me, of course, I would be scared of him. However, behind me is the Yan Huang Alliance, which can trample on anything under the heavens. Me being afraid of him is a hilarious joke, hahaha...

"However, not seeing Ling Tian here has made me much more at ease. Although he doesn't have the qualifications to make me afraid, he's still quite troublesome. If I wanted to kill him, I'd have to sacrifice quite a lot of resources, which I don't want to do. However, I'm not very happy today. Ling Tian not coming was a surprise, but what makes me even surprised is..." Long Tian Yun's tone became ruthless as his gaze fell on Yun Feng, and stared at him maliciously, "Yun Feng, can you tell me why you came here and brought so many people with you?"

Yun Feng's eyelids jumped, but he looked right back at Long Tian Yun as he expressionlessly replied, "It's as you see it-I'm here to stop you."

"Hahaha..." Long Tian Yun coldly laughed as he narrowed his eyes and said in a cold voice, "It wasn't easy for the Yun family to develop to its current position. To the rest of the world, you're all incredibly high and mighty, but to me, you're just a bunch of businessmen who have had a bit of success. If I want you to prosper, you'll be able to prosper; if I want you to be ruined, you'll be ruined; and if I want to destroy your family, it'll be destroyed! After destroying you, a new 'Yun family' will immediately be established."

Yun Feng's fists were clenched together as his entire body slightly trembled. His teeth were in pain from him tightly gritting them together, feeling like they would break.

"For me to desire Yun Meng Xin is the best thing to happen to your Yun family. However, it's a pity that you've all disappointed me," Long Tian Yun shook his head in disappointment, "However, your Yun family is quite fortunate that my feelings towards Yun Meng Xin haven't changed, and I quite appreciate you as well, Yun Feng. As such, even though you've disappointed me, I'll still give you, as well as the entire Yun family a chance... Yun Feng, if you take your people and immediately disappear, I can pretend that I didn't see you here today!"

Chapter 553 – Meng Xin's Hatred

The atmosphere suddenly became heavier, and the Disillusion Alliance's players looked back, waiting for Yun Feng's reply. Right from the start, all of them thought that Yun Feng's actions were entirely irrational. Yun Feng and the Disillusion Alliance weren't just an unaffiliated faction. Rather, they had strong connections with the Yan Huang Alliance and the Long family. Within the virtual world, the Disillusion Alliance had always been a subsidiary guild of the Yan Huang Alliance. For Yun Feng and the Disillusion Alliance to come stop the Yan Huang Alliance, all of the players in China would soon know about this... This was equivalent to the Disillusion Alliance completely cutting ties with the Yan Huang Alliance.

If this new city was incredibly important to him, and doing this gave the new city a chance at survival, it would be worth it. However, everyone knew, clear as day, although the Disillusion Alliance was quite powerful, they were nothing compared to the Yan Huang Alliance. Not only would they be unable to protect the new city, but the entire Disillusion and Yun family would also be dragged in as well. It was not worth it at all and was an incredibly stupid move.

As such, the Disillusion Alliance's players all hoped that Yun Feng would decide to leave, and not stubbornly stay.

Yun Feng's face became bright red. Long Tian Yun was blatantly using the Yun family's safety to threaten him, making him so angry that he felt like exploding. He knew clearly that Long Tian Yun wasn't threatening him like this because he feared the Disillusion Alliance. In fact, even if there were another Disillusion

Alliance, it would make no difference to them-except that it would cost them a bit more time.

Long Tian Yun was just trying to show him, and Yun Meng Xin, the Long family's unparalleled might, and power. If Yun Feng crumbled under Long Tian Yun's threats towards the Yun family today, he would live his entire life under Long Tian Yun's shadow, and would never be able to lift his head in front of him. If Yun Feng decided to stay here and defend the city, Long Tian Yun would have ample reason to act against the Yun family.

Yun Feng didn't retreat, nor did he allow himself to retreat. He gripped his fists together as he furiously replied, "Long Tian Yun, what I'm doing today is simply my actions, and has nothing to do with the rest of the Yun family. There's no need for you to threaten me with my family. Since I've come here today, I won't leave! Even if my strength can't help Meng Xin much if you want me to run away in front of my little sister, hmph! Even if you threaten me with the whole world, I wouldn't do it!"

"Well said! You're a real man!" Winter of That Year loudly praised him. His impression of this person, who he had only met today, became a hundred times better.

"Really now? It looks like you've decided to embark on a path of foolishness. I've given you a chance, so if anything happens that you can't accept, don't blame me," Long Tian Yun said as he coldly smiled. He then looked at Li Xiao Xue, "Big miss Li, your appearance here isn't very surprising either. This city is larger than the largest city my Yan Huang Alliance constructed by many times. The only people in China who would have such finances are

your Li family. Moreover, I heard a few months ago that Meng Xin and big miss Li had become quite close."

"What? Are you also going to tell me that if you want my Li family to prosper, we'll prosper, and if you want us to be destroyed, we'll be destroyed?" Li Xiao Xue's upturned eyes narrowed as she smirked, speaking in an amused tone.

"No, no, no. With your Li family's finances, I'm sure no one in the world can mess with your Li family. However, I just received an interesting piece of news... I heard that the Skyfall Alliance canceled your partnership. Haha! This is quite a big piece of news, and its timing is quite coincidental too. Before, I was worried that the Skyfall Alliance might stop us; that would be a big problem.

"However, it seems that this won't be an issue... Instead, it's going to become your problem. You should know that the Skyfall Alliance desires the City Creation Token no less than any other faction. Big miss Li, it seems that the Skyfall Alliance canceling your partnership has forced you to bring out these women you've kept hidden. However, it's a pity that no matter if it's men or women, as long as they're enemies, my Yan Huang Alliance will not show any mercy."

Long Tian Yun raised his head as he looked to the south as he said in a meaningful tone, "Training so many women definitely isn't easy. If it was all destroyed in an instant, wouldn't that be quite the pity? Moreover, to construct a city of such a shocking scale, your Li family must have invested quite a bit. If this was all destroyed, I'm sure that even an incredibly rich big miss like you wouldn't be very happy about it. To avoid all of this unhappiness,

big miss Li, I have a business proposal for you. I'm sure you'll be interested."

"A business proposal? The thing I, Li Xiao Xue, loves most, are business proposals. However, young master Long, you should know that I never do deals that aren't beneficial to me," Li Xiao Xue replied while smiling. Facing Long Tian Yun and the 2,000,000 players behind him, she was the only one who remained completely calm.

It wasn't as if the new city was beyond salvation. She still had one last card up her sleeve... Apart from herself, no one knew about this.

"Of course, I know about this. Naturally, I wouldn't bring shame upon myself to propose a deal that was not beneficial to big miss Li," Long Tian Yun said proudly. He stretched out his hand and pointed towards the south, "Big miss Li, do you mind telling me how much money your Li family has invested in this city?"

Li Xiao Xue raised an eyebrow as she realized what this 'business proposal' was going to be. The amount of money that she had invested so far was unbelievably cheap. The land belonged to the Fairy Clan, and humans had no authority over it. As long as they received permission from the Fairy Clan, they could use the City Creation Token there. As such, this cut out the time and money required to apply to the Royal City for permission to build there.

Moreover, they had saved a massive fortune on the workers. They had the world's best workers and engineers – the Dwarves. Their talent, abilities, efficiency, and passion were things that

ordinary high-leveled builders could not compare to. As for their expenses... All they wanted were 3 meals per day. Most of the resources they required for building had come from the Fairy Forest, and some especially important resources were taken from the Fairy Realm. As such, Li Xiao Xue only needed to buy the materials that could not be found within the Fairy Forest from the main cities.

Up until today, they had spent only 3 billion gold. Even an idiot wouldn't believe such a thing.

Of course, Li Xiao Xue wouldn't tell the truth. She replied without hesitating, "This city's a bit big, so all up, we only invested a small 100 billion."

"100 billion? Very well!" Long Tian Yun slowly nodded as he slowly replied, "My Yan Huang Alliance is willing to spend 10 billion gold to buy this city, as well as the City Creation Token."

Hearing Long Tian Yun's words, everyone fell deathly silent, with strange expressions on their faces.

Calmly offering 10 billion gold to buy something that someone else had spent 100 billion gold on, as well as such time and effort, was ridiculously arrogant and shameless. Even the Yan Huang Alliance's players thought the same thing as everyone else...

What the hell?!

Yun Feng's face became ashen, and Winter of That Year's eyes almost shot out fire. And yet, Li Xiao Xue giggled, "Little lord Long, with your business mind and aggressiveness, it's a pity that you didn't go into business. If you went into business, I'm afraid that your esteemed face would cover all the toilets in the world. It's hard for me, Li Xiao Xue, not to be moved by your incredible offer. However, you've asked the wrong person—my Li family is only an investor, and doesn't actually own the city. Instead, it's Meng Xin, so if you want to buy the city, you'll have to ask

"Really, now?" Long Tian Yun nodded, and his tone became gentler when he looked at Yun Meng Xin, "Meng Xin, what do you think of this business proposal?"

Yun Meng Xin remained silent and didn't even look at him.

"Before coming here, I was waiting for you to come and find me and give me the City Creation Token. I thought that you would stop refusing me—after all, if you did that, this wouldn't have happened, and you would at least own half of the new city in the future. Within the Yan Huang Alliance, you would have a position equal to mine. Your Yun family would also share in your glory, and surpassing even the Li family would be possible."

Long Tian Yun gave a long sigh as he said sorrowfully, "However, you've once again disappointed me. I'm quite unhappy with this new city, and you've made me quite displeased. However, you, Yun Meng Xin, possess a charm that makes my heart softer. As such, even though I brought so many people here, I still made that proposal. Meng Xin, this is your final chance. I hope you won't disappoint me..."

“You don’t need to say anymore!” Yun Meng Xin, who had remained silent this entire time, coldly spoke, and cut off Long Tian Yun, “You’re but a cowardly and vile bandit, and yet you dare to shamelessly make yourself seem like the pitiful and righteous one. I feel that it’s humiliating to even talk to someone like you! Long Tian Yun, do you not feel ashamed of yourself?” Long Tian Yun’s initial threats made Yun Meng Xin feel quite frustrated. After Heart’s Dream was destroyed, she started to hate him. Now, seeing that her sweat, blood, and tears were about to be destroyed by him, Long Tian Yun had become an evil demon that deserved to be cut into pieces by thousands of knives. Her hatred towards him had reached the extreme. Facing Long Tian Yun, it was the first time in many years since she lost control of her emotions.

Those present all stared with their jaws wide open, staring at Yun Meng Xin with comical expressions. They never thought that the incredibly elegant and goddess-like Yun Meng Xin would be able to vent like this. After quite a while, Winter of That Year yelled out, “Well said! This guy’s simply a bandit who has no face and no ass. And what, he’s trying to look all indignant like a saint? Pshaw.”

Long Tian Yun’s face, which had maintained an elegant expression, was now twisted in anger. The number of times he had been scolded or cursed at could be counted on a single hand. With his background and status, who would dare to say such words to him? To be insulted like this by the woman who he vowed to have, he felt incredibly furious, “You…”

“You can stop spouting nonsense.” Just as Long Tian Yun said a single word, Yun Meng Xin coldly cut him off, “Your shameless and despicable stealing and destroying already make people hold

you in contempt, so why try to seem like a good person hypocritically? Do your worst; even if this city is destroyed, I won't give you a single brick or tile!"

Chapter 554 – A Single Emperor Ravages The Army

Each man has a goddess within his heart; Long Tian Yun's goddess was Yun Meng Xin. Ever since he saw Yun Meng Xin's appearance that year, he had vowed to make her his own. As time passed, Yun Meng Xin's beauty became even more breathtaking, and Long Tian Yun desired her even more... However, Yun Meng Xin had expressed her determination towards him, with every word filled with disgust and hatred.

If anyone else had said those words, Long Tian Yun would have wildly laughed. However, hearing it from Yun Meng Xin's mouth... No one could bear such a bad taste in their mouths.

Long Tian Yun's face became slightly pale, and he felt so angry that he wanted to cough up blood. He subconsciously gritted his teeth as he spoke in a slightly trembling, sinister voice, "Good... Good! You... Forced me to this! Haha... Hahaha... It looks like you're still hoping that Ling Tian will come and save you. It's impossible for him to come, and even if he did, a hundred, or even a thousand Ling Tians would be unable to help you! Even he would have to die here... All players, heed my command!!"

Everyone could hear the fury in Long Tian Yun's voice, and as he roared out the "All troops, heed my command," every Yan Huang Alliance player's heart tightened as their blood began to boil.

"...Before, our goal today was to destroy the city at all costs," Long Tian Yun did not lose his rationality, and instead, became so furious that he started to laugh. He began to speak slowly, and his

eyes became as venomous and sinister as a snake, “But now, I’ve changed my mind. We’ll save the fun in destroying the city for last. What I want you all to do now is quickly kill all of these people blocking our way. Don't spare a single one of them! Understood?!”

Long Tian Yun shouted as loudly as he could, and his voice traveled quite far. Through the guild channel, his orders were transmitted into every Yan Huang Alliance player’s ears.

Before destroying the city, he wanted to massacre all of these defenders!

“Understood!!”

The simultaneous reply from the players made it feel as if the world was shaking. 2 million voices shouting out as one made it seem like lightning and thunder were raining down from the nine heavens.

“Then what are you waiting for?? Kill!!”

“Kill!!!!!”

As the thunderous shouts sounded out, countless horses galloped through the grassy plains. Innumerable Paladin Shield Bearers rode their large, powerful steeds, raising their heavy shields as they rushed at the front of the Yan Huang Alliance’s army. With 200,000 heavy cavalry moving out, it felt as if even mountains could be moved. The land shook, and they brought with them a

terrifying momentum as they mercilessly charged towards the Disillusion Alliance's players. Behind them, Berserkers began moving out as well, causing the earth to tremble. Following them were Slayers and Shadowless, then the Archers and Elementalists. Finally, at the back were the Summoners and support Mages doing their summons and buffs.

2 million players were split into hundreds of teams. Each team had their own formation, and they all moved out as one! The aura and momentum they had was simply astounding.

Seeing this, the Disillusion Alliance's player's pupils contracted as they felt their bodies weaken, and their feet and legs started to tremble. Seeing the heavy cavalry in front of them, although they were quite far away, they could already see themselves being sent flying in an instant and completely broken through. Most of their faces paled, and some people at the front involuntarily took a step back, as their entire bodies trembled.

The Yan Huang Alliance's heavy cavalry were famous throughout the entire world. Under the assault of ten thousand cavalries, even a mountain would be shattered. None of the large alliances could talk about them with a calm face, and those cavalry had almost doomed even Ling Chen. After Shield Bearers completed their second profession upgrade and became Heavy Shield Guardians and Paladin Shield Bearers, the might of heavy cavalry increased exponentially. Over 200,000 heavy cavalry facing enemies, which numbered just over 100,000, was simply overkill. The Disillusion Alliance's players felt as if their souls were sent flying in fear.

Long Tian Yun had given them the order to kill these defenders

as quickly as possible. No one within the Yan Huang Alliance dared to disobey Long Tian Yun's commands, and in order to accomplish this as soon as possible, none of them held back.

Yun Feng's expression fell, and even Li Xiao Xue deeply frowned, while Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice looked incredibly shocked. They were all thinking the same thing. If they rushed over like this, these 230,000 players would be destroyed in an instant.

Yun Feng gritted his teeth and stepped forwards as he roared, "Don't panic! The Yan Huang Alliance's heavy cavalry isn't as terrifying as you think! Hunters quickly set up horse traps. Shield Bearers, Warriors, retreat; Marksmen and Archers advance, and prepare to shoot the first row of cavalry!"

Yun Feng understood just how terrifying these heavy cavalries were, but also knew their weaknesses. His strategy was the best way of dealing with them. However, less than 40% of the Disillusion Alliance's players had completed their second profession upgrade, and less than half of the Archers who had done their second profession upgrade were Hunters. With the few Hunters laying traps, and the very few Marksmen in the army, it was almost impossible to stop this heavy cavalry.

The ground shook more and more, and the heavy cavalry came closer and closer. The Marksmen and Archers at the front of the Disillusion Alliance's ranks prepared to shoot, but their hands were all trembling. Cold sweat beaded their foreheads, and they could only wait in fear for the impending nightmare.

Skreeee!!

At this moment, the shrill cry of a bird sounded out from above, piercing through the sounds of the heavy cavalry's galloping. This sound traveled into every player's ears, and they all looked towards where they heard the sound originate. In the east, a gigantic gray bird was flying towards them at an astonishing speed. It seemed as fast as lightning, and in the blink of an eye, it had traveled from the distance to be right in front of them.

"That's... one of the Celestial grade pets on the Pet Rankings, the Lightning Falcon!" Yun Feng shouted out in shock, "I remember that it's master is... is..."

In just a moment, the Lightning Falcon reached the space above the two armies. It suddenly gave a long cry as it pulled its wings against its body, and quickly dropped down towards the ground, towards the massive army of heavy cavalry.

As it pulled its wings in, the person standing on its back was revealed.

"Sword... Sword Emperor!"

"It's the Sword Emperor!"

"It's Lord Sword Emperor!"

The gray cloak, as well as that sharp aura that made one feel as if

there was a sword pressed against their neck... Apart from the Sword Emperor, who else could it be? The Yan Huang Alliance began to yell out, and some players even forgot to charge. They looked up and stared with their mouths wide open as they gaped at this legend who was said to have betrayed the Yan Huang Alliance. They watched as the Sword Emperor dove towards the heavy cavalry, and came closer and closer...

This scene looked like a tiny fish charging towards a gigantic shark.

Whoosh!

The expected collision didn't occur. Just as the Lightning Falcon was about to ram into the heavy cavalry, it drew a beautiful arc and it flew back towards the sky. At the same time, a silver flash swept out in front of the heavy cavalry and drew out a 30-meter long silver line.

Chi chi chi chi chi chi...

The sound of a sword piercing through flesh rang out as the silver light, like a deathgod's scythe, pierced through 20 or so players' heads... These players were the ones who had been charging at the front.

The heavy cavalry had incredible might, and once they started charging, there was almost nothing that could stop them. However, they had a fatal weakness: once the cavalry at the front faltered, the ones behind them would fall into chaos. The reason

was, very simply, because they were all charging at full speed. If the front fell, the people at the back would be unable to stop, and would also be tripped. This would cause a chain reaction, and the faster they were charging, the greater the chain reaction would be. Once this sort of chain reaction started, the consequences would be dire.

This sort of disastrous event could start with a single person falling over.

After being hit by the Sword Emperor's attack, although the frontline (who were all Paladin Shield Bearers who had completed their second profession upgrade and had powerful Defence) were still inta-killed. After dying, their corpses and horses heavily fell to the ground, causing the cavalry behind them to look on in shock. They were unable to stop in time and were tripped up by the corpses and horses on the ground; the players screamed and were thrown into the air, then heavily fell to the ground.

The chain reaction began, and the cavalry behind them began to flip and fall, causing the organized formation to tumble into utter chaos. The falling of the players and horses also affected those next to them, and soon, there was a mass of players and horses on the ground, as they all stampeded over each other.

Whoosh!

The Lightning Falcon, which had flown into the air, once again dropped down, and a new sword appeared in the Sword Emperor's hand. As she slashed out with it, another silver sliver swept out, piercing into the frontlines of the cavalry to her side, as heavier

cavalry were killed. As they dropped, the troops behind them also fell into chaos.

The Lightning Falcon once again moved. Its speed was not something with which this cavalry could contend. When it found a new target, standard swords appeared in the Sword Emperor's left and right hands, then turned into silver meteors as they flew towards the left and right.

Chi!

Chi!

Chi!

The Sword Emperor sent out sword after sword, which flew out like a monstrous deathgod's scythes. Each sword took at least 20 lives, and each time they would attack the ones at the front. In a mere 10 breaths of time, before everyone could recover from the Sword Emperor's appearance, she had traveled from the east to the west, as 20 or so rays of silver light swept towards the cavalry.

Because of how fast they had been charging, the cavalry fell into complete and utter chaos. Players stacked on players, and horses stacked on horses, while countless people cried out and screamed.

Chapter 555 – Taking Down The Chief Within An Army

The incredibly powerful heavy cavalry was almost completely wiped out by the Sword Emperor. Their strength wasn't able to deal any losses to the enemy, and instead, caused themselves a huge disaster. Under such circumstances, it was possible for people to calm down and quickly regroup, but this was not the same for their frightened mounts! Before players who had been thrown off could even stand up, they would be once again sent flying by mounts that were desperately looking for their owners.

Just like that, hundreds of thousands of players and horses were thrown around, stampeding on each other. In fact, some people even died from being repeatedly bashed. The unstoppable charging machine had been turned into an absolute mess and had even blocked the non-cavalry players behind them.

With something of such a large scale, they would not be able to reorganize within a short period. A single person had caused all of this… The Sword Emperor, with her near magical performance, had stopped 200,000 heavy cavalries by herself.

In the distance to the north, tens of guilds watched from afar, preparing to make a move. As they watched the Yan Huang Alliance's heavy cavalry charge out, their hearts trembled. With their own forces, facing such an onslaught, they would be annihilated. However, the Sword Emperor did cause their eyeballs almost to pop out.

"This… This is… The Sword Emperor? The previous rank 1 on

the Heaven Rankings?”

“A single person... took down hundreds of thousands of heavy cavalries! Ohmygod, is that even humanly possible?”

“This isn’t the level of an emperor anymore... but of a god!”

“I’ve long since heard that the Sword Emperor betrayed the Yan Huang Alliance, and seeing the Sword Emperor now attacking the Yan Huang Alliance, it seems that he’s decided to protect the new city. The Sword Emperor’s a terrifying monster, and now that the Yan Huang Alliance has lost him, it’s like they’ve lost an arm. The Sword Emperor becoming their enemy is a complete nightmare for the Yan Huang Alliance!”

“He can completely change the tides of the battle because he’s the Sword Emperor!”

“He seems even more powerful than before!”

The Sword Emperor’s performance, which lasted less than a minute, caused the big bosses of all the guilds to remember her name in fear. They decided never to offend this person. After all, offending an expert just meant having a powerful enemy; they could simply destroy that person with numbers. However, offending the Sword Emperor... That would be an unending nightmare.

Over on the side of the new city, Yun Feng and the others stared

with their mouths wide open, their eyes bulging as they spaced out. Within them, only Mu Bing Yao had fought with the Sword Emperor before and was defeated, so she somewhat knew of the Sword Emperor's strength.

However, seeing the Sword Emperor's current strength, Mu Bing Yao was dumbfounded. She knew that the Sword Emperor always kept her sword on her and that her attacks were so fast that they couldn't be followed by the naked eye, and could cut enemies into pieces in an instant. However, she never knew that the Sword Emperor could wield her swords without even holding them, and the speed was simply incredible. Her skills had reached a level of perfection, and her using two swords was even more incredible.

"So... So amazing," Winter of That Year said as he stared. As he spoke, he deeply gulped as he thought of him thoughtlessly attacking the Sword Emperor to provoke her. He rubbed his neck as he felt cold sweat flow down his body. Hundred Miles of Ice's gaze followed the Sword Emperor's body, and his eyes burned with a strange light. This Sword Emperor was a completely different person to the one he knew! Could this be the Sword Emperor's true power?

As he watched the cavalry collapse, Yun Feng finally remembered what he should be done. He equipped his weapons with a whoosh as he charged forwards while yelling, "Brothers and sisters! Do you see that? The Yan Huang Alliance's heavy cavalry aren't so great! Before they've even reached us, they've started trampling on themselves. With the Sword Emperor standing on our side, what do we have to be afraid of? This is our chance... Brothers and sisters, charge! Kill them all!!"

Yun Feng almost tore his throat apart yelling, and his thundering voice caused the hearts of the players of the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan to tremble. Looking at the fearsome cavalry, which was in complete disarray, their fear completely disappeared as their blood started to boil.

“Kill!!!!”

The Disillusion Alliance let out a heaven-shaking roar as they raised their weapons and ran as fast as they could towards the Yan Huang Alliance’s army. Their battle cry was not at all inferior to the one given by the Yan Huang Alliance before, and the Snow Moon Loulan charged right behind them.

The heavy cavalry’s might come from their charging abilities, which was incredibly destructive. Now, it was impossible for them to perform the same charge that they had unleashed before. Shield Bearers’ main was most useful against powerful Bosses, but in large, chaotic battles, they could only do some blocking and dealt very little damage. It was difficult for them to keep up in a fast-paced battle, and while they were still in chaos and disarray, the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan had charged up. They were all still trying to stand up and find their mounts and had no time to get into formation.

Like two massive waves, the attackers, and defenders finally clashed. Countless icy glints of weapons appeared as they mercilessly attacked their enemies.

The fierce battle had finally officially begun. Vicious roars, pitiful wails, and furious cries, as well as the sounds of weapons clashing,

were deafening and filled the battlefield. The 2 armies merged, forming a chaotic sea of people.

Because of how large the 2 armies were, the line of battle became longer and longer. The Yan Huang Alliance possessed an absolute advantage regarding numbers, but because of the chaos caused by the heavy cavalry at the front, the backline was completely blocked off and was unable to fight. As such, they could not capitalize on their numbers advantage. As for the defenders, with the Sword Emperor as their mental support, they rushed up without any regard for their lives as they mercilessly attacked the Shield Bearers. The Archers at the back continuously let loose arrows. At this point, there was no point aiming-randomly shooting was guaranteed to hit enemies, due to how densely packed they were.

“This trash! These bastards!!”

Long Tian Yun, who had retreated to the center of the army, was so furious that he was trembling. He had thought that the heavy cavalry would be more than enough to crush the weak defenders. After all, the other side only had 1/10 of the total forces that they had. It would be incredibly easy to deal with them. However, he never expected the Sword Emperor to appear, and use her monstrous abilities to send the heavy cavalry into complete disarray. If the Sword Emperor had originally been his enemy, that wouldn’t have been much. However, the Sword Emperor had once been part of the Yan Huang Alliance, and had followed his orders!

Long Tian Yun simply couldn’t understand why she had betrayed him.

After the battle started, it was his Yan Huang Alliance that was on the defensive. This was a great humiliation to Long Tian Yun. He smashed his fist into the tiger's head below him as he roared, "Feng Xie Yu!! Give me a goddamn explanation why you're doing this!!"

Just as he spoke, he suddenly felt something and looked up. His pupils dilated as the gray bird sped towards him at a shocking speed. On the giant bird's back, the Sword Emperor's gray cloak billowed, emanating Sword Qi.

"Lord... Lord Sword Emperor! Protect the Alliance Master! Protect the Alliance Master!"

By the time Long Tian Yun had discovered the Sword Emperor, his golden guardians also noticed her. They panicked as they did their best to quickly form an Iron Drum Formation, surrounding Long Tian Yun in the middle. The Lightning Falcon was simply too fast and was flying high in the air, so it was simply unstoppable. It arrived above Long Tian Yun in the blink of an eye. More and more people gathered around Long Tian Yun to defend him, but not a single one of them felt at ease, and their hearts trembled-because they were facing a legend among Chinese players-the Sword Emperor!

As the Lightning Falcon cried out, 2 silvers, single-handed swords appeared in the Sword Emperor's hands... These 2 swords were at most Silver grade, but in the Sword Emperor's hands, they were hundreds, if not thousands, of times more terrifying than Mysterious God grade equipment in normal players' hands. The instant the players saw the silver light within the Sword Emperor's

hands, a wave of coldness flowed through their hearts.

Swish!

The swords streaked like comets towards Long Tian Yun. The crowd charged up, using their bodies to prevent these 2 swords from harming Long Tian Yun. If these were arrows, they could use their bodies to block them. Similarly, if they were spells, they could also use the same tactic. However, these swords came from the Sword Emperor, and each was full of a boundless sword intent. How could they stop them like that?

Chi chi chi chi chi chi...

The 2 swords pierced through all of the bodies that tried to block it as if they were thin sheets of paper. Let alone stop, they didn't even slow down the swords. The swords pierced through more than 30 people, piercing towards Long Tian Yun's chest. At this moment, 2 loud cries sounded out from Long Tian Yun's sides. They came from 2 players wearing golden armor and holding golden shields as they blocked in front of Long Tian Yun. Their golden shields gave off a dense light of protection...

"Unbreaking Shield! Hahhh!!!"

[Unbreaking Shield] was the strongest defensive skill for Shield Bearers after completing their second profession upgrade. The skill gave Absolute Defence, and could nullify any Physical Attack. 2 [Unbreaking Shields] defended against the 2 swords, and everyone watched as they were about to clash...

Woosh!

The scene of the swords being sent flying by the shields did not happen, because right before the swords were about to smash into the shields, they suddenly changed direction, and shot upwards, evading the [Unbreaking Shields] and the 2 Shield Bearers. They then fell towards and pierced into Long Tian Yun's body.

"Alliance... Alliance Master!"

"Alliance Master!!!"

Thousands of elites from the Yan Huang Alliance were unable to stop a single, casual attack from the Sword Emperor. They could only watch as Long Tian Yun was killed by a single strike from the Sword Emperor while 2 million players surrounded him... Although Long Tian Yun had not yet fallen, how many people, in all of China, could survive a hit from the Sword Emperor without being insta-killed?

The swords that had pierced through tens of players stabbed into Long Tian Yun's body and remained there, as 2 huge damage figures rose up. Long Tian Yun's mouth widened as his pupils contracted, staring at the Sword Emperor in the air... He simply couldn't understand why this person, who had obeyed his orders for so many years and never disobeyed him, would attack him so mercilessly without any hesitation.

However, Long Tian Yun's death was not the end. As the Yan

Huang Alliance's players howled, his body, which had not fallen yet, strangely rose up in the air. The 2 swords brought it to the front of the army, where the fighting was, and heavily fell to the ground. Just like that, his body was nailed to the ground by the swords.

This pitiful corpse went on display for both armies that were furiously fighting.

Chapter 556 – 5 Sword Emperors

When Long Tian Yun's body fell from the sky and landed in the center of the battlefield, all of the players on both sides saw it clearly. The incredibly chaotic battlefield fell deathly silent, then erupted into yells and screams.

"Alliance... Alliance Master?!"

"The Alliance Master died... died... The Alliance Master died!!"

No matter if it was the Yan Huang Alliance's players or the defenders, this scene was simply too much. This was especially so for the Yan Huang Alliance's players-seeing Long Tian Yun's corpse nailed to the ground, they stared with their mouths wide open, and completely spaced out. They even forgot about the enemies in front of them. The players from the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan were also flabbergasted, and couldn't believe their own eyes until they heard the yells in their ears.

"Long Tian Yun's dead! Everyone, look! The Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master has died! What do we need to be afraid of? What are we still waiting for? If we defeat them, we'll become a legend!!"

Long Tian Yun's corpse, as well as the yells in the ears, caused the defenders' hearts to beat as they felt their blood heating up rapidly. They waved their weapons as they charged towards the shocked Yan Huang Alliance, and cut down many of their enemies while they were still spaced out.

The Yan Huang Alliance allowing their Alliance Master to be killed despite facing 200,000 players with 2 million players was a humiliation that they would never be able to wash away. Long Tian Yun's death caused the players, as well as many leaders, to become completely dumbfounded. The Yan Huang Alliance's players' morale greatly fell, and were suppressed, and eventually beaten back by the defenders.

"Holy crap... so goddamn amazing!" Winter of That Year gulped down saliva as he rubbed his eyes, feeling complete and utter respect towards the Sword Emperor. The Sword Emperor had executed Long Tian Yun with a single strike and had completely disregarded the 2 million players around her. Even to a super expert like Winter of That Year, she was a legendary existence.

"His appearance has caused the tides of this battle to turn in our favour completely," Li Xiao Xue sighed in awe, "However, why would he help us? Is it because of Ling Tian?"

She knew that on that night at the Long family's residence, Ling Chen had been saved by the Sword Emperor. After that night, the Sword Emperor betrayed the Long family and Xuanyuan family, as well as the Yan Huang Alliance, and disappeared. This was the first time the Sword Emperor had appeared in public after that night.

"There might be some friendship between him and Ling Tian," Yun Meng Xin said emotionally. She was unable to calm down after seeing this unexpected scene. She tightly gripped her clothes, her palms full of sweat.

“Friendship?” Li Xiao Xue started to feel suspicious. She had spent a great deal of time and resources to investigate the Sword Emperor, but even she did not know the Sword Emperor’s true identity, nor why the Sword Emperor was always wrapped up. She simply couldn’t understand why this mysterious person would never show their appearance. However, what she could confirm was that the Sword Emperor had cut off all emotions, never spoke, and only followed orders, like a robot. The Sword Emperor had been around for almost 10 years… How could the Sword Emperor have a ‘friendship’ with Ling Tian?

Li Xiao Xue quickly went through the information she had on the Sword Emperor in her mind, and thought back earlier and earlier, back when Ling Chen was still in the Long family. Suddenly, a long-forgotten name surfaced in her mind.

“Could it be that… the Sword Emperor is…”

“Meng Xin, do you think the Sword Emperor’s a man or a woman?” Li Xiao Xue suddenly asked.

“Of course he’s a man,” Yun Meng Xin replied, feeling that it was a strange question.

“No one’s seen the Sword Emperor before, so how do you know he’s a man?” Li Xiao Xue continued to ask.

Yun Meng Xin gave her a sideways glance, “Since the Sword Emperor appeared, he’s remained at the top of the Heaven Rankings. How could such a powerful person be a woman?”

Li Xiao Xue didn't say anything else and gave a smile that didn't seem like a smile. She sighed in awe as she thought to herself, "What an amazing man. At such a young age, he made a girl whose heart was so cold fall so in love with him. If this interesting guess of mine is correct, then... You fickle man, out of all the women by your side, which one can compare to her regarding how much they love you and are willing to give up for you..."

In the distance, the leaders of the large guilds were covered in sweat, and some even trembled. When Long Tian Yun's corpse rose to the sky and then they nailed it to the ground, their hearts almost jumped out from their throats. Long Tian Yun had brought 2 million players and yet had died so pitifully. If they attacked the city... Who would be able to escape from the Sword Emperor?

Dying wasn't too bad-after all, this was a virtual game, so after they died, they could revive later, by other players. Moreover, in such a massive battlefield, only very few people saw their Alliance Master's death. After being revived, the Alliance Master would be able to shout into the guild channel, and most people would never even know that the Alliance Master had died. However, after Long Tian Yun had died, his corpse was lifted up and dropped in the center of the battlefield.

This had the effect of pouring cold water over all of the Yan Huang Alliance's players and substantially decreased their morale, greatly impacting the situation. At the same time, as the Alliance Master of a large guild, after dying in such a manner, how would he be able to maintain his face and reputation?

Seeing the dead Long Tian Yun, the faces of the bosses of the large guilds became ashen. Thinking to the 2 words ‘Sword Emperor’, their necks shrunk back and they felt as if there was a cold wind blowing against their backs. All of these big bosses viewed their reputation and face as more important than their lives. After all, the fights for the ‘first guild’ and ‘only city’ were all for fame and reputation. They would all rather die a hundred times any other way than die in humiliation like Long Tian Yun.

“Alliance Master, Long Tian Yun has died. Perhaps this is a good opportunity-should we…”

“Opportunity my ass! Hold your breath and wait here! Didn’t you hear Long Tian Yun’s orders from before? They’re not just attacking the city; they’re trying to kill all of those defenders! In other words, this is their conflict; only someone who’s mentally ill would go and invite trouble on themselves!”

“Yes, yes, yes…”

Long Tian Yun’s death brought a tremendous shock to the Yan Huang Alliance. The Sword Emperor, who had just killed Long Tian Yun in a single strike, jumped down from the Lightning Falcon into the Yan Huang Alliance’s army… Right in the center of 2 million players.

Apart from the Sword Emperor, who else would dare to jump within an army of millions of enemies?

Most of the Yan Huang Alliance’s elites had admired the Sword

Emperor as their idol and thought of the Sword Emperor as an invincible legend. When meeting the Sword Emperor, they would scarce dare to breathe loudly. To be able to join the Yan Huang Alliance that the Sword Emperor was part of, they felt incredibly honored. They never thought that one day they would fight against the Sword Emperor. Seeing the Sword Emperor descend from the sky, although many allies surrounded them, their hearts all trembled. They couldn't feel any safer, only a cold chill. Watching the Sword Emperor jump down, not a single person attacked-instead, they all hurriedly retreated.

By the time the Sword Emperor landed, there was a ten or so meters region of empty space around her. Surrounding this area were countless eyes filled with fear, and all of the players' hands trembled as they gripped their weapons.

Clang! Clang!

2 silver swords appeared in the Sword Emperor's hands, similar to the ones with which she had killed Long Tian Yun. The Sword Emperor moved, and a gray blur moved like divine lightning, disappearing from everyone's view. Following this, 10 or so damage figures rose up, and 10 or so cries sounded out. The gray blur once again moved, whirling with both swords. No one could see the Sword Emperor's attack patterns clearly-this was because every time she struck, the swords in her hands essentially vanished, and in a moment, another ten players had died.

The fact that the Sword Emperor could attack more than 10 times in an instant was already common knowledge within China.

As the cries sounded out, seeing their allies fall, the Yan Huang Alliance's players finally realized what was happening. The Sword Emperor was no longer part of the Yan Huang Alliance, and was instead their enemy, and had even just killed Long Tian Yun. The Sword Emperor was a terrifying enemy, but they had to raise their weapons towards the Sword Emperor. After all, if the Sword Emperor didn't die, they would be the ones dying.

The Yan Huang Alliance finally started to surround the Sword Emperor and attack. A sea of players that extended as far as the eye could see swarmed towards a single target. They believed that with so many people, even the Sword Emperor would die under such an assault.

With so many enemies around her, the Sword Emperor stopped moving, as the 2 swords flew out of her hands and started to fly around her. They were 2 swords, but because of how quickly they were moving, the sound they singing out resembled a tornado. As they flew through the air, they instant took the lives of tens of players, leaving 2 trails of corpses. When the 2 swords flew out 30 meters, they didn't fall but instead continued to move in an arc, causing more sounds of blades tearing through flesh.

At the same time, another 2 swords appeared in the Sword Emperor's hands, and also shot out. It seemed as if the swords had their own lives and minds, and the 4 swords continuously took lives around the Sword Emperor.

At this moment, a fifth sword had appeared in the Sword Emperor's hands. This sword was not another silver sword, but a Celestial grade sword that she had obtained from killing a Celestial

grade Boss. It was the Sword Emperor's true weapon.

With the sword in her hands, the Sword Emperor dove into the ranks of the completely shocked Yan Huang Alliance players, as illusory swords filled the space around her. Even the Shield Bearers, who had incredibly strong Defence, couldn't take a single hit from the illusory swords. Around the Sword Emperor, the 4 silver swords flew around her within 30 meters, spinning and flying straight; piercing and slashing. The rate at which she killed her enemies was simply monstrous. It was as if another 4 Sword Emperors were controlling them! Anyone who dared to approach within 30 meters of the Sword Emperor was instantly killed.

A single Sword Emperor could face an army of 1,000 players; what about 5?

Wherever the Sword Emperor went, she left behind a mountain of corpses. Her jumping into the center of the army wasn't her casting herself into a trap and was instead like a sharp and indestructible sword stabbing into the Yan Huang Alliance army's heart.

.....

Real world, Beijing.

Because Long Tian Yun had spread the information, this battle for the new city had been given quite a bit of attention. Almost every player was awaiting the result of this battle.

When news came that the Sword Emperor had appeared, Xuanyuan Dao had hurriedly turned on the screen, then searched for where she was. Ever since she had departed that night, he hadn't received any news about her. Even until now, he didn't know why she had done this. However, in the end, she was his flesh and blood, and after not hearing about her for so long, he couldn't help but worry.

When Xuanyuan Dao finally saw the Sword Emperor, his body trembled as an expression of shock and disbelief appeared on his face... After a while, he reached out to rub his eyes with his trembling hands, again and again. He leaned in closer and closer to the screen, but simply couldn't believe what he was saying.

Sword intent could be brought into the virtual world along with one's mind, just like esper abilities. This was something most people knew. The Sword Emperor was so powerful because she was an expert in the way of the sword in the real world. The sword intent that one possessed within the virtual game was the same as the sword intent one had in the real world.

Seeing the Sword Emperor charge into the densely-packed crowd, as well as the 4 swords circling her as if they were alive, Xuanyuan Dao's heart started to beat like crazy.

Xuanyuan had stepped into the early stages of sword manipulation. When one's sword intent became strong to a certain extent, they would be able to manipulate the sword freely without even touching it. However, even within the Xuanyuan family's thousands of years of history, very few people had mastered sword manipulation. No one had ever attained that level before the age of

The Sword Emperor was not yet even 22 years old... And yet, not only had she mastered sword manipulation, she was simultaneously controlling 4 swords... no, including the one in her hand, that was 5 swords! 5 swords being controlled by her sword intent turned her into a terrifying killing machine, and the ease with which she controlled the swords showed that she was extremely proficient with controlling them like this.

Within the Xuanyuan family's records, their progenitor lived to 300 years old, and at his peak, he was able to control 7 swords simultaneously. He was a legend that no one in the Xuanyuan family could compare to. After the progenitor passed away, out of the very few geniuses who mastered sword manipulation, the most they could control simultaneously was 2 swords. Moreover, despite controlling 2 swords without their hands, they weren't able to wield a third sword with their hands.

And yet, the Sword Emperor was well and truly controlling 5 swords!!

Xuanyuan Dao still remembered that the last time he had fought with her, she evidently hadn't achieved sword manipulation yet. In fact, her sword skills were slightly inferior to his, and less than half a year had passed!

"Is this real?" Xuanyuan Dao muttered to himself, feeling dazed. For her to reach this realm, as her father, he should have felt delighted. However, this sort of growth was simply too monstrous and unbelievable. His shock far surpassed his joy.

“During this period, just what happened to you?? Could it be that you truly have to cut off all emotions to reach the legendary pinnacle?”

Chapter 557 – The Desperate Battle

Behind the battlefield, south of the Azure Forest Village, a platform had been constructed, which was tens of meters tall. The revived Long Tian Yun returned to the Azure Forest Village and was now standing on the platform, watching the situation. The Yan Huang Alliance's frontline was currently engaged in a vicious battle; the defenders were filled with vigor, and it was the Yan Huang Alliance's frontline that found themselves beaten back. Moreover, the center of their army was in even more chaos, and Long Tian Yun gripped his binoculars as he stared at the unstoppable Sword Emperor massacring within the army. She was a single person wielding 5 swords, killing at least 10 or so people every second. It was as if she wasn't a person, but an invincible army.

By now, the Yan Huang Alliance's players' spirits were completely broken by the Sword Emperor. Although their soldiers extended as far as the eye could see, almost no one dared to step up. Wherever the Sword Emperor rushed to, the players there would panic and retreat.

Seeing this, Long Tian Yun's frown became deeper and deeper, and his eyes repeatedly twitched.

After following him for so many years, he knew just how powerful she was. However, this Sword Emperor, who had gone missing for many months, seemed extremely unfamiliar. She killed him without any hesitation, and the frightening sword manipulation she displayed was something that he had never seen before.

If it weren't for her attire, as well as that unmistakable sword intent, he would have found it difficult to believe that this Sword Emperor, and the Sword Emperor he knew before, were the same person.

“Alliance Master, what should we do? We can’t stop the Sword Emperor, and if we keep going like this…” Cang Yan put down his binoculars as he spoke in fear. He hadn’t dared to fight the Sword Emperor in many years, and he didn't even dare to keep looking at her.

Long Tian Yun coldly replied, “Within the virtual world, stamina is unlimited. However, the Sword Emperor is using her sword intent to perform sword manipulation, while her sword intent is supported by her mental energy. Wielding a single sword requires powerful sword intent, and simultaneously wielding 5 swords… the mental energy expenditure every second must be enormous. I’m sure she’s unable to last very long. However, Those trash at the front are actually retreating!”

Long Tian Yun picked up his communication device and opened the guild channel as he calmly and coldly spoke, as if he hadn’t just died in front of them, “You’ve all disappointed me greatly; a battle that should have been easily won has become such an ugly battle. What are you all doing?!”

As Long Tian Yun’s voice sounded in the Yan Huang Alliance’s player’s ears, they all hesitated for a moment.

“Use your brains and think! We have 2 million people while they only have 200,000 people, one tenth of what we have! Fight them 10 to 1! Yes, I died, but does that mean you all died?! Let alone dying once, so what if I die a hundred times? I’ll just immediately revive and take some time getting back!

“Your job is to kill all of these people, not worry about my life or death! 2 million people being suppressed by 200,000 people… Just how long are you all going to lose face for my Yan Huang Alliance?”

Long Tian Yun’s words had the effect of a bucket of cold water being poured on this chaotic army. The players, who had been sent into chaos because of Long Tian Yun’s death, suddenly realized that this was just the virtual world; after dying, one would respawn. Moreover, they had a 10 to 1 advantage.

In battles in the real world, the chief of an army’s death would be a massive blow to the soldiers, and could even destroy their fighting spirit. Many instances in history where the army with fewer soldiers had won were when they had killed the enemy’s king, causing the enemy to fall into disarray. However, in the virtual world, such a thing didn’t exist because even if the chief died, they would be able to respawn. Even if their morale was decreased by a bit, it simply couldn’t compare to real life.

The Yan Huang Alliance’s frontline regained their morale and started to shift their focus from their Alliance Master’s death to the enemies in front of them. They all gave battle cries as their attacking and defending became more vigorous, causing the battle to become even more intense.

“The other side’s attacks have become fiercer. It looks like the effects from Long Tian Yun’s death are gone,” Li Xiao Xue said as she frowned. That beautiful scene had only lasted for an instant. After all, the difference in strength between the armies was simply too vast. The suppression of the Yan Huang Alliance was merely a brief illusion, and after that dream was destroyed, they couldn’t hide from cruel reality.

The Yan Huang Alliance’s commanders all regained their cool, and started to organize efficient formations quickly... With 10 times the number of players their enemies had, formations were almost unnecessary. However, the hidden fury within Long Tian Yun’s voice caused them to feel fearful and ashamed, so they vowed to quickly destroy these people who had forced them to such a state.

Under their massive numbers advantage, the Yan Huang Alliance’s attacking line became twice as long, then started to surround the defenders. They attacked them from 3 sides and started to close in on them. Under the assault from 3 sides, the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Alliance’s players felt many times more pressure. They started to fight one against two, one against three, one against four. Their casualties began to grow as their numbers, which were not big, to begin with, began to dwindle.

“Maintain the formation, stand your ground! Even if we die, we can't die for nothing! Drag 1 down with you, and it’ll be worth it! Drag 2 down with you, and you’ll be a hero!!”

Yun Feng rushed to the front and dashed left, and right there within the Yan Huang Alliance's ranks. Even Ling Chen had praised Yun Feng's strength in the past. As the Alliance Master of the Disillusion Alliance, even if he wasn't on the Heaven Rankings, he was still in the top 100. By now, he had killed tens of the Yan Huang Alliance's players.

Although he rushed to the front, he didn't lose his rationality and kill recklessly. He efficiently killed enemies while also paying attention to his safety. After all, if he died, the Disillusion Alliance would fall into chaos for a while.

Less than half an hour after the Yan Huang Alliance had started to formally attack, the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan were beaten back. They had been fully suppressed and didn't have an opportunity to breathe. Although she knew that this was the only result, Yun Meng Xin felt quite anxious. Her beautiful hands turned white as she clutched her clothes seemingly trying to rip her clothing.

Winter of That Year looked over to Winter of That Year, and couldn't stand it anymore. He pulled Hundred Miles of Ice as he yelled, "Boss, let's go!"

Hundred Miles of Ice nodded and prepared to rush up with Winter of That Year. They were standing here to protect Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue, to prevent any Yan Huang Alliance players from suddenly rushing over here. However, seeing this situation, they were unable to stand by and watch. Although they weren't powerful enough to turn the tides of the battle, they could at least kill a few of the enemies.

“Wait!” Li Xiao Xue stopped them, before pulling out a few golden pieces of equipment, and handed them over to Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice, “You haven’t upgraded your equipment after reaching LV50. Yun Meng Xin asked me a long time ago to find some equipment suitable for you. These are all Gold grade equipment, and although they’re not good enough for people of your strength, but they’re compatible with your professions… Good luck.”

Comparatively to the Copper grade equipment they had, these sets of Gold equipment were like godly equipment to them, making them much more powerful. The two of them did not refuse and quickly donned the equipment. Winter of That Year gripped his new Gold grade Bow as he said earnestly to Yun Meng Xin, “Big sister goddess, even if the new city is destroyed, at least we still have the people. As long as the people haven’t died, the new city can be rebuilt, and hope will not be lost. As such, no matter what happens, you must stay strong… The fairies, Dwarves, and all of us will be with you to build an even bigger city. Don’t worry… Even if I can’t protect the new city… I’ll protect you!”

After saying this, Winter of That Year didn’t stay any longer and rushed towards the battlefield.

“Many thanks,” Hundred Miles of Ice spoke 2 short words before also rushing off.

Hundred Miles of Ice and Winter of That Year were like 2 sharp swords stabbing into the body of the Yan Huang Alliance’s army, giving them great pain. Once a Heaven Ranking expert’s strength

matured, they would be able to take down a thousand people by themselves. The Emotionless Swordsman Hundred Miles of Ice was naturally one of those people. He rushed into the Yan Huang Alliance's army, and wherever his golden sword passed, players would fall. He couldn't clear out massive waves of players like the Sword Emperor, but the speed at which he killed was still quite frightening.

Compared to Hundred Miles of Ice, Winter of That Year was much more shameless.

With his range as a Marksman, Winter of That Year started to shoot at the enemy's frontlines, where they couldn't attack him. When players started to run towards him, he would immediately flee. His incredible speed made even the Shadowless completely flabbergasted. When the players gave up chasing him, he would instead start chasing them while shooting, all the while maintaining a safe distance. If you don't move, I'll shoot you. If you chase me, I'll shoot while running. If you run, I'll chase you while shooting. Rather than being shot to death, the people who died from his assaults were more so killed from anger.

With Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice joining the battle, only Mu Bing Yao was left behind to protect Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue. With the Frozen Heart Man-Eater, who was ranked fifth on the Heaven Rankings, standing there, no one dared to come near.

"Meng Xin, what do you think about Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice?" Li Xiao Xue suddenly asked as she watched the battle that was becoming more and more desperate.

“They’re my, as well as the new city’s, benefactors,” Yun Meng Xin replied sincerely.

“They’re very mysterious. I’ve tried to investigate them, but I couldn’t find anything. It was as if these 2 people suddenly appeared in the world,” Li Xiao Xue said, “However, they bear no ill will towards us, and are very reliable. If we can make it past today, let’s ask them to stay in the new city. I’m sure that with your invitation, they won’t refuse. After all…” Li Xiao Xue gave a smile that didn’t seem like a smile, “That little brother Winter of That Year is infatuated with you.”

Yun Meng Xin: “……”

Chapter 558 – Xiao Qi's Return (1)

Yun Meng Xin already knew what Li Xiao Xue had just said. Back then she had revealed her true appearance because she wanted to use her looks to make Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice promise not to divulge the secret of the new city. However, unexpectedly, not only did Winter of That Year promise not to tell anyone about the new city but had even volunteered to stand guard. What shocked her, even more, was that Winter of That Year was powerful enough to defeat even Cang Yan easily.

However, it was just that...

There was no night in the Mystic Moon world. Although it was nearly midnight in the real world, the sun still hung in the sky within the virtual world. As the battle became more and more intense, it seemed as if the sea of people in front of the new city had started to rise in temperature and boil. Both sides brimmed with bloodlust. They didn't know how long they had been fighting for, and some even forgot why they were there. The only thing on their minds was to kill the people in front of them. The piercing yells of their commanders were utterly drowned out by the roars and shouts of the attackers and defenders.

Within the chaotic battle, corpses piled up incredibly quickly, as there were more and more casualties. Fervor and bloodlust now replaced the nervousness within everyone's hearts, and they all gave up retreating and evading, as they used their strongest skills against any enemies. As such, the corpses gathered more and more quickly, greatly surpassing the speed at which the bodies disappeared and returned to the main city.

Many of the people who died decided not to go back to the main city immediately, but stared at the individual who killed them, remembering their face, and watched until that person was killed. Only then did they leave. The corpses began to take over the battlefield, but the fighting did not slow down at all.

There was more and more equipment gathering on the ground, but not a single person picked them up.

In China's history, there had been very few battles on a scale of millions of people. However, within the virtual world, it was incredibly easy to gather people-simply sending an announcement on the guild channel would ensure that almost all people heard the call to gather. This was the same for the actual transport: a single teleport scroll could transport a person thousands of kilometers in a single instant. As such, it was not that rare to see battles with millions of people in the virtual world. Once such battles reached their climax, they were no less intense than massive battles in the real world.

The Yan Huang Alliance's army had started to completely suppress the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan's players, who were unable to even breathe. The Yan Huang Alliance had now completely surrounded the defenders, totally blocking off any retreat. They could neither advance nor retreat. However, not a single person attacked the city; they all reveled in the slaughter of the defenders. After all, the Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master had ordered that before destroying the city... They were to engage in a banquet of massacre!

The Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan's players knew that they wouldn't survive, and were filled with bloodlust. The more they were forced into dire straits, the less fear they felt. No matter if it was man or woman, all of them gave off an air of bloodthirstiness as they disregarded their lives and charged at the Yan Huang Alliance's players. Since they had to die, they would each take down another person with them.

If this were in the real world, the green grass would have long since been dyed red with fresh blood, which would have created streams and rivers. The stench of blood and gore would have reached up to the heavens.

In the north, some of the guilds continued to watch, and none of them made a move. The heaven-shaking roars and yells hadn't stopped at all for the past hour or so, making them feel as if they were going to go deaf. However, not a single one of them had become accustomed to that scene or those sounds. Every scene deeply shook their hearts. They never thought that the battle for the new city, which should have been incredibly simple, would turn out like this. If Long Tian Yun had directly ordered the Yan Huang Alliance to destroy the city, it would have been almost obliterated by now. However, the fighting continued while the new city was left untouched, and was almost forgotten.

"The Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan are almost finished. What a pity," one of the bosses of the guilds said in a low voice as he shook his head. The Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan had evidently moved out all of their forces. What did it mean for every player in a guild to go down a level and drop their equipment? They would suffer an incredibly heavy loss. After this battle, it was likely that the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon

Loulan would take a long time to recover. However, the losses to the Yan Huang Alliance would be quite insignificant.

"They know they were facing the Yan Huang Alliance, and yet they continued to defend it. Isn't that the same as suicide? It doesn't matter too much about the Snow Moon Loulan... Even if they were disbanded, it wouldn't matter much to Li Xiao Xue. However, the Disillusion Alliance is different."

"When do we act?"

"Of course when the Yan Huang Alliance starts to destroy the city. We'll help them with that. Afterwards... to whose hands the City Creation Token falls will depend on their abilities. At least for now, it's best that everyone just stands by. If someone makes a move now and draws the attention of the Sword Emperor..."

Thinking to there, the 10 or so bosses of the large guilds gathered together shuddered as they looked at where the Sword Emperor was... An hour had passed, but the Sword Emperor was still within the Yan Huang Alliance's backline. The aura she gave off was that if a god blocked her, she would kill a god; if a Buddha blocked her, she would kill a Buddha. She didn't have any allies, only 5 swords, and yet she hadn't died after such a long time... because no one could approach her without dying.

Chi chi chi chi chi chi...

The 4 flying swords looked like a meat grinder as they ended another 10 or so Yan Huang Alliance player's lives. After seeing the

Sword Emperor draw near, the surrounding players didn't think even to attack, and all rushed back in fear.

At that moment, the Sword Emperor suddenly slowed down, and her body unnaturally swayed as she stumbled back by 2 steps. She fell on one knee, as her arms dropped to her sides and the 4 silver swords fell from the air.

Just as the surrounding players stared in shock, a gigantic gray shadow appeared next to the Sword Emperor. The Sword Emperor stabbed the ground with her sword and jumped onto the Lightning Falcon, which gave a cry as it shot into the air.

In the distance, Long Tian Yun put down his binoculars as he picked up his communication device, saying in a low voice, "All Marksmen, shoot that gray bird."

While in battle, to be able to receive orders everyone had their communication devices on. Long Tian Yun's voice sounded into every Marksman's ears. They all looked up as they shot towards the gray shadow.

Marksmen's specialty was shooting enemies high in the sky. Before the Lightning Falcon could rush to its highest altitude, it was faced with a wave of arrows. It spread its wings, protecting its owner on its back. It took most of the arrows, and right before it reached safety, it was unable to hold on anymore. The Lightning Falcon cried out as its HP was cleared out, and it fell, then turned into a gray light that returned to the Sword Emperor's Pet Space.

The Sword Emperor's body tumbled through the air as a second wave of arrows shot towards her. Without the Lightning Falcon, despite being the Sword Emperor, she was unable to defend herself completely, and could only wait for death.

n this sort of situation, unless she had heaven-defying HP or Defence, she was doomed to die. However, the Sword Emperor was the Sword Emperor. Although she was completely exhausted, she wouldn't be done in by these ordinary players so easily. Her hand suddenly moved as a sword appeared and hovered beneath her feet. She jumped high off this sword, causing the arrows to miss. The sword then flew up, and the Sword Emperor stood on the sword as she quickly sped to the south. No matter if it was the speed or altitude, the Yan Huang Alliance's players could only stare in absolute shock. Flying on a sword was something that only happened in xianxia movies, and yet, it was occurring right in front of their eyes.

Seeing the Sword Emperor speed away, Long Tian Yun coldly harrumphed and smashed the binoculars in his hands to the ground. Cang Yan didn't say anything as he hurriedly handed Long Tian Yun another pair.

"Xiao Xue, how many people do we still have?" Yun Meng Xin did her best to remain calm, but her voice slightly trembled.

Li Xiao Xue fell silent for a moment before sighing and replying, "The Disillusion Alliance has lost 60,000 players, and the Snow Moon Loulan has lost 38,000... Moreover, the speed at which they're dying is becoming faster and faster."

The Yan Huang Alliance's casualties weren't any less than the Disillusion Alliance's and the Snow Moon Alliance's. However, the Yan Huang Alliance could afford these losses, while the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan couldn't. With almost the same casualties, the Yan Huang Alliance was drawing closer and closer to their goal, while the defenders were coming closer and closer to annihilation. The more people died, the faster the remaining players would die. Before, it was 2 people facing 20 people on average. However, now, it was 1 person facing 19 people on average. The speed at which they were dying became faster and faster.

Yun Meng Xin's body swayed as her body felt incredibly light, "Has there... been any news from Ling Tian?"

"...No. Tian Tian has remained by his side the entire time. If he wakes up, she'll let me know immediately."

Yun Meng Xin looked up towards the sky, unable to look at the bitter battle anymore. She absentmindedly muttered, "Xiao Xue, do you think I was wrong? You told me that Ling Tian might not appear, but I... I bet that he would come back. Because of that, I dragged in big brother and your Snow Moon Loulan. And now, the result... The city won't be able to be defended, and I even dragged down you and big brother, I..."

"No, of course you weren't wrong," Li Xiao Xue smiled and shook her head, "If I were you, I would have done the same thing. The new city is something we might protect. Even if there's only a 1 in a billion chance of it surviving, as long as it stands, we need to protect it. Meng Xin, what you did was right. Not only are you not

in the wrong, but you also made an outstanding decision... Eh?”

As she spoke, Li Xiao Xue looked up in the air, and immediately saw the Sword Emperor shooting towards them.

The Sword Emperor shot towards the south on her sword, flying above where Li Xiao Xue and Yun Meng Xin were after leaving the battlefield. Her unshakeable self suddenly swayed as she finally couldn’t hold on anymore, and fell.

Crash...

The Sword Emperor fell heavily on to the ground but immediately got up, looking around her. After only seeing Li Xiao Xue, Yun Meng Xin, and Mu Bing Yao, she relaxed and heavily leaned against the wall of vines, not moving at all as her chest heaved.

Long Tian Yun was entirely correct-simultaneously controlling 5 swords took a massive toll on the Sword Emperor’s mind, and she had reached her absolute limit. After the Lightning Falcon died, she had used the remnants of her Sword Intent to reach this place. If she had left any later, she would have died there. However, in this state of utter exhaustion, she would not be able to fight for a long time.

Chapter 559 – Xiao Qi's Return (2)

"Sword Emperor?!"

The Sword Emperor's descent from the sky caused Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue to be entirely shocked, and they both cried out. Li Xiao Xue immediately realized what sort of condition the Sword Emperor was in, and after looking around, she found that no one was chasing after the Sword Emperor. Only then did she heave a sigh of relief. The Sword Emperor was simply too fast, and no one could catch up to her. This place was quite far from the battlefield, and adding on the fact that everyone was fighting with all of their might, no one noticed that the Sword Emperor had come over here. Perhaps they saw but didn't dare to come over. The trampled Yan Huang Alliance players who had been praying for this god of killing to leave quickly now no longer wanted to go to their deaths, despite the Sword Emperor leaving.

"The Sword Emperor isn't strong for no reason, nor is she limitless. She's already completely exhausted," Mu Bing Yao said. She understood why the Sword Emperor had suddenly left the battlefield and was in such a state. Physical stamina was unlimited in the virtual world because it was a virtual body. However, the mental energy they used was their own mental energy. For her to use her mental energy like that for so long, the Sword Emperor had reached her absolute limit. She was now incredibly dizzy and numb, and couldn't even move her hands and feet. She would only be able to recover from this after an extended period of rest.

Yun Meng Xin nodded and looked towards the Sword Emperor sitting there, unmoving. She mustered up her courage and walked over as she said, "Big brother... Sword Emperor... Although I don't

know why… Thank you for helping us again.”

The Sword Emperor did not respond, nor did she move. In order to kill even more people, she needed to recover as quickly as possible.

Under normal circumstances, the Sword Qi around the Sword Emperor’s body made those were close to her feel a chill and caused them to tremble involuntarily. However, the current Sword Emperor barely had any sword intent left and didn’t have her typical imposing aura. After waiting a while, Yun Meng Xin did not receive a reply from the Sword Emperor. She took out a bottle of Dew of Dawn and took a step forwards, “Big brother Sword Emperor, this is…”

Woosh! Bang!

Just as Yun Meng Xin stepped out, the [Flowing Red Clouds] Sword suddenly drew a cold arc and landed right in front of Yun Meng Xin, mere millimeters away from the tip of her foot. Yun Meng Xin took a great fight and cried with surprise as she retreated, almost falling over.

The Sword Emperor didn’t move at all and remained completely silent.

Li Xiao Xue hurriedly came over to support Yun Meng Xin as she shook her head, “The Sword Emperor doesn’t allow anyone to go close. Just let the Sword Emperor properly rest.”

Yun Meng Xin, who had taken a great fright, glanced at the Sword Emperor as she lightly nodded. She then walked away with Li Xiao Xue, not daring to approach the Sword Emperor again. The [Flowing Red Clouds] Sword remained stabbed into the ground, as silent as its owner.

By now, the tides of the battle had completely turned in the Yan Huang Alliance's player's favor, as they started to steamroll over the defenders.

In the beginning, there was a 10:1 difference in numbers, but now that difference was 20:1. With such a massive difference in strength, the Yan Huang Alliance could easily surround the defenders and destroy them. Without exerting much effort, they had surrounded the defenders, making it impossible for them to escape. Under such circumstances, the deaths of the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan's players was just a matter of time.

Far away on the platform, Long Tian Yun put down his binoculars, uninterested in watching anymore. Although this conclusion was something that was unchangeable, he was very displeased with how everything had gone. The Sword Emperor's appearance made it so that the defenders, who should have been easily massacred, actually suppressed the Yan Huang Alliance's army for a short while. Moreover, for his heavy cavalry to be annihilated like that was a great humiliation.

"Shadow, how are the casualties?" Long Tian Yun coldly asked as he looked into the distance.

Flame Shadow, who had just finished going through the numbers, immediately replied, “As of 1 minute ago, we’ve lost 120,000 players… Possibly a bit more than the other side.”

“What? 120,000?” Long Tian Yun deeply frowned. Within the virtual world, the casualties were always far greater than in real life. However, Long Tian Yun never expected that they would suffer 120,000 casualties.

“This… Young master, please stay calm,” Flame Shadow hurriedly spoke, “The Sword Emperor’s appearance caused the heavy cavalry to go into a mass panic, and nearly 1,000 people trampled each other to death. During that chaos, the other side rushed up, causing heavy casualties… Also, within the 120,000 deaths, 16,000 were… killed by the Sword Emperor.”

Long Tian Yun suddenly turned to face Flame Shadow, his gaze like a piercing knife, “16,000… people…? Are you sure you’re not joking?”

“It’s very difficult to believe, but this number is accurate.” Flame Shadow could feel cold sweat running down his head. He knew why Long Tian Yun had reacted this way. Back then, the Sword Emperor had been incredibly powerful, and could singlehandedly take down 1,000 players. However, 1 against 10,000 was simply impossible. Apart from the monstrous Eve in the West, no one could accomplish such a feat.

And yet, the Sword Emperor they had seen today, in a mere hour, had killed over 10,000 people… Killing 16,000 people in 1 hour meant that on average, 4 or 5 people died every second from her

swords. Moreover, she had continuously fought without any support.

After today, the Sword Emperor's name would have a new meaning.

The Sword Emperor had become tens of times more powerful, and perhaps she would be able to defeat Ling Tian. However, she no longer belonged to the Yan Huang Alliance, and instead had attacked the Yan Huang Alliance. Long Tian Yun simply couldn't accept this.

"Sss..." Long Tian Yun sucked in a mouthful of cold air as he waved his hand, spitefully saying, "Even if she's a hundred times stronger, she can only kill a few of our people! Is she so naïve to think that she can protect that city? Tell the frontline that I've run out of patience, and I want them all-to-die!!!"

"Roger!" Flame Shadow nodded, then picked up his communication device as he yelled, "All commanders, listen up! Everyone is to attack immediately. Don't allow these small fries to waste the Alliance Master's time and test his patience. Understood?"

Once this order was given out, the pressure on the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan became countless times greater.

Yun Feng rushed to the front, and numerous enemies fell by his sword. By now, he had lost all hope and had become half-crazed. Every attack was incredibly savage and took a life each time. He

completely disregarded defending, and whenever he faced a crisis, there would always be a player from the Disillusion Alliance to block the fatal blow for him. Looking at the incredibly dense encirclement, as well as the Disillusion Alliance's dwindling numbers, he raised his head to the sky and heavily sighed. Yun Feng then viciously roared and rushed up again.

The Yan Huang Alliance's encirclement shrank smaller and smaller, meaning that the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan's numbers were becoming fewer and fewer. When the casualties reached 130,000 with less than 100,000 people left, Yun Meng Xin finally sighed as she said dispiritedly, "He... still, hasn't come. Could this be the heaven's will? It's just that... I can't accept this ending, with the hope I've given to the Fairies and Dwarves..."

Li Xiao Xue's eyes started to tremble as she looked at the current situation. She knew that time did not permit her to hesitate anymore, and she turned to Yun Meng Xin as she said, "Meng Xin, actually..."

Just as Li Xiao Xue was about to speak, an abnormally hot gust of wind blew over, as a crimson red glow appeared in the sky. Li Xiao Xue and Yun Meng Xin subconsciously looked up, and just as they raised their heads, a gigantic red shadow flew from the south over the wall of vines, appearing above them.

Seeing that crimson red shadow, Yun Meng Xin was completely stunned. Although she hadn't seen her many times, her feathers were simply too beautiful. It was likely that there could not be found in the world any feathers more beautiful. Anyone who saw her would be utterly surprised, and would never forget about her.

“Xi… Ling? Xi Ling!!!”

Yun Meng Xin couldn’t help but cry out. Although Xi Ling was much bigger than she remembered, that incredibly beautiful appearance couldn’t be anyone but Xi Ling. Yun Meng Xin’s heart started rapidly thumping. Xi Ling was Ling Tian’s pet and had disappeared for a long time. Now that Xi Ling had appeared here, could it be… that Ling Tian would come soon?

As Yun Meng Xin called out, Xi Ling slowed down, then started flying in circles above where Yun Meng Xin was and let out a shrill cry. Evidently, she still recognized Yun Meng Xin. On her back, a young girl’s face poked over looking at Yun Meng Xin as she yelled in delight, “Big sister Meng Xin, it’s you!”

“Qi Qi? Is that you, Qi Qi?” Looking at the incredibly familiar girl who had left for a long time, Yun Meng Xin almost couldn’t believe her eyes. She never thought that she would be reunited with her here… Moreover, she was overjoyed that she was back… She was back! It was already past the time that the doctors forecasted for her death, and she was back!

Xi Ling quickly descended. Before she reached the ground, the girl impatiently jumped off and rushed towards Yun Meng Xin, jumping up and down with happiness as she hugged her.

“Big sister Meng Xin, I’ve finally met you again. I’m so happy… So glad… Wuu… after such a long time, I nearly missed you all to death… Wuu…” After laughing in joy, Xiao Qi started to cry as she

hugged Yun Meng Xin. Ever since she, Meng Xin and Su'Er had become good sisters, it was the first time that they had separated for so long. She missed them more and more, day by day, which spurred her to do her best to complete the inheritance as soon as possible to leave the Lava Purgatory. She desperately wanted to meet the people close to her, and put their hearts at ease.

Yun Meng Xin's eyes were also full of tears, "It's great to see you safely returned..."

The sisters tightly embraced for a long time, and completely forgot about the desperate battle, as well as the battle cries and yells. After Heart's Dream had been destroyed, they had gone their separate ways. Now that they were reunited, there was too much that they wanted to say to each other. However, the circumstances didn't allow them too much time for that.

Chapter 560 – Fire Purgatory (1)

A dark world:

The girl in Ling Chen's arms fell silent for a while, and he lightly walked as he looked down at this pure white maiden. Her long, white hair gave a dreamlike sensation, and her small face was millions of times cuter than the cutest doll. She rested the entire weight of her body in Ling Chen's arms and lay against his chest. Her arms were wrapped around his neck and naturally fell against his shoulders. Her eyes were peacefully closed, snow-white eyelashes against her pale cheeks, as her small nose and white lips gently moved with each breath.

It took much of Ling Chen's self-control not to lower his head and kiss her as he softly asked, "Sha Sha, are you asleep?"

"Nope." Unexpectedly, Sha Sha immediately answered him with her eyes closed. When she spoke, her lips upturned in a smile, and her body gently moved, shifting into a more comfortable position.

"Then why aren't you talking anymore?"

"Because it feels very comfortable and peaceful lying in Ling Chen's arms."

Ling Chen smiled warmly. Even he was surprised by how warm his smile was.

Hugging Sha Sha gave him a sense of peace and comfort. He would only feel this sort of sensation while holding Shui Ruo.

After Shui Ruo escaped from the Isrock Disease, Ling Chen felt, while he hugged her, he had the whole world in his arms. He felt so at peace and relaxed that he had no more regrets in the world. He had fallen for Shui Ruo at first sight, and their feelings for each other had grown over the past 6 years. However, it was the first time he had met this girl called Sha Sha, and yet she gave him this sort of feeling, which was simply incomprehensible to him. However, Ling Chen knew this feeling was incredibly real because his feelings would not be able to trick him.

The only explanation was this girl had a magical charm to her.

.....

“Qi Qi, why have you come here? Why didn’t you tell us that you were fine first? We’ve been worried about you the whole time.” Looking at Xiao Qi in front of her, much of Yun Meng Xin’s despair about the new city disappeared. Indeed, what better news than that of Xiao Qi safely coming back? No matter how important the new city was, it was still doomed; how could it compare to Xiao Qi’s safety?

“I only just left that place because I wanted to come with Xi Ling, but Xi Ling can’t use teleport scrolls, so I asked Xi Ling to fly me here. That way, I could enjoy the sensation of flying as much as possible, and I wanted to come back secretly to give you a surprise. Who would have thought that I would meet you here? Ah! That’s right, big sister Meng Xin, what are you doing here? And what’s

going on over there?”

Xiao Qi still looked the same, but the feeling she gave off was entirely different from before. This was mainly due to her large eyes; they seemed full of spirit, and also contained a faint red light. She was wearing a set of red equipment, from her headgear to earrings, clothes, gloves, her ring, and her shoes... They were all completely red. Moreover, it wasn’t a festive, celebratory red, but a burning red color.

This was especially true for her clothes. When people looked at them, they would find it difficult to avert their eyes. It seemed to be a full-body battle gown and was covered with flame-like magic inscriptions. Those inscriptions were not simple at all, and if one looked at them for a while, they would feel the inscriptions were moving around like fire, giving off a burning sensation. A phoenix-like bird was embroidered on the abdomen. When looking at it, one would feel a suppressing sense of might, and at the back of the gown, 10 or so phoenix-like tail feathers were attached, looking incredibly beautiful. Every inch of the battle gown stuck tightly to Xiao Qi’s body, and the shape of her two, large breasts, as well as her hips, could be seen. She looked not only heroic but also wild and sexy.

Xiao Qi’s figure was incredibly sensual and adding on her beautiful looks, anyone’s eyes would be fixed on her once they looked. She brought out the full charm of this battle gown as if it was made especially for her. When Xiao Qi and Yun Meng Xin tightly embraced, Li Xiao Xue’s gaze was fixed on Xiao Qi’s battle gown; her eyes lit with desire. She didn’t know what this battle gown was called or where it came from, but she was certain that it was no ordinary piece of equipment.

“It’s Long Tian Yun. He wants to destroy our city,” in response to Xiao Qi’s question, Yun Meng Xin gave a heavy and powerless reply.

“Our… city?” Xiao QI’s eyes stared wide open as she exclaimed, “Could it be that this city…”

“It’s ours.” Yun Meng Xin smiled, “Ling Tian obtained the City Creation Token and gave it, as well as many other things, to me. Together, with Xiao Xue and many other people’s help, our new city’s nearly completed. However, in the final few days before completion, we were discovered by Long Tian Yun, so…”

After listening to them, Xiao Qi more or less understood the situation. Mystic Moon wasn’t the first virtual game she had been in, and she knew just how important the City Creation Token was. She understood the necessity of secretly building a city, as well as the consequences of this city being discovered by Long Tian Yun.

With her good sister back by her side, Yun Meng Xin, who had suppressed her emotions all this time, could finally let them out. She told Xiao Qi about the process of the construction of the new city, which included the Fairy Clan’s hope and the Dwarf Clan’s future. She told Xiao Qi about how the new city had been discovered, and how Ling Tian still had not appeared, as well as the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan sacrificing themselves to stop the Yan Huang Alliance. She also told her about the Sword Emperor’s help. However, they had still fallen into these desperate straits.

Xiao Qi understood everything. Her excited heart settled down, and she became serious, her spirited eyes becoming concerned.

She had completed the inheritance at a speed which even surprised the Vermillion Bird and had taken less than half a year in total. She had excitedly returned to meet with the people she had continually missed, as well as to put their hearts at ease and share in her happiness. However, she would never have thought she would be faced with such a desperate situation on the very first day she returned.

At the same time, she felt quite happy... Thank goodness, I wasn't too late. No matter what the result is, at least I made it back in time and can face this together with Meng Xin. At least she won't have to face this by herself. This new city contains her blood, sweat, and tears, and she's given everything for this new city. If this new city is destroyed, she'll suffer a massive blow. At least in the worst-case scenario, I can help her bear this... No! We can't let this worst-case scenario happen!

Xiao Qi turned and looked to the north as her eyes flashed with a faint red light. The Vermillion Bird's Eyes of Flames allowed her to see extremely far away. However, all she could see was a sea of the Yan Huang Alliance's players, and almost no Disillusion Alliance or Snow Moon Loulan players. This was because they were completely suppressed, and there were barely any of them left.

Xiao Qi bit her lips as she gently held Yun Meng Xin's hands. She suddenly turned around and jumped on Xi Ling's back as she pointed towards the north, "Xi Ling, please take me over there."

Xi Ling gave a low cry as she flapped her wings. Yun Meng Xin hurried over as she asked, “Qi Qi, where are you going?”

“To go beat those bad guys who want to destroy our new home!”

“… Don’t do it! It’s far too dangerous!”

“Don’t worry, big sister Meng Xin,” Xiao Qi smiled as she flew away with Xi Ling, “I’m not that same Qi Qi who needed everyone to protect her. It’s time for me to protect our new home… I’ll do my best and will keep myself safe.”

Xi Ling currently wasn’t a pet and was completely free. Back when Ling Chen had sent Xi Ling to the Lava Purgatory, the Vermillion Bird’s first condition was for Ling Chen to cancel the soul contract between Xi Ling and himself. Afterwards, Xi Ling returned from being a pet to being a Boss. This was because the Vermillion Bird didn’t want a sovereign-level being like Xi Ling to become someone’s pet. It wanted her to regain her freedom and not be bound by anyone.

If she still wanted to be Ling Chen’s pet, that was her choice. It was only because Xi Ling wasn’t a pet anymore that she could leave Ling Chen and stay at the Lava Purgatory. However, because she was no longer a pet, and was a kind beast, she was unable to take the initiative to attack players. Otherwise, if she killed players who did not attack her, she would become an evil beast. Only after she became a pet would she be able to fight whenever her master wished.

However, there weren't any restrictions for her against flying Xiao Qi to her destination and protecting her.

In her optimal condition, Xi Ling could fly extremely quickly, and she soon arrived at the battlefield. Fifty meters above the battlefield was an extremely safe distance, and looking down at the densely-gathered Yan Huang Alliance, Xiao Qi stretched out her right hand as a crimson red, strangely-shaped Magic Staff appeared in her grasp. This Staff was called [Vermillion Death] and was shaped from the Vermilion Bird's bones, forged using the Vermillion Bird's soul flames. It significantly increased the damage of any Fire Magic attack. When [Vermillion Death] appeared, the [Vermillion Bird's Battle Gown] lit up with a red light, as the fiery inscriptions became real flames, burning wildly on Xiao Qi's body. Xiao Qi raised the [Vermillion Death], and as she moved her arm, 3 fist-sized balls of flame fell downwards.

"I'll burn all you bad guys!"

The 3 balls of flame were a shocking red color, and there was not a hint of yellowness within them. However, because they were too small, no one on the chaotic battlefield noticed them. Even if players did see them, they would immediately look away and not take them to heart... After all, those small balls of flame looked like low-level Fire spells.

However, no one could have thought that these 3 seemingly ordinary balls of flame were the most powerful, hot and holy flames on the Forgotten Continent, the Vermillion Bird's Flames.

Chapter 561 – Fire Purgatory (2)

The 3 balls of flame quickly fell, unnoticed, towards 3 different places. Just as they hit the ground, the 3 fist-sized balls of fire suddenly exploded out with a deafening boom as 3 areas that were ten or so meters long were devoured by flames.

In the north, Long Tian Yun's hand, which held the binoculars, slightly trembled because within his field of vision 3 crimson red dots had appeared. In a battle with millions of people, the battlefield was incredibly large, and yet the explosions from those 3 fireballs were still quite visible. They immediately attracted Long Tian Yun's attention, and even Cang Yan by his side cried out, "What is that?"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Countless players cried out in fear and shock; the explosion from the 3 balls of flame mercilessly devoured 3 massive crowds of players. On this battlefield packed with people, there were at least 10 players within range of the balls of fire. Tens of people were caught up in the explosions and could only cry out as they died. It didn't matter if they were Warriors, Archers, Shield Bearers or Mages; even Flame Wizards, who possessed extremely high resistances to Fire, died in an instant. No one could last another second within those flames.

If these flames couldn't insta-kill players around the same level, how could they deserve to be called the Vermillion Bird's Flames?

The 3 fireballs exploded as terrifying flames swept at the players around them, causing mass panic. They guessed this was some high-grade skill scroll or a high-grade attack item. However, they never thought it could be just a normal attack which, if the caster had enough MP, could be cast an unlimited number of times.

Whoosh!

In the air, Xiao Qi once again swung her staff as another 3 fist-sized balls of flame were thrown down towards the Yan Huang Alliance players. Another 3 explosions sounded as another 3 regions were cleared out, and 30 or so players were insta-killed. Xiao Qi's eyebrows raised slightly as she continuously attacked.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Boom! Boom! Boom! .....

Every time Xiao Qi attacked she would cause 3 explosions which would insta-kill a large crowd of Yan Huang Alliance players. The terrified Yan Huang Alliance players all looked up and found the source of these fiery explosions. There was a large, crimson red bird flying around above them, and there was a young girl dressed in red. The balls of flames came from her.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Boom! Boom! Boom…

Xiao Qi's attacks were incredibly fast; every 3 seconds she could attack roughly twice. As Xi Ling slowly flew around, the fireballs were scattered throughout the Yan Huang Alliance's army, blowing the Yan Huang Alliance players to kingdom come and scaring them to death. Attacking twice every 3 seconds and killing at least 30 or so players with each attack… This was even faster than the Sword Emperor!

Through his binoculars, Long Tian Yun watched the balls of flame continuously explode within his troops like grenades, quickly taking their lives. Long Tian Yun's frown became deeper and deeper as he asked in a low voice, "Who… is this person?"

"Surely it's… an NPC?" Cang Yan hesitantly replied.

"NPCs are unable to participate in this battle. That's a player… Moreover, what she's using evidently isn't an item, but Magic attacks!" Long Tian Yun said as he ground his teeth in fury.

"What?! That… That's impossible!" Cang Yan's hands trembled as his face slightly twisted, "It must be some type of attack item; they'll definitely run out of supply soon! No second upgrade skill can release that kind of Fire Magic! I, Cang Yan, am the most powerful Fire Mage; how could anyone be stronger than me with Fire Magic? Even if there is, how could we not know about them?"

"Hmph! Of course, it's not impossible," Long Tian Yun said with a dark expression as waves of shock were sent through his heart.

Attacking 3 different places at once and with such a large range and terrifying power... What was even more terrifying was these ultimate-level abilities were being cast with almost no cooldown time, at all!

When had such a fearsome Fire Mage appeared in China?

Long Tian Yun picked up his communication device as he roared, “Assemble the strongest Hunters and tell them to investigate all of the information about that person!”

Long Tian Yun immediately received a reply full of fear, “W-We’ve already investigated her. Her name is ‘Cute Qi Qi’, but we couldn’t find any information on her profession. This name seems to be... be...”

Cute Qi Qi... Long Tian Yun paused in shock before his eyes widened, “Xiao... Qi...”

“How... How could it be her?! What the hell’s going on?” Long Tian Yun muttered to himself in shock. He never expected this monstrous Fire Mage was the Xiao family’s princess, who he had never taken seriously. His expression darkened as he roared, “Who cares who she is! Have you trash all died? Hurry up and kill her! Can’t you see how much damage she’s causing us every second she’s alive?”

“B-But she’s too high! She’s at least 50 meters in the sky, and no one can attack her!” The voice in the communication device hurriedly replied.

Flying pets were quite rare, and only 1 out of a few thousand players would have one. Moreover, most of these pets could fly a maximum of 20 meters in the air, and some could fly a maximum of 30 meters in the air. There were essentially no pets that could fly above this point. This was because regular Marksmen had a range of 30 meters, and in order to make the game balanced, the system set the flying limit for the vast majority of pets to 30 meters.

However, Xiao Qi, while flying on her pet, was able to fly 50 meters in the air. Even if the Yan Huang Alliance's players cried and wailed as much as they wanted, they wouldn't be able to do anything to her.

"Idiots!" Long Tian Yun furiously replied, "Gather all of the players with flying pets and get them to temporarily transfer them to the strongest Marksmen so they can shoot her out of the air. Understood?"

"U-Understood! The Alliance Master is truly wise!"

"Hurry up and go!"

"R-Roger!"

While Long Tian Yun responded in shock and fury, the other bosses of the large guilds were completely dumbfounded. They watched the red shadow in the air, as well as the continuous attacks she was raining down, as they heard their hearts loudly thump.

Who was this person?

When did such a monstrous player appear in China?

What skill was that? No matter the range, AOE or direct, they were all unbelievable!

“Hurry! Send people to investigate that person!”

“Immediately go and find that person’s name… it should be a woman, but the only women on the Heaven Rankings are the Frozen Hearted Man-Eater and the Loulan Queen; who is this person?”

“Hurry up and find out who that person is! After the Sword Emperor left, another monster appeared. It seems that she’s no weaker than the Sword Emperor…. Goddamn! The Sword Emperor’s already helping the new city, and if we offend both of these people…”

Xiao Qi’s attacks from the sky were simply too overwhelming and caused the bosses of the large guilds to feel a deep sense of fear. None of them could sit still, and all of them were desperate to find out her identity. When they heard the name ‘Cute Qi Qi’, they were all completely dumbfounded.

They were not unfamiliar with this name. However, they had not paid much attention to this name either; they were only somewhat

familiar with it because it was the Battle Alliance's Alliance Master's little sister! This girl entered the virtual world quite early on, and apart from her stunning looks, there was not much else about her.

.....

Real world, Beijing:

Ding...

The game bracelet on his wrist sounded out. Xiao Qiu Feng looked down, and after hesitating, he answered. A voice hurriedly spoke, and just from the 2 sentences, Xiao Qiu Feng's body froze as his hands started to shake emotionally.

After ending the call, Xiao Qiu Feng charged into the living room and hurriedly turned on the screen. Needless to say, it was currently broadcasting the battle for the new city. Xiao Qiu Feng quickly flicked through the scenes until his gaze fell on a red figure.

"Qi Qi... Qi Qi..."

After muttering her name, Xiao Qiu Feng started to laugh.

The Cold Magistrate actually laughed; if this news spread, many people would be shocked to death. Even Yun Feng, who knew him for over 10 years, had never seen him laugh before. Xiao Qiu Feng

stood as his expression became incredibly resolute. He called the Battle Alliance's commanders through his game bracelet as he said, "I want everyone gathered north of the Azure Forest Village in 3 minutes. Everyone in the entire guild; not a single person less! If anyone doesn't show up, regardless of excuse, they'll be kicked from the Battle Alliance!"

Chapter 562 – Fire Purgatory (3)

“That’s… Qi Qi?” Looking at the red figure in the sky, Yun Meng Xin’s mouth fell wide open, and she was unable to believe her eyes. That girl in red had flown over the Yan Huang Alliance, and every time she attacked 3 fiery explosions burst forth, bringing disaster to the Yan Huang Alliance. Was this really the incredibly weak Ice Mage who had to rely on Mu Bing Yao and Su’Er’s attacks, and Shui Ruo’s protection to level up?

“Before, you told me that she went to the south by herself. Looks like she went to an incredible place and experienced some amazing things,” Li Xiao Xue’s face was also full of shock. Although Xiao Qi relied on Xi Ling to stay high in the air, away from attacks, the speed at which she killed enemy troops was not at all inferior to the Sword Emperor.

“When she left, she said she decided to trust Ling Tian’s words, to go and search for a possible hope,” Yun Meng Xin looked towards the red figure far away as she said in a soft voice, “Not only did she find hope, she also found a miracle… This is great.”

Xiao Qi’s attacks caused the Yan Huang Alliance to suffer greatly, and their entire army was once again thrown into disarray. They were faced with the fear of 3 massive bombs every second; in such a densely-gathered crowd, trying to evade these attacks was almost impossible. What was even worse was they couldn’t even counterattack, and could only passively receive the attacks, pitifully crying out.

Yun Feng’s eyes were red with bloodlust, and his ‘Earth-Splitting

Slash' simultaneously killed the 3 players who had been attacking him together for a while. He drew ragged breaths as he looked at Xiao Qi, who was bringing fear and desolation to the Yan Huang Alliance's army. He wiped his mouth as he chuckled, saying to himself, "Heh, not only did she return, she's become so incredible. After today, the Battle Alliance will become even more famous because of you! Xiao Qiu Feng, seeing Qi Qi not only return safely but becoming so mighty, you must be delirious with joy."

"Ahhhhhhh!!!" Yun Feng roared out as he rushed towards a place densely gathered with the Yan Huang Alliance's players.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Boom! Boom! Boom...

The Yan Huang Alliance's army was continuously bombarded with explosions. Not only were their bodies incinerated but their minds grew frightened, as well. At this moment, Xiao Qi suddenly stopped as Xi Ling gave a cry, and quickly turned and left; below them, to the north, a large patch of black dots appeared and quickly rushed towards her.

That was a crowd of flying pets, and all of them carried a Marksman holding bows. At a glance, there were at least 1,000 of them!

Xiao Qi immediately understood was happening. Indeed, this was the only way to attack her with her so high in the air.

The squadron of flying pets drew closer and closer, and when the closest ones were already 100 meters away, Xiao Qi did not seem worried at all. Instead, there was a red flush on her perfect face as she stretched out her right arm with the [Vermillion Death] pointed ahead of her, and red flames started to burn on top of the Vermillion Death.

“Vermillion Bird’s Wings!!”

Whoosh!

The crimson red flames burst out and took the shape of the Vermillion Bird. It flapped its wings as it flew towards the flying pets, and a faint bird’s cry rang out.

When they were about 100 meters away, the Archers on the flying pets didn’t even have time to prepare to attack when they suddenly saw a phoenix-shaped flame rushing towards them. It instantly spanned the 100 meters distance, closing in on them extremely quickly. The blazing flames were like a ferocious beast, and as it passed through them, nearly 50 Marksmen had no time even to cry out as they were devoured and fell with the pets to the ground.

“W-What?! Impossible! This is impossible! How can she attack from such a distance?”

The binoculars the Flame Emperor held fell to the ground as he stared with wide eyes and yelled out. He simply couldn't accept what he had just seen. At most, his Fire Magic's range was 50% greater than that of average players. He was completely confident that he was China's number 1 Mage. However, he had just seen Xiao Qi attack from nearly 100 meters away. Even his strongest Fire Magic wouldn't come close.

"Impossible? Ha! Do you think we're both seeing things?" Long Tian Yun coldly replied. At this moment, a piercing bird's cry sounded from a distance. When they heard this cry, Long Tian Yun's hands suddenly trembled as his eyes widened; when he heard the bird's call, he had seen the flying pets who were chasing after Xiao Qi fall like rocks and crash into the army below. One second, a dark wave of flying pets filled the sky, and in the next second, there was not a single one of them left; all of them had fallen.

In Xi Ling's current state, although she couldn't attack players, she was still able to attack pets. With her sovereign grade, a mighty cry from her was not something these flying pets, who were like trash in front of her, could contend with. Before Xi Ling, they were like a group of rats which met the king of the jungle. Under a roar from the king of the jungle, apart from tremble, they couldn't do anything at all.

Xiao Qi continued to rain down balls of flame, resulting in countless pitiful cries. The Yan Huang Alliance had spent much time transferring the flying pets and had gathered 1,000 of their best Marksmen. Yet, Xiao Qi and Xi Ling had completely destroyed them with a single attack and a single cry, turning all that effort into a joke. Long Tian Yun tightly gripped his fists together,

making a cracking sound as he viciously spat, “Bring out the Cloud Piercing Crossbow!!”

“W-What? The Cloud Piercing Crossbow?” Flame Shadow was given a big fright as he hurriedly replied, “But isn’t that the secret weapon to be used against Ling Tian? If we reveal it now…”

“I said to bring out the Cloud Piercing Crossbow! Are you deaf?!”

“Eh? A-Alright… Team 3, you have 1 minute to prepare the Cloud Piercing Crossbow! The target is the girl in the sky using Fire Magic!”

After Flame Shadow gave this order, a 10 meters long, 10 meters wide, metallic crossbow chariot was slowly pushed out. On top of the chariot was a gigantic, dark gray crossbow.

It was called The Cloud Piercing Crossbow because it was powerful enough to pierce through clouds. Two months ago, one of the Yan Huang Alliance’s elite groups had obtained the Cloud Piercing Crossbow’s blueprints at a mysterious ruin 2 months ago. They had passed it to the Azure Dragon City’s best Blacksmiths and expended large amounts of money and time. After many failures, they finally created this terrifying killing machine.

The Cloud Piercing Crossbow was not a standard Archer’s weapon, but an attack item. Its grade was close to Heaven’s End, and it was the most powerful attack item possessed by players at the current stage of the game. It weighed more than 1 ton, and its draw weight was even more monstrous; it required at least 30

players who each had more than 300 Strength to pull it. The heavy crossbow bolts shot by the Cloud Piercing Crossbow could reach up to 1,000 meters away. Of course, to release such power, the crossbow bolts were not ordinary either. The crossbow bolts weighed 50 kilograms and were made from Starcloud Chilling Iron. A single arrow was worth 1 million gold.

The Cloud Piercing Crossbow was one of the Yan Huang Alliance's secrets and was Long Tian Yun's ultimate weapon against Ling Tian. He was confident that with the Cloud Piercing Crossbow's might, he would be able to kill Ling Tian from a thousand meters away.

However, Ling Tian had not appeared today while Xiao Qi had, forcing Long Tian Yun to use this secret weapon early.

The heavy crossbow bolt was loaded onto the Cloud Piercing Crossbow, and 30 elite Warriors, who had completed their second profession upgrade, pulled the drawstring. As a metallic creaking sound was heard, the Cloud Piercing Crossbow slowly turned, until it finally accurately pointed towards Xiao Qi.

Whoosh!!!!

The Cloud Piercing Bow fired, and the massive recoil caused the metal chariot to be launched back, sending the 30 elite Warriors flying.

In every corner of the battlefield, everyone heard an incredibly piercing sound. The crossbow bolt broke through the air, traveling

extremely quickly and traversing a thousand meters in an instant. Everyone raised their heads, watching as that terrifying black crossbow bolt shot towards Xiao Qi.

Bang!

The crossbow bolt was simply too fast, and by the time Xiao Qi noticed it, it was already too late. She was hit directly in the chest by the crossbow bolt, and the massive impact caused her to fall from Xi Ling's back...

-160,000!

The massive damage was enough to kill Xiao Qi 10 times over. She was sent flying nearly 100 meters by the crossbow bolt, and she fell powerlessly down.

"Ahhh!! Qi Qi!!" Yun Meng Xin cried out in shock and horror as her eyes trembled, her heart falling into a deep abyss.

"Just then... What happened?" Li Xiao Xue was also completely dumbfounded The Yan Huang Alliance actually had such a fearsome weapon?!

In the distance, the faces of the bosses of the large guilds went pale as they stared in shock. Seeing the crossbow bolt hit Xiao Qi, they felt as if they, themselves, had been hit in the heart. Every guild had their trump cards, and they were no exception. However, the Yan Huang Alliance's secret weapon was something they could

not even imagine. That arrow seemed to come from beyond where the eye could see, and the sound of the air being torn told them it would be able even to destroy the sturdy gates of a city. During a large war, a single crossbow bolt would be able to pierce through anything within a thousand meters; who could block such a thing?!

This crossbow bolt killed the Yan Huang Alliance's greatest enemy in this battle and gave a warning to anyone who had any ideas against them.

Watching Xiao Qi being pierced by the crossbow bolt, Long Tian Yun smirked as he said in a low voice, "The Yan Huang Alliance hasn't displayed its might in a while, and some people seem to have forgotten how terrifying the Yan Huang Alliance is... hm?"

Long Tian Yun suddenly stopped speaking as he frowned.

As countless people watched, Xiao Qi's falling body suddenly burned with a crimson red flame. The fire completely covered Xiao QI's body, and her descent began to slow; she eventually floated in the air. Xi Ling chased over, and once again put Xiao Qi, wrapped in flames, on her back. In that instant, the flames on Xiao Qi's body disappeared. She raised her [Vermillion Death] as she continued to attack, sending the dumbstruck Yan Huang Alliance players into a fire purgatory.

After inheriting the Vermillion Bird's Flames, how could Xiao Qi not possess the Nirvana Flames? Moreover, because Xiao Qi's life-force couldn't compare to that of the Vermillion Bird's, a Mysterious God grade beast, the amount of Nirvana Flames she

required for a resurrection was incredibly minuscule. The Vermillion Bird could only use its Nirvana Flames once in its lifetime, but Xiao Qi could use it 9 times every day.

In other words, if the Yan Huang Alliance truly wanted to kill Xiao Qi, they would have to kill her 10 times within a day!

“Re...vival?!”

Long Tian Yun’s expression became savage. The Cloud Piercing Crossbow, which he wanted to use to show the Yan Huang Alliance’s might, had not been able to kill Xiao Qi, making him utterly furious. He roared, “Again!! I want her dead!!”

A second crossbow bolt was loaded onto the Cloud Piercing Crossbow. Because of how unique the crossbow bolts were, the Yan Huang Alliance only had 12 of them. Every use was a significant expenditure. Flame Shadow watched in pain as 30 elite Warriors drew the drawstring back.

Whoosh!

This sound was even greater than the one before, causing everyone to look up simultaneously. The crossbow bolt’s speed was absolutely monstrous, and despite being nearly a thousand meters away, let alone Xiao Qi, even Xi Ling was unable to react in time. She was unable to evade at all as an explosion-like sound rang out, and Xiao Qi was once again hit. She was sent flying by the crossbow bolt, and her HP immediately vanished.

Countless cries of shock and worry sounded out as Long Tian Yun coldly laughed. Revival items were incredibly rare, but they definitely existed. He was sure that Xiao Qi had used some sort of revival item before. However, not only were they rare, they had strict usage conditions; no matter what item it was, a person could only use one of those items every day at most.

Just as he laughed, his face froze.

Xiao Qi's body once again started to burn with crimson red flames, and within the Nirvana Flames, Xiao Qi stood up on top of Xi Ling's back, with numerous looks of disbelief focused on her. If it were the Xiao Qi from before, she would have felt quite nervous at being looked at like this. However, with the Vermillion Bird's power, as well as the Vermillion Bird's soul's might and the air of a monarch, she remained remarkably calm; only her large eyes shone with an unnatural red glow.

After her second revival, she did not continue to launch her normal attacks but silently looked beneath her as she slowly lifted the [Vermillion Death].

"Inheritor of my power, you must remember that fire is the most vibrant and the most explosive element. Those who inherit the power of flames will feel their personalities become more explosive and will become easily angered. However, do not try to suppress your fury, because your fury will allow the flames within you to become more vibrant and the might of your flames to become more powerful. When your fury reaches the extreme, you can use my Vermillion Bird Clan's most powerful skill - Dazzling Red Lotus.

“Although Dazzling Red Lotus can’t compare to the Golden Crow’s Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, it’s more powerful than the Phoenix Clan’s World Burning Heavenly Flames. Once Dazzling Red Lotus starts burning, it will cause everything within 1,000 miles to be incinerated. Although you’ve inherited my flames, it hasn’t been very long, and your power is not yet stable. Because of your body’s limitations, I was only able to give enough power to activate a small Dazzling Red Lotus. However, even that will cause unimaginable results.

“As such, before you reach LV90, even if you feel incredibly furious, don’t try to use Dazzling Red Lotus. Moreover, the Dazzling Red Lotus doesn’t differentiate between allies and foes, and it can burn even the current you. Although the Vermillion Bird’s Battle Gown will protect you, it will still harm your innocent friends. Remember my words.”

The Vermillion Bird’s words echoed in Xiao Qi’s mind, then became hazy and vanished. Beneath her, Xi Ling seemed to detect something and beat her wings as she gave a long cry.

Xiao Qi didn’t notice any of this. Her mind was becoming hotter and hotter as her consciousness spread to 100 meters away… 1,000 meters away… 10,000 meters away…

The Yan Huang Alliance’s army… Long Tian Yun, who was far away to the south of the Azure Forest Village… The Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan, who were desperately fighting… Yun Meng Xin, Li Xiao Xue and Mu Bing Yao, who were north of the new city… The silently recovering Sword Emperor…

She could see all of them...

No one knew this moment would become the starting point of a legend - “Arouse the Flame Empress’ fury, a million troops to bury.”

Chapter 563 – Dazzling Red Lotus

The burning fire covered Xiao Qi's body and grew faster and faster. At the same time, a wave of heat quickly spread out from her. The players below Xiao Qi all stopped fighting and raised their heads as they watched the expanding ball of crimson red flames. The air around them had suddenly become incredibly hot; the heat was simply blistering, causing their skin to go red.

"What... What's going on?"

The sudden rise in temperature made it difficult for Yun Feng to breathe. He took a deep breath, and the hot air made his organs feel like they were boiling. What was even worse was the temperature was still quickly rising every second. Around them, no matter if it was the Yan Huang Alliance's players or the defenders, all of them started to panic due to the unbearable heat as they watched the flame in the sky. They all began to retreat in fear, trying to get as far away as possible. They had been lost in their bloodlust and disregarded their own lives. However, the pain of being burnt to death was worse than death at the hands of their enemies.

As the temperature continued to rise, the area that was affected also increased. More and more players started to panic, and more than half of them started to stare up at Xiao Qi. Every person knew this girl in the flaming gown was the source of this terrifying heat. As they felt themselves suffocating from the heat, they all knew that this heat was most likely preparing for something even more terrifying.

“What’s going on over there?”

Seeing the strange reactions coming from the center of the battlefield, Long Tian Yun frowned.

“From the information we received, that region has become incredibly hot, to the point that it’s unbearable. Everyone there feels like they’re being roasted in an oven,” Flame Shadow quickly replied.

“Hot?” Long Tian Yun looked up at Xiao Qi as he coldly harrumphed, “Hmph, looks like she’s going to use some big move. Tell everyone there to disperse. Based on how strong her normal attacks are, if she uses an ultimate skill, it might cause hundreds, if not thousands, of deaths.”

“Thousands? How could there be such powerful Fire Magic?” Cang Yan said hatefully.

“Just because you haven’t seen it before doesn’t mean it doesn’t exist! Moreover, with how densely gathered the players are in the center of the battlefield if she uses an AOE ultimate skill, it’s likely she will be able to kill at least a thousand people. Flame Shadow, prepare 3 crossbow bolts! Since Ling Tian hasn’t appeared, we’ll give this gift to her. I’m determined to kill this strange little girl today!”

Caw!!

After giving a loud cry, Xi Ling suddenly left Xiao Qi and flew towards the south. Without Xi Ling, with the flames around her body, Xiao Qi remained in the air without falling. Xi Ling quickly left, then dived towards Yun Feng within the crowd. Yun Feng only felt a gust of heat, and before he had realized what was happening, he was lifted up by Xi Ling into the sky as they flew towards the south. After reaching Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue, Xi Ling dropped the bewildered Yun Feng as she landed in front of them, anxiously looking at Xiao Qi in the air; by now, no one could stop Xiao Qi. Under such circumstances, Xi Ling couldn't protect everyone, so she did her best to protect the people who she knew.

"What's going on? What's Qi Qi doing?" Yun Feng crawled up from the ground as he breathed raggedly.

"Xi Ling, what's happening to Qi Qi?" Yun Meng Xin worriedly asked.

Xi Ling did not reply. She spread out her crimson-golden wings as a semi-spherical red barrier formed. It spread out and covered Yun Feng, Yun Meng Xin, Li Xiao Xue, Mu Bing Yao, as well as the silent Sword Emperor who was 10 steps away.

At this moment, the sound of the air being torn apart resonated as 3 crossbow bolts shot towards Xiao Qi. By the time she saw them, the dark gray arrows were less than 10 meters away from Xiao Qi, and a surprised 'Ah' sounded out from Yun Meng Xin's mouth.

Sssssss...

The 3 crossbow bolts all seemed to hit Xiao Qi. However, the result this time was completely different than before. The crossbow bolts didn't pass through her body and continue flying, nor was Xiao Qi sent flying, and there weren't any damage figures. Xiao Qi, surrounded by the flames, continued to hover in the air, while the crossbow bolts strangely disappeared the instant they touched her body.

Anything that touched the unbelievably hot Vermillion Bird's Origin Flames would be instantly incinerated.

Long Tian Yun, who had been waiting for Xiao Qi to be killed again, was completely dumbfounded. In that instant, he thought there was something wrong with his eyes. At this moment, an incredibly loud bird's cry sounded out; they were evidently more than 10 miles apart from each other, and yet it sounded like it was coming from right next to his ears, causing his body to tremble.

A red light appeared above Xiao Qi, as a gigantic red shadow suddenly appeared. It had 2 wings and looked beautiful and majestic, giving off an overwhelming sense of might. It was the image of a bird, and it had a phoenix-like head, eagle-like claws, snake-like neck and phoenix-like tail feathers. It was covered in crimson red feathers, which all burned with an intense flame.

It was evidently the Vermillion Bird's Phantasm!

The image was a thousand meters long, and it gave a majestic cry, flapping its wings as it slowly faded and disappeared. Although it

had only appeared for a brief instant, it made a lasting impression in every person's mind. The moment the Vermillion Bird's Phantasm disappeared, the flames around Xiao Qi's body suddenly flooded upwards, then began to fall around her, looking like a blossoming flower. When it had fully blossomed, it looked as if there was a flaming lotus in the sky with Xiao Qi at the center.

This incredibly beautiful scene made the onlookers forget to breathe, and all of them looked up with their mouths wide open as they stared at the flaming lotus. They even forgot about the rising heat. Within their vision, there was only a single layer of petals, which contained 9 individual petals. A second layer then blossomed, followed by a third, a fourth, and a fifth; with every extra layer that blossomed, the flaming lotus doubled in size. In the end, it had grown from a small lotus into one that covered the entire sky.

Through the binoculars, Long Tian Yun saw the flaming lotus appear, and the battlefield fell silent. However, no one noticed this terrifying silence, because the flaming lotus drew their attention in the sky. When the flaming lotus was all he could see through the binoculars, he put them away and suddenly found that the flaming lotus' petals were right in front of him.

The binoculars in his hands fell to the ground as Long Tian Yun's eyes widened in fear and shock, causing him to stumble backward; he was 10 miles away from the battlefield and was definitely safe. Even if someone tried to approach him here, they would be stopped by countless Yan Huang Alliance players. He never thought the flaming lotus would extend here.

Long Tian Yun felt no fear when he was killed by the Sword Emperor because he didn't care about his level, nor did he care about dying. However, currently, he felt absolutely terrified. This scene, which surpassed anything he had seen before, completely destroyed any mental defense he had, and he fell to the ground as an incredibly hot heat wave rushed towards him. As the flaming petals spread out over him, he could hear himself screaming in fear.

The flaming lotus was now fully formed, and its petals stretched from the Azure Forest Village to in front of the new city and spanned 20 miles. All of the Yan Huang Alliance, Disillusion Alliance, and Snow Moon Loulan's players were underneath the gigantic, flaming lotus. It only took the flaming lotus, from beginning to end, a few seconds to grow.

Finally, the red lotus disappeared as every part of the red lotus became crimson red flames as it began to burn mercilessly. The beautiful, dream-like red lotus disappeared, and replacing it was a sea of flames that spanned 20 miles. At the center, the flames were hundreds of meters tall, as if they wished to break through the heavens.

In front of the new city, Yun Feng, Yun Meng Xin, Li Xiao Xue and Mu Bing Yao's expressions froze as they looked at the sea of flames around them. No matter if it was in front, to their sides, or above them, there were only intense flames and nothing else.

They could no longer see any people because the sea of flames devoured all of them. Yet, there were pitiful cries; under the Vermillion Bird Clan's most powerful skill, the Dazzling Red Lotus,

the weak players didn't even have time to cry out before they were completely obliterated.

Around them, the red barrier that Xi Ling put up completely separated them from the flames and heat, preventing them from taking any damage. Within the Dazzling Red Lotus' range, only they had survived. Everyone else... was burnt to a crisp.

The flames burned for more than 10 minutes, and they stared in shock for more than 10 minutes, during which no one spoke. Apart from the sounds of the flames burning, there was no other sound. When the wind blew, and the flames died down, at a glance, there was not a single person there. The sea of players which had extended for nearly 10 miles had completely disappeared and not even corpses were left. The equipment that the players had dropped and filled the ground was also gone.

The vast grassy plains had also disappeared, replaced by a large area of scorched earth, and white smoke billowed everywhere. The ground had even sunk down a bit.

Everything was gone. There were no traces of battle on the battlefield that had been extremely chaotic just 10 minutes ago. It was as if they had been transported into a different world within that red light.

Added together, there were more than 2 million players from the Yan Huang Alliance, Disillusion Alliance, and Snow Moon Loulan, and they were all dead! Two million players... all of them! There had never been such casualties in all of China's history before.

“Am I... dreaming?” Yun Feng muttered as he blankly stared in front of him.

No one replied. Even Li Xiao Xue, who was able to maintain her cool in all circumstances, was so shocked that 2 million players had been simultaneously insta-killed, that she lost her ability to think.

Chapter 564 – The Streaking Event

South of the Forgotten Continent, Vermillion Bird City, Mayor's residence:

The Vermillion Bird's Mayor was wearing a red robe, with a red crown on his head. His face was quite red, and the hair on his temples stood up. Out of the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird, and Black Turtle Cities, the Vermillion Bird's Mayor was the strongest. His control over Fire elementals was rumored to have already reached the peak, and he was the only one of the 4 Mayors of the main cities who had reached the Mysterious God grade. Overall, he was one of the 5 strongest humans in the Forgotten Continent. Adding to his fiery personality, and that he was easily enraged and was unstoppable when he was angry, all of his subordinates were extremely subdued in front of him and didn't even dare to breathe loudly.

Currently, he had his hands behind his back as he anxiously paced back and forth within the hall. The temperature at the Lava Purgatory had been rapidly decreasing, and that was where the Vermillion Bird resided. Guesses that the Vermillion Bird had left, or even died, caused the residents' hearts to become extremely heavy and made the atmosphere within the Vermillion Bird City quite tense. The Vermillion Bird was the Vermillion Bird City's guardian beast and was a being that was worshipped by the humans in the south. If the Vermillion Bird truly died, they would receive a massive blow. In fact, to them, it would feel as if the sky was falling, and the city would fall into chaos and disorder for a long time.

Facing the Lava Purgatory's decrease in temperature, the

Vermillion Bird's Mayor didn't know what to do. Although he had personally appeared, he was unable to calm the residents down. Today, he received a message from the Vermillion Bird, and when he saw it, he was completely dumbstruck.

"R-Reporting to Lord Mayor!" A middle-aged man wearing a red Mage's robe appeared in a flash as he knelt down on a single knee in front of the Vermillion Bird's Mayor. He hurriedly spoke, "1 minute ago, the Vermillion Bird's Phantasm appeared towards the north! It only appeared for a moment, then disappeared."

The Vermillion Bird's Mayor's body trembled as he quickly turned around, "Are you absolutely sure?"

"We are 100% sure! I saw it myself! There are thousands of residents who can bear witness! We don't dare to lie regarding the Vermillion Bird!"

"Good! Hahahaha!" The Vermillion Bird's Mayor's anxiety disappeared as he started to laugh loudly, "Very good! Immediately send people north and find out exactly where the Vermillion Bird's Phantasm has appeared... No! Immediately prepare the Blaze Colt; this Mayor will personally go himself. That's the Vermillion Bird's Soul Phantasm and can only appear on the Vermillion Bird's Holy Maiden.

"Also, immediately tell the entire city that the Vermillion Bird has perished, but its power has not perished. Instead, it has been inherited by a human! This is the Vermillion Bird's great blessing on mankind. The human that inherited the Vermillion Bird's power is the Holy Maiden chosen by the Vermillion Bird itself! As

long as we can receive the recognition of the Vermillion Bird's Holy Maiden, she can give us blessings and protection, much more than the Vermillion Bird itself!"

The Vermillion Bird City's north gates were thrown open, and the Vermillion Bird's Mayor, who had not stepped out of the Vermillion Bird city in tens of years, rode out towards the north. Behind him, hundreds of high-grade Flame Guards followed behind him. At the same time, news of the "Vermillion Bird's Holy Maiden" spread like a wild wind around the entire Vermillion Bird City. The tense and fearful atmosphere instantly became as vibrant and joyous as fire.

The final tongues of fire disappeared, leaving behind black, burnt ground. At a glance, there was not a single bit of green anymore. Xi Ling retracted her wings, and the red barrier of light disappeared. She flapped her wings and quickly flew forwards. Above in the sky, the flames around Xiao Qi's body had disappeared, and she slowly fell down. Just as she was about to hit the ground, she was caught by Xi Ling, and brought over to Yun Meng Xin and the others.

"Haha! I'm back!"

Xiao Qi jumped off Xi Ling's back and proudly stood in front of the rest of them. Xiao Qi was still Xiao Qi... She was wearing a beautiful and eye-catching red battle gown, and her lovely face and eyes were full of spirit. Looking at the current Xiao Qi, all of the people revealed a complicated expression. It was as if they were no longer seeing the girl they were incredibly familiar with, but a heavenly guest.

“Eh? Why are you all looking at me like that?” Xiao Qi felt quite strange being looked at like that, and she shrunk back her neck, “Is there something weird about my body?”

“Princess Qi Qi, do you know what you just did?” Li Xiao Xue took a deep breath as she calmly asked.

“Y-Yeah! Qi Qi, do you know what you just did?” Evidently, Yun Feng was not as calm as Li Xiao Xue, and his voice trembled. The red lotus he had just seen was the most shocking, most beautiful, and the most unbelievable scene he had ever seen in his entire life. Even now, his mind was still hazy, and he was unable to believe what had just happened.

“Of course, I know,” Xiao Qi blinked as she laughed, “I accidentally used fire and burned them all to death... However,” Xiao Qi apologetically lowered her head, “the attack just then couldn’t distinguish between friend and foe, and I was unable to control it, so I ended up killing our friends from the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan as well.”

“Haha, that’s not a big issue,” Li Xiao Xue laughed and shook her head. The other side had lost close to 2 million players, while they had lost around 100,000. Trading 100,000 for 2 million; could there be a better deal? “You destroyed 2 million players with a single attack. Princess Qi Qi, do you understand the magnitude of that? That’s a number that could only appear in a legend; you’ve created a real legend! A legend that should, by reason, be impossible!”

She was unable to imagine just how much of an impact this would bring to the rest of the world.

“Qi Qi, during that period of time... Just what did you experience? Your attack... was so powerful that I can’t even describe it,” Yun Meng Xin spoke emotionally as she walked forwards.

Xiao Qi’s smile was as beautiful as a flower. As the instigator of all of this, she was extremely calm and wasn’t shocked or scared by how powerful she was. After obtaining the Vermillion Bird’s power, she also gained a portion of the Vermillion Bird’s soul. In the Vermillion Bird’s eyes, that sort of attack was quite ordinary. She giggled as she spoke, “Hehe, it’s nothing, really. They had so many people, so we definitely wouldn’t have been able to beat them. As such, I could only do what I did just then to kill them all. Although they can immediately return here, it’ll take them a long time to prepare again, because that fire burned away all of their equipment...”

As she spoke, Xiao Qi’s voice suddenly paused, and her bright eyes became hazy. Her body swayed as she fell backward.

“Qi Qi!”

Yun Meng Xin cried out and hurriedly caught Xiao Qi, “Qi Qi, are you alright?”

Everyone else gathered around and looked at her in concern. Xiao Qi’s eyes were half-closed, and she did not have the strength to keep them fully open. Hearing Yun Meng Xin’s voice, she moved her lips as she mumbled, “I feel... a bit dizzy... and I don’t have any

more strength in my body… wuu… I shouldn't have used that skill, the Vermillion Bird's Origin Flames; need to sleep for a while… Maybe… for a long time…"

"Xi Ling… go and find big brother Ling Tian, and quickly bring him here. Big brother Ling Tian will definitely defeat them."

Xiao Qi's eyes weakly closed as she stopped speaking. Xiao Qi breathed peacefully, as the tip of her nose and her eyelashes slightly trembled with each breath. She seemed to be having a good sleep, and there appeared to be nothing wrong with her.

Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue leaned Xiao Qi's body against the wall of vines, letting her sit there peacefully. The side effects of forcefully using her power had manifested; falling asleep for a long time. This sort of side effect of any other skill would be an incredibly cruel one. After falling asleep, one would be left entirely defenseless. However, in comparison to that terrifying ability to kill 2 million people, this sort of big side effect seemed negligible.

"Qi Qi, you're so amazing! Not only did you return safely, but you also gave us such a huge surprise. I can only imagine how hard you worked for Heart's Dream to return," Yun Meng Xin softly spoke as she stood next to Xiao Qi, "Qi Qi, have a good sleep, and leave the rest to us. We'll definitely protect the new city!"

"Xi Ling, please go and find Ling Tian and bring him here… I'm sure you'll be able to find him."

After receiving instructions from Xiao Qi and Yun Meng Xin, Xi

Ling flapped her wings and rose into the sky. After circling them for a bit, she flew towards the west and quickly disappeared from their vision.

Xiao Qi... Li Xiao Xue had long since known of this name but had never paid it much mind. However, at this moment, she stared at that girl until she committed her fully to memory. This was because the name was about to send the entire virtual world into a frenzy, and become a synonym for a legend. After a while, she turned around and yelled to Yun Feng, “Yun Feng, the Yan Huang Alliance will be back soon. Immediately gather your Disillusion Alliance and tell them to hurry and rush back here.”

“This...” Yun Feng, who was holding his communication device, had a strange expression on his face. He looked as if he wanted to laugh and cry, and after a while, his face twitched as he replied, “Just then, Qi Qi wasn’t joking... Their equipment... Their gear... All disappeared....”

.....

At the Azure Dragon City’s Central Square, countless figures suddenly appeared at the revival point in a flash of light. After the light dissipated, the vast Azure Dragon City’s Central Square became incredibly crowded, with people gathered everywhere. Even an ant wouldn’t be able to squeeze out.

If they had all died normally, this would not have been a big deal. After all, with how many players there were in China, the Azure Dragon City’s Central Square was often clogged with people. However, none of the men had any clothes on, and the women

only had underwear made of coarse cloth.

The earth-shattering scene of 2 million naked men and semi-naked women almost blinded many people's eyes within the Central Square.

The entirety of the Azure Dragon City's Central Square, as well as all media and forums, went crazy. Numerous news broadcasts, videos and forum threads started to flood social media:

"Millions of streaking males appear at the Azure Dragon City's Central Square!"

"This world's too crazy; the entire Yan Huang Alliance streaks together. Are they going against the heavens?"

"Today's top news: The Naked Yan Huang Alliance."

"The Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master's nude photos: shared at the risk of death!"

"My eyes have been blinded: the Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master's dong is only 3 centimeters long! Of course, I have pictures!"

"Chinese men's average length; thank you to the Yan Huang Alliance's million males for giving a perfect sample size."

“Discussion of Long Tian Yun’s dong.”

“#$%...” .....

Xiao Qi, indeed, had not been joking. The Vermillion Bird Clan’s ultimate skill destroyed everything, not just life: the environment, items, and equipment. The players who were within range not only instantly died, but their equipment was also burnt to ash. No matter if it was their weapons, jewelry, outer clothes, underwear... All of it was entirely obliterated. However, for the protection of females, unless they were willing, they were covered with underwear made of coarse cloth when appearing naked in a public place. Of course, non-public places did not count. As for males, they didn’t have this sort of treatment.

Chapter 565 – The Hyenas Approach

"... The remaining 1.81 million people all... all died, and all of their equipment disappeared. There was no exception to this. Even... Even the Cloud Piercing Crossbow disappeared. The losses... are incalculable."

While Flame Shadow spoke, he could feel cold sweat run down his forehead. He lowered his head, not daring to meet Long Tian Yun's eyes. The murderous air coming from Long Tian Yun caused his entire body to tighten, his hands and feet involuntarily trembling. He could feel Long Tian Yun's fury - a fury like no other.

Long Tian Yun's face was so dark that it was terrifying, and his pupils continuously expanded and contracted, making him look explosively vicious.

The loss of more than 1 million players, as well as their equipment and items, wasn't enough to make him this furious... however, he had unfortunately died as well. He was at the very edge of the attack, and therefore was one of the players who had died last. Because of this, he had respawned near the outside of the crowd and countless people saw his naked body... as well as his 'little brother'.

Following the young master of the Xuanyuan family's 'stimulating threesome', the pictures and videos of the Long family's young master spread like snow across the entirety of China. Normally, a man being photographed naked could not be compared to a woman being photographed naked - the effects were

usually much less severe. If Long Tian Yun had a strong and beautiful body, Long Tian Yun wouldn't have minded this at all. However... 3 centimetres... this was completely true. Countless eyes had verified this length, and many high-quality photos blinded countless people.

The only thing that Long Tian Yun felt inferior about compared to others had been revealed to the entire world. A man's length more or less represented his dignity. This is how it is no matter how successful a man is – even if his wealth could rival that of countries and his power could cause the sky to fall. If he took off his clothes and the person opposite him was longer, even if that person was a beggar, he would still envy that person. If that person was much longer, they would feel incredibly humiliated to the point of death, and would not be able to raise his head.

Long Tian Yun's dignity had been trampled upon by countless people. He could imagine how many people were laughing at him. His hands and feet shook in anger, his face becoming almost black. His mind buzzed, threatening to explode. Although Ling Tian had killed him over and over again and caused him to suffer losses in public, he had never felt so humiliated and angry before. All of the hatred within him changed to a different target...

Xiao Qi!

After Flame Shadow gave his report, Long Tian Yun didn't respond for a long time. The terrifying silence and the cracking of Long Tian Yun's bones caused cold sweat to flood down his body, his entire body trembling. Finally, he was unable to endure this unbearable silence anymore and spoke with a shaking voice,

“Young master, we just received news that… that people have given you a nickname… which has been publicly accepted…”

“It’s… It’s Alliance Master 3. I don’t know what it means,” Flame Shadow said as he gulped. To be completely fair, while facing Long Tian Yun’s flames of fury, he had lost the ability to think and truly didn’t know what this nickname meant. He only said it to dispel the incredibly uncomfortable silence. Indeed, Long Tian Yun was the Yan Huang Alliance’s most senior figure, the Alliance Master. Why was he called Alliance Master 3 then? Could he have 2 older brothers? It didn’t make sense.

Long Tian Yun’s face instantly became darker than that of a crow’s, and his face completely twisted in anger. He shot to his feet and kicked the innocent Flame Shadow as he roared like a beast, “Xiao Qi, I’ll make you feel utter misery so that you can neither live nor die!!!”

……

Although a long time had passed and the flames had all died down, all of the bosses of the guilds’ faces were still completely pale. Their hands and feet trembled as waves of cold sweat rolled down their bodies. There was not a single person left on that scorched earth, and no one dared to attack. Although the Dazzling Red Lotus had not been able to wipe them out because they were very far away, they were still shocked out of their wits.

“That girl… seems to have fainted.” One of the leaders hesitantly told the others about the news he had received from a Shadowless. When he said the words ‘that girl’, his body trembled. Killing 2

million players with a single attack was completely shocking. However, when they had respawned, all of their equipment had been destroyed, resulting in a mass streaking event. Their jaws almost hit the ground and they almost turned and ran.

Was that girl really the Battle Alliance's Princess Xiao Qi? Was that really a player?

Holy crap! Could the Mystic Moon world become even crazier? There was a skill that could instantly kill millions of players? How was everyone else supposed to play?

"What do we do?"

"If such an obscene skill didn't have a side effect, I'd go and commit suicide. Fainted? Just fainted? She didn't disappear or have her account deleted??"

"This sort of 18-levels-of-hell-defying skill should cause her to sleep for 8 years, or even 10 years! That sort of skill shouldn't be able to be casted again. Now that the Yan Huang Alliance's army, defenders, and equipment have all been annihilated, if they want to come back, they'll have to regroup and distribute new equipment which will take a long time. Now, there's only Yun Feng, the Sword Emperor, and a few women... this is a God-given opportunity!!"

"Opportunity? That's right, this could very well be an opportunity! However, what if Xiao Qi's just pretending and gets up again as soon as we attack? We'll all die over there! We'll lose

levels and all of our equipment! We can't suffer such a loss!"

"Fudge! Could it be that we're all going to be scared into running?"

"At the very least, we can't be reckless; we need to make sure that Xiao Qi definitely fainted!"

"So, if we can't confirm this, we'll just have to wait? And let this incredibly rare opportunity get away? We all saw the Yan Huang Alliance's strength just then-they could have even more secret weapons. Since Long Tian Yun has acted, it shows that he's not afraid of fighting us for the City Creation Token. If we miss this opportunity and the Yan Huang Alliance comes back, we won't have a chance anymore."

"Fine! You're right, so your Black Flames Alliance should go first!"

"W-Why should we go first? Do you want my Black Flames Alliance to be cannon fodder? In your dreams!"

.....

Xiao Qi's shocking performance had left too large of a shadow on the hearts of the bosses of those large guilds. Under the threat of their entire alliance being annihilated and losing their equipment, despite the chances of this being incredibly low, no one wanted to take the risk to be the first ones to attack. If that 'what if' truly

manifested, they would be completely destroyed, and their entire alliance's strength would decrease. In fact, it was possible that they would never be as strong again. In order to become one of the major powers in China, they had spent incredible amounts of time, money and effort. No one wanted to take that sort of risk.

"Stop jabbering."

The Alliance Master of the Golden Age Alliance, Mo Gu Lin, who had been silent this entire time, finally spoke. He stood up as he narrowed his eyes, "What did we spend so much effort to come here for? Hmph, for those who are afraid, go home and tremble there. Those of you who are men, follow me and fight!"

The Golden Age Alliance was the 4th ranked guild in China, and its fame was only behind the Yan Huang Alliance, Skyfall Dynasty, and the Dark Night. With Mo Gu Lin leading the charge, no one objected. As soon as he spoke, ten or so other leaders also stood up. The Black Flames Alliance's Alliance Master, Black Flames Wild Gale, loudly yelled, "He's right! Your elder's have never been afraid of anyone before! Those who are scared should piss off!"

Mo Gu Lin laughed, "Since we came together, of course we need to go and greet them together. We're not the same as the Yan Huang Alliance; our goal is to simply destroy the city. As for who obtains the spoils of war, we'll leave that for after destroying the city. Right now, we need to work together. It's essentially empty in front of the new city, almost as if we're being invited in. So, what are we waiting for? However, if anyone is still worried about the 'what if', then don't bring too many people-30,000 or 40,000 should suffice... Groups 11 to 17, prepare to leave."

Evidently, Mo Gu Lin himself was also worried about that ‘what if’, and only brought 7 teams. None of the other alliances dared to move out their entire army, so they also sent out a small portion. With 30 or so powerful guilds moving out, although they only brought part of their forces, they still numbered nearly 1 million players as they marched towards the new city.

After Xiao Qi had chased away the lions from the Yan Huang Alliance, the hyenas had decided to attack. Defending in front of the city were just Yun Feng, Yun Meng Xin, Mu Bing Yao, Li Xiao Xue, the unconscious Xiao Qi, and the Sword Emperor, who seemed to not have recovered yet.

Without any grass left on the ground, the massive army marched on the scorched earth, causing greyish-blackish dust to fly into the air. In front of the wall of vines, Yun Meng Xin and the others fell silent while watching the massive and mighty army march forwards. Xiao Qi had made a legendary attack, but even this was unable to completely change the new city’s fate, it had only delayed it. After the lions came the hyenas… and a massive pack of hyenas at that.

“They’ve finally come,” Yun Feng let out a long and frustrated sigh. A confederacy of 30 or so alliances, 6 of which were in the top 10 in the Guild Rankings and 14 in the top 20, was marching towards them. Combined, they had more than 10 million players in total.

How could they stop such a force?

Although the marching soldiers seemed mighty and awe-inspiring, all of them were afraid that Xiao Qi would suddenly wake up and obliterate them. Then they would have to streak in public as well. However, what they feared didn't happen. Even when they reached Yun Feng and the others, the girl that they feared so much still did not move. As they drew closer, Yun Feng and the others moved in front of her to protect her.

Mo Gu Lin stopped walking and inwardly let out a long sigh of relief. After reaching this point, he knew that the terrifying 'what if' would not happen. With his fear completely erased, and with only this incredibly weak force standing in front of him, he no longer held back. He stood with his arms crossed in front of him as he slowly walked forwards and said in a loud voice, "Friends, you should know why we've come. To be perfectly honest, I quite respect your determination and strength, especially the sleeping Princess Xiao Qi. If there wasn't a massive incentive, I wouldn't want to become enemies with her.

"At the same time, I don't want to become enemies with you or see you all resist. If you all leave, I can promise that no one will harm you, and we can even agree to some reasonable terms of yours... although if you do resist, it'll all be for nought."

"Mo Gu Lin, as the leader of the largest guild in East China, I also respect your character and ability. However, I never thought that you would act like a bandit," Yun Feng mocked.

"If you were in my shoes, you would also want to be a bandit," Mo Gu Lin laughed as he replied.

Chapter 566 – The Battle Alliance's Army

"Mo Gu Lin, do you really think that by doing this you'll be able to obtain the result you wish for?" Li Xiao Xue asked as she walked over while smiling.

Facing Li Xiao Xue, Mo Gu Lin subconsciously became slightly more restrained as he breezily replied, "Big miss Li, long time no see. That's right, just like how you're thinking that we're fighting over meat with the Yan Huang Alliance. Although the chance of success isn't very high, we've thought it over and formed a confederacy. When everything is over, who obtains the City Creation Token will rely on our luck. Although our success rate isn't high, at least it's not impossible. However, if we don't do anything, we won't have a chance at all."

Mo Gu Lin's eyes narrowed as a look of intoxication appeared in his eyes, "Creating the only player's city and becoming the Lord of the city means that not only will one be able to control a large number of players, but they can also set their own rules and rule like an emperor... to a man, what could be more pleasurable and worth chasing after?"

Many of the leaders of the guilds standing behind him revealed expressions of hope and desire.

"Haha..." Li Xiao Xue coldly laughed, "Aren't you afraid that in the end not only will you not be unsuccessful, but you'll also feel so much regret that you'll want to die?"

“Regret? Hahahaha,” Black Flames Wild Gale loudly laughed. “I heard that the Skyfall Dynasty has completely broken off their relationship with your Li family in the game. Without this big supporter, big miss Li, could it be that you want to use your little Snow Moon Loulan to make us feel regret?”

Li Xiao Xue remained calm and composed, “Indeed, the Snow Moon Loulan is something you can look down on. However... do you believe that I have enough money to hire the entire Dark Night in order to make sure you never feel at ease?”

As soon as they heard Li Xiao Xue’s words, Mo Gu Lin and the others’ faces became extremely unsightly.

The Dark Night is extremely small and has less than 1,000 people. However, because of the influence it has, it is the second ranked guild. This guild is a nightmare that no one dares to offend. Even the Yan Huang Alliance’s Long Tian Yun was quite fearful of the Dark Night, let alone Mo Gu Lin and the others.. Although there are not many people within the Dark Night, all of them are deathgods of the night. None of the people that they have wanted to kill have escaped before. They have never failed a task before... never.

However, hiring the Dark Night required an extremely high price; ordinary people simply couldn’t afford their services. Even bosses of powerful guilds would feel quite a great deal of pain while hiring them. However, Li Xiao Xue... with her family’s immense financial wealth, she would be able to hire them for a lifetime.

If Li Xiao Xue truly went crazy...

The people standing in front of Li Xiao Xue involuntarily shuddered as they felt their scalps numb.

Mo Gu Lin replied, “Of course I believe you’ll be able to do that with your Li family’s finances. However, everyone knows that in order to not be exposed, the Dark Night will not continuously receive requests from the same person. Of course, as the saying goes, ‘if you have money, you can make the devil push the millstone for you.’ If big miss Li is generous enough, perhaps the Dark Night will make an exception. I can’t say for certain whether we’ll be hunted down by the Dark Night, but big miss Li as well as Yun Feng... against us, how certain are you that you’ll be able to defend the new city behind you?

“I might as well tell you another piece of bad news. We found traces of the Skyfall Dynasty around here, and if my guess is correct, they should be hiding nearby, waiting for an opportunity. It’s just that they’re able to wait longer than us. Now that the Yan Huang Alliance’s army has been destroyed, it’ll take them quite some time before they can prepare and return. This is the Skyfall Dynasty’s and our best opportunity. Although the Skyfall Dynasty isn’t our ally, be both share the goal of destroying the new city.

“You were able to unbelievably chase away a small part of the Yan Huang Alliance’s forces. However, the fate of this new city cannot be changed. With just the few of you, even if you struggle all you want, all you’ll be able to do is buy a few seconds.”

“And if you add us as well?”

A cold voice travelled from the distance. Mo Gu Lin abruptly turned around and saw a person dressed in black with a heavy sword made of mystic iron on his shoulders. He wasn't extremely tall or well-built, but his eyes were as cold and piercing as a carnivorous eagle's. Anyone who saw these eyes would feel a bone-piercing chill.

"Xiao... Qiu Feng! Are..." Just as Mo Gu Lin was about to ask 'are you here to join the party', he suddenly realised something. When he looked at Xiao Qi, who was being protected by Yun Fend and the others, his expression fell.

"Big brother Xiao!" Yun Meng Xin called out in delight. He wasn't alone. There was a large sea of players behind him- evidently, the entire Battle Alliance had moved out. Because of Xiao Qi, they wouldn't attack the new city. As such, there was only one possible reason why they were here!

"You've finally come; I've been waiting for ages," Yun Feng said as he grinned.

Xiao Qiu Feng coldly walked by Mo Gu Lin, completely disregarding his existence. He stopped in front of Yun Feng as he silently looked at the unconscious Xiao Qi and expressionlessly said, "If I didn't come today, what would you have done?"

"What else could I do?" Yun Feng smirked, "I would find a time to have a fight with you. After being brothers for so many years, we can't just end our friendship whenever we want. Even if you could, I wouldn't be able to."

After sighing, Yun Feng said in a low voice, “I know that you want to help me more than anyone else, but I also understand the burden you carry on your shoulders. As such, even if you didn’t come today, I wouldn’t have blamed you... Instead, I had hoped that you wouldn’t come. Even if you did come, you wouldn’t be able to change much and would drag in the entire Battle Alliance. However, because Qi Qi suddenly appeared, I knew that the Cold Magistrate would definitely come.

Xiao Qiu Feng’s lips twitched, as if he wanted to smile but couldn’t. He turned and stared at Mo Gu Lin and asked Yun Feng, “How’s Qi Qi?”

“I’m sure you already know about the terrifying news of her annihilating 2 million players with a single attack. For such a heaven-defying skill, there’s definitely a side-effect. Qi Qi will be asleep for a while.”

Xiao Qiu Feng nodded.

“Xiao Qiu Feng!” Mo Gu Lin, who was being stared at, finally spoke, “Looks like your Battle Alliance’s 600,000 troops have moved out. If I remember correctly, this is the first time your entire Battle Alliance has moved together, and you didn’t even leave anyone to defend your headquarters. You couldn’t be trying to stop us, right?”

Xiao Qiu Feng’s arrival caused the leaders of the large guilds to become wary. None of them wanted to become enemies with the

Battle Alliance. This wasn't because the Battle Alliance was a nominal subsidiary guild of the Yan Huang Alliance, but because the Battle Alliance was a special faction. Most of its players were in the Battle Alliance in the real world, which was the largest underground faction in Northern China. Within this underworld organisation, there are countless criminals and fugitives.

As such, the Battle Alliance's members are all cruel, vicious, and unafraid to die. Although the Battle Alliance was quite large, what made everyone fear them was their discipline. All members in the Battle Alliance follow commands perfectly. Within the game world, the Battle Alliance's Alliance Master, Xiao Qiu Feng, is called the 'Cold Magistrate'. The term 'cold' is used because he never laughs or smiles, while the term 'magistrate' is used because he acts justly, but strictly. He never does things for his own selfish gain. He has pride, but not arrogance. He possesses an incredibly high standing within the Battle Alliance, and as long as he gives the command, the entire Battle Alliance wouldn't even frown as they went to die for him.

This kind of standard is impossible for other guilds who are desperate to recruit players.

Fighting against the Battle Alliance, despite having the same numbers, is like a dog fighting a ferocious wolf.

Facing Mo Gu Lin's question, Xiao Qiu Feng slowly raised his heavy mystic iron sword as he coldly spoke a single world.

"Kill!"

Boom!!!

As soon as Xiao Qiu Feng spoke that single word, the ground began to shake as 600,000 Battle Alliance players rushed towards the surprised attackers like awakened beasts. Their weapons ferociously pierced towards their targets, and corpses immediately fell to the ground.

Upon hearing Xiao Qiu Feng's order to kill, the vicious killing began. Just this single word showed how disciplined the Battle Alliance's army was. Before they had even realised what was happening, a large wave of the attackers had already fallen. Although they had brought around 1 million troops, because they were formed from 30 factions, it was almost impossible for them to coordinate and fight together. As such, the Battle Alliance plunged them into chaos and disorder. As for the Battle Alliance, they were like tigers that had rushed into a pack of sheep, taking life after life within the chaos.

"Xiao Qiu Feng, you!!"

Facing the heavy mystic iron sword, Mo Gu Lin quickly retreated. He wasn't weak, but even if he was 10 times as brave, he wouldn't dare to fight with the 'Cold Magistrate', who was on the Heaven Rankings.

"No less than expected from the Cold Magistrate. He doesn't bother wasting a single word with the enemy," Li Xiao Xue said in praise.

“Immediately tell the rest of the army to hurry over here!” Mo Gu Lin yelled as he quickly retreated. Even though they had 1 million players here, facing the Battle Alliance’s 600,000 wolves and tigers, he didn’t feel at ease at all. He suddenly thought of something as he yelled out again, “Fellow leaders, give the order to evade the Battle Alliance and attack the city! Our goal is to destroy the city!!”

The battlefield that had just fallen silent was once again filled with the sounds of battle. After a long period of chaos, the attackers finally calmed down, and the tide of battle began to turn as the attackers started to rush towards the city. The Yan Huang Alliance’s aim was to kill all of the defenders, while their goal was to destroy the city and obtain the City Creation Token. Comparatively, they were a much greater threat than the Yan Huang Alliance. If the rest of their armies came, the Battle Alliance would be completely overwhelmed.

Following Xiao Qiu Feng’s quick commands in response, the Battle Alliance also quickly adapted. They formed a tight defence by using their bodies and fierce attacks to slow down the advance of their enemies... 600,000 Battle Alliance players stopped the assault of 1 million attackers. They did not allow them to advance even a single step for 15 minutes.

.....

In the distance, at a high place.

“The Battle Alliance started fighting as soon as they arrived; the situation’s becoming more and more interesting,” Skyfall said as he put down his binoculars and gave a light smile.

“Big bro, when are we going to act?” Against the Sky also put down his binoculars as he asked.

Skyfall thought for a while before replying, “The Golden Age Alliance, Black Flames Alliance, Heavenly Blade Pavilion… none of these are easy to deal with. Nearly all of China’s powerful alliances are gathered within that confederacy, and added together, there are probably more than 10 million of them. Leaving out those who stayed behind to defend, there are at least 7 or 8 million who came to attack… heheh, even if it was the Yan Huang Alliance, they’d suffer quite a loss if they wanted to fight them. Big sister told us to wait until the most opportune moment. That moment isn’t right now… so we’ll continue to wait.”

“Speaking of which, does big sister support what we’re doing, or is she against it?” Judging Sky hesitantly asked.

“She’s not against it or supportive of it,” Skyfall rubbed his nose. “Big sister said that the chance of obtaining the City Creation Token is incredibly low, but we can still give it a shot. However, we need to wait for the best opportunity. If there isn’t such an opportunity, we are to immediately withdraw and not rashly act… those are the instructions big sister gave.”

Chapter 567 – Su'Er's Return (1)

The Battle Alliance's ferocity made them seem like an army of tigers and wolves. Although it was 600,000 against over 1 million people, it didn't seem like they were at a disadvantage at all. However, this sort of stalemate could only last for a very brief period of time. Once the attackers' reinforcements came, no matter how powerful the Battle Alliance's army was, they would be instantly annihilated.

Xiao Qiu Feng stood at the front of the women, his body like a solid and immovable boulder. As he looked at the battlefield, there was not a trace of emotion within them. He knew clearly the consequences and the price the Battle Alliance would have to pay for participating in this battle. However... despite this, he wouldn't regret, nor would he take any steps back. If he didn't have the courage and determination to protect those closest to him, what was the point of the Battle Alliance being tens, or even hundreds of times more powerful?

"Their reinforcements have finished preparing and are rushing over. At the very latest, they'll be here in 15 minutes. Also, the Yan Huang Alliance has equipped its entire alliance. Long Tian Yun is infuriated, and when he attacks again, he'll bring many times the number of people he brought the first time.

Yun Feng turned to Xiao Qiu Feng as he frowned, "Qiu Feng, do you have any solutions... such as reinforcements?"

"None," Xiao Qiu Feng expressionlessly replied. To defend against tens of alliances joined together as well as the Yan Huang

Alliance... how could such reinforcements exist? Added together, the Yan Huang Alliance and the other attackers had nearly 1% of China's entire population!

"And yet you still dare to come? Are you seeking death?" Yun Feng asked.

Xiao Qiu Feng calmly looked at him, "Aren't you also seeking death?"

"Hah!" Yun Feng laughed. "Me being an idiot isn't too big of a deal. However, the famous Cold Magistrate lost all reason for his little sister. We both knew that we were coming to our deaths, even someone with a negative IQ wouldn't have done such a thing. And yet, both of us came like idiots. That's fine-if the Battle Alliance and Disillusion Alliance are wiped out from the virtual world after tomorrow, at least we'll go down together, hahaha."

Xiao Qiu Feng: "....."

After hearing their hot and cold exchange, Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue could only sigh and marvel inwardly. Yun Meng Xin clasped her hands together in front of her chest. As she looked at the 2 men, she said silently, "Big brother, big brother Xiao, thank you all."

Li Xiao Xue frowned as she silently looked ahead of her, her face flashing with a look of indecisiveness. She still hadn't used her trump card, and even with the support from the Battle Alliance, she didn't dare to use it. This was because against such powerful

enemies even if she used her trump card, she wouldn't be able to change anything. All it could possibly achieve is give them a bit more breathing space, but the consequences of doing so would be severe.

Like Yun Meng Xin, her greatest desire was for Ling Tian to hurry up and come.

The attackers' reinforcements were now 10 miles away, and an unstoppable force was about to reach them. Every person's hearts clenched.

.....

An unknown place.

Within the special space, a fairy-like young girl in green clothes was silently standing on the ground with her eyes closed. Her arms were spread apart, as if she was sensing something. Hazy spots of light flew all around her. After spinning around her body, they seemed to be attracted by something and entered into her body.

At that moment, a look of pain appeared on her face. Her expression twisted as she struggled. Her expression became more and more intense, as if she was trying to wake herself up from a nightmare. After a short while, the girl in green suddenly opened her eyes as a look of deep worry and fear appeared on her flawless face.

“Master!” She hurriedly cried out as she ran.

Top of a giant tree.

The tree was 30 or so metres wide, and there was a strange space at the top. A celestial-like old man stood there with his eyes closed against the breeze. He opened his eyes after hearing the girl’s voice, revealing a pair of extremely aged eyes as he gave a sigh and turned around, “Su’Er, you must have felt a great sense of unease, right?”

The girl in green vigorously nodded as she walked over and said hurriedly, “Master, I felt that something was happening with my sisters over there, and that it’s something important. My senses told me that if I don’t go, a terrifying outcome will happen that I will regret my whole life. So… So…”

After receiving the inheritance of the Heaven’s Secrets sect, the thing that she trusted the most were her instincts and gut feelings.

“Indeed,” Daoist Tian Qing nodded as he flicked the horsetail whisk in his hand. A green orb flew out and floated into Su’Er’s hands, “Su’Er, I knew that something has been on your heart. As such, I’ve recorded the experiences of the people you’ve been worried about. This time, your sisters are in a great crisis. Have a look.”

Su’Er touched the green orb against her forehead and closed her eyes. The green orb flashed, and in a moment, everything that Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi had experienced after she left flooded into

her mind. The development of the new city... The Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan's hope... Yun Meng Xin's hard work... Xiao Qi's inheritance from the Vermillion Bird... the near completion of the new city... the great crisis... everything appeared within her mind.

Su'Er stood in shock for a moment as her expression fell and tears appeared in her eyes. She anxiously said, "Master, my sisters are facing a great crisis. I... I need to go and help them. Otherwise, big sister Meng Xin will collapse... Master, please send me there, I need to go!"

Daoist Tian Qing looked at her silently for a moment before raising his head, a look of deep reluctance in his eyes. However, in the end he gave a heavy sigh, "Su'Er, after coming here, your progress has been unbelievable. Your mind, soul, and heart are all incredibly pure, and without even going through any formal inheritance rites, the Heaven's Secrets power has been naturally drawn towards your body.

"At this place, your Heaven's Secrets power has quickly developed, and once you return to the mortal world you'll be unable to come back. Although it won't stop your progress, it'll greatly decrease the speed at which you've been growing. In just the few months that you've been here, not only have you completed the inheritance, but also the heaven and earth spirit energy you've gathered has greatly benefited me by increasing my lifespan by at least 60 years. As such, I'm quite reluctant to let you leave.

"However, everything must come to an end. Since the heaven's will has decided that you should leave, no matter how reluctant I

am to let you go, I won't stop you. To most people, the heaven's will is but a myth, but to us, it is of great significance. We cannot disbelieve it, nor can we go against it."

Daoist Tian Qing once again sighed and looked at Su'Er kindly, "Su'Er, after returning you'll definitely use the 36 Absolute Formations. The Elementary and Intermediate Formations can change the laws of nature, while the Advanced Formations can change a person's fate. However, your foundations are too shallow, and right now you can only use the 12 Elementary Formations. Although they're Elementary Formations, try not to use them for too long. Use them appropriately, for what they consume is your heart energy. Once you've used up all of your heart energy, they'll begin to consume your life force and fortune. Do you understand?"

Su'Er lightly nodded, her face was full of shock and dismay, but she continued to silently listen to Daoist Tian Qing speak.

"Here, Su'Er, take this." Daoist Tian Qing walked forward and gave his horsetail whisk to Su'Er.

"Eh? Master, this horsetail whisk..." Su'Er felt bewildered upon receiving this horsetail whisk.

"This horsetail whisk is called [Heavenly Star], and is one of our Heaven's Secrets Sect's 3 supreme treasures. It has belonged to the sect leader of every generation. Take it, for from today onwards, you are the sect leader of the Heaven's Secrets Sect. Perhaps the title of sect leader is just a name to you, but to me it's the fulfilment of my greatest wish."

The horsetail whisk was white and gave off a starry light. Su'Er would never forget back then how Daoist Tian Qing had painstakingly looked after her in order to make her the sect leader of the Heaven's Secrets Sect... although even now, she still doesn't know what that title encapsulated. However, in order not to disappoint Daoist Tian Qing, she did not refuse. She accepted the horsetail whisk and gratefully said, "Thank you master, I'll look after it well."

"Look after it? Haha," Daoist Tian Qing warmly laughed. "With this horsetail whisk, your Heaven's Secrets power will continue to grow, and it'll increase the range and strength of your Formations when casting the 36 Absolute Formations. Moreover, it has a protection similar to a contract with the Heaven's Secrets and can protect what you want for a long time. You can use it immediately."

Su'Er carefully held the horsetail whisk as she quickly read through its description. When she saw its skills, her eyes lit up as a look of joy appeared on her face. She tightly gripped the Heavenly Star in her hands.

"Back then, during the prime of the Night Demon Clan, the Heaven's Secrets Sect, Feng Chen Sect, and Earth Fiend Sect held great status and power. Now, the Night Demon Clan has almost been eradicated and hides in the darkness, while the Heaven's Secrets Sect, Feng Chen Sect, and Earth Fiend Sect have also declined. The Continent has forgotten about the Feng Chen Sect and Earth Fiend Sect, but not the Heaven's Secrets Sect because humans can never get rid of their selfish and greedy hearts.

“Su’Er, if you use the Heaven’s Secrets 36 Absolute Formations, your identity will be revealed and will cause you great trouble. Countless people will want you to reveal Heaven’s Secrets to them. Also, selfishness, covetousness, and avarice are the greatest taboos for our Heaven’s Secrets Sect. Countless excellent disciples have died because of these… however, I feel for you, this warning should be unnecessary.”

“Master, I’ll definitely remember your words.” Su’Er once again nodded.

“In that case, I’ll send you to where you want to go. You must feel incredibly worried, haha,” Daoist Tian Qing gave a warm laugh, and cast aside his reluctance to see her go. He took out a white talisman and ripped it. He then threw the shreds towards Su’Er, and as a flash of light erupted, Su’Er disappeared from in front of him.

Chapter 568 – Su'Er's Return (2)

In front of the new city, battle cries reached the heavens, and countless players were mashed together like a pot of congee. The attackers' reinforcements had finally arrive, and charged onto the battlefield. The Battle Alliance's army was already at a numbers disadvantage, and facing this massive hammer, they were forced back as their casualties rapidly increased.

At that moment, Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice, who had died from Xiao Qi's Dazzling Red Lotus, finally came back with some bad news.

"The Yan Huang Alliance's second wave has already reached the Azure Forest Village, and there are 2 million of them! Behind them are a third wave and fourth wave... eh!! W-W-W-Who is this girl?" Upon seeing Xiao Qi, Winter of That Year's expression of seriousness instantly disappeared as a look of deep fear appeared in his eyes as he pointed at Xiao Qi while trembling.

Beside him, even Hundred Miles of Ice's face twitched a few times.

Killing 2 million players with a single skill... alright, that was borderline acceptable.

Being insta-killed by her... that wasn't much better either.

However...

Why the hell were their equipment... including their underwear, completely razed off?

When they had respawned, there were naked men all around them, and outside of the revival point, countless people stared at them in fright as if they had just seen aliens.

That scene was simply unforgettable. Right now, they were wearing the crappy equipment they had stored in their bags.

“She’s my good sister... did you say that the Yan Huang Alliance has already come?” Yun Meng Xin asked worriedly.

“He’s right. The Yan Huang Alliance’s second wave has already set out from the Azure Forest Village and will arrive here shortly,” Li Xiao Xue said as she put down her communication device. She looked at the people around her and then looked at the battlefield in front of her as she slowly shook her head, “Meng Xin, we’ve done our best. Even if we lose the city, there’s nothing for us to regret. I’m sure that no one in the world would be able to change the current situation... not even Ling Tian.”

One Disillusion Alliance, one Snow Moon Loulan, and one Battle Alliance. Those groups made up all of their forces. It was a powerful force-after all, the Battle Alliance was one of the 10 biggest guilds in China. However, their enemies’ strength was simply too great. Many of the powerful guilds in China were all desperate for the City Creation Token-this meant that after the new city was exposed, they had to face many of China’s most

powerful guilds. These guilds would even destroy each other for the City Creation Token, but before the new city was destroyed, they had to work together.

Combined, there is no power in the entire world, let alone within China, that could stop such a force. This was because just the Yan Huang Alliance alone was the largest guild in the world.

Yun Feng, Xiao Qiu Feng, and Mu Bing Yao fell silent because they knew that this was reality. Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng had burned all of their bridges in coming here, and had come willing to die.

Yun Meng Xin stood there in shock as if she had been struck by lightning, her eyes dim. Li Xiao Xue's cruel words were a truth that she didn't want to acknowledge or admit. She looked towards the new city, towards the wall of vines that the Fairy Clan had painstakingly put up, the Dwarves who were working hard within the new city, and the things that Ling Tian had given her... she felt as if a needle was being driven into her heart.

"I... don't... want this..."

Her tender lips started to bleed from biting them, and she lowered her head as tears finally began to fall. Her dreamlike voice was completely drowned out by the yells from the battlefield, and only Winter of That Year, who had superhuman hearing, heard her words. He gritted his teeth and tightly clenched his fists together as unnatural strands of black gas began to appear on his forehead.

Hundred Miles of Ice sensed something, and his body stiffened as he turned to look at Winter of That Year. When he saw the black gas, he deeply frowned and grabbed Winter of That Year's arm, using his strength to dig his fingernails into Winter of That Year's arm. Under immense pain, Winter of That Year looked at Hundred Miles of Ice with a complicated look and let out a light sigh as the black gas around his forehead disappeared. Hundred Miles of Ice let go, but his pleading look didn't disappear, his eyes telling Winter of That Year, "Even if you do that, you won't be able to change anything."

Dust flew up in the north. The Yan Huang Alliance's second wave had finally arrived, pushing the Battle Alliance's army further into despair. At that moment, a snow-white glow appeared in front of Yun Meng Xin. Through her hazy vision, she saw an extremely cute girl in green clothes. The appearance of the girl made Yun Meng Xin think that she was seeing things through her tears. However, when the girl leapt into her embrace, and called out "big sister Meng Xin", she finally realised that the girl was actually there.

"Su'Er... is it really you?"

"It's me, it's me. I'm back. Big sister Meng Xin, I missed you so much, wuuu..."

Su'Er tightly hugged Yun Meng Xin as she wept. Only in front of Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi would she cry like this. Li Xiao Xue took a small step forwards. She couldn't help but give a wry smile: after splitting up for so long, they had all come back on the day Yun

Meng Xin was facing this crisis. Was this a beautiful coincidence or an arrangement by fate?

It was great to have such sisters.

However, the men were feeling completely differently.

“Holy crap, yet another big... no, little beauty!” Winter of That Year was completely dumbstruck as he gulped down a mouthful of saliva, “So birds of a feather really do flock together. So there are even more beauties besides the ones I saw today. I’ve never seen a single beauty like this in all my life, and yet today I’ve seen so many.”

Hundred Miles of Ice was speechless.

The sounds of fighting and killing continuously sound out in everyone’s ears. After crying in each other’s arms for a while, Su’Er released herself from Yun Meng Xin’s embrace as her mysterious and pure eyes quickly scanned the chaotic battlefield. She vigorously wiped her tears as she held Yun Meng Xin’s hands, “Big sister Meng Xin, I already know what’s going on here. I know that behind us is our new home, and is the hope of big sister Meng Xin as well as the rest of us. As such, I’ll work hard with big sister Meng Xin to protect it.”

Just like with Xiao Qi, although Su’Er was that same Su’Er, she gave off a completely different feeling. Yun Meng Xin could no longer feel the sense of weakness and fragility that she used to have. Instead, there was a mysterious sense of reliability. It was as

if she had truly grown up over these past few months.

Altogether, there are almost 8 million attackers, and including Yan Huang Alliance's second wave, there are nearly 10 million of them. Under the assault of 10 million players, the Battle Alliance's players had no opportunity to breathe, and would collapse in a few minutes. Before arriving, Su'Er was already familiar with the situation. She turned to Yun Feng as she hurriedly said, "Big brother Xiao, Big brother Yun Feng, can you help me immediately construct a 20-metre high platform? I have a way to make it so that they temporarily can't come close to the new city."

Under the assault from 10 million troops, wanting to defend against such a force was simply insane. Li Xiao Xue's eyes lit up. She had been observing Su'Er the entire time, and immediately said, "Alliance Master Xiao, Yun Feng, immediately order people to construct that platform!"

Although Xiao Qiu Feng and Yun Feng felt quite confused, they immediately recalled 30 people to get the job done.

Platforms were used to observe and control the battle from a distance, and could be bought as completed items from the Forging Shop. It could be placed in one's bag, taking up 5 spaces. It was just that setting it up required people and time. Under the experienced hand of the 30 Warriors from the Battle Alliance, the platform was quickly built. Su'Er stood on the platform and silently observed the battlefield., Yun Meng Xin, Li Xiao Xue, Mu Bing Yao, Yun Feng, Xiao Qiu Feng, Hundred Miles of Ice, and Winter of That Year all followed her up. Although this platform wasn't very tall, the battle was on flat plains, making it easy to see everything.

Su'Er finally moved. She stretched out her hand as a horsetail whisk appeared within it. This would be Su'Er's exclusive weapon in future, and the appearance of this weapon caused the people behind her to gape in shock.

"That's... a horsetail whisk? The ones that daoists hold in TV shows!" Winter of That Year said with his mouth wide open.

"Why's Su'Er holding that? What's she doing? Could that be... her weapon?" Yun Feng's were wide as he stared at Su'Er. He couldn't imagine how Su'Er was going to make it so that these 10 million troops wouldn't be able to approach the new city. No matter how he thought, this was surely an impossible feat.

After raising the horsetail whisk, Su'Er did not do anything for a while. Once she acted, not only the attackers, but also the Battle Alliance would not be able to come close to the new city. The result would be the completely annihilation of the Battle Alliance's army.

As they watched, under the pressure of facing an army more than 10 times their size, the Battle Alliance lost many members every second. The defensive line continuously retreated, and the army was on the verge of falling apart. Su'Er bit her lips and finally lifted the horsetail whisk... at that moment, a red light flashed as a phoenix-like cry sounded out, piercing through the battlefield and sounding in every player's ears.

A figure wrapped in flames slowly rose up into the air as the gigantic image of a bird appeared...

The Vermillion Bird's Phantasm!

The Vermillion Bird's cry, the Vermillion Bird's Phantasm, and that crimson flame... were incredibly familiar! They had just seen it about an hour ago, and anyone who had seen it would never be able to forget it. This was because after hearing that cry and seeing that phantasm, 2 million players had been annihilated!

By now, the Yan Huang Alliance's third wave had reached the Azure Forest Village. Long Tian Yun was personally leading this army, his entire body filled with unimaginable rage. Just as he appeared, he heard the bird's cry and when he looked up, he saw a majestic and beautiful image of the Vermillion Bird in the air.

In an instant, Long Tian Yun's soul nearly exploded. On the battlefield, the leaders of the various guilds felt their souls fly up into the air as their pupils became as small as the eye of a needle. Because of their fear they all did the same thing-they picked up their communication devices as they started screaming,

"Retreat! Retreat!! Everyone retreat!! Hurry up and retreat!!!!"

Chapter 569 – Heavenly Star Line

The attackers' armies had been lying in wait when the 2 million players had been wiped out, and all of them had seen the Dazzling Red Lotus from before. When the phoenix-like cry and the red image appeared, they were all flabbergasted. When the leaders started roaring into the guild channels, they felt as if they had been woken up from a nightmare. They completely disregarded the Battle Alliance and ran.. while running, they started to unequip their equipment.

Killing 2 million players with a single skill-the impact that scene brought was like Mount Tai weighing down on them, leaving a deep fear within every person. When the attackers saw the activation of this monstrous skill, their fear was completely released, and the only thing they could think of was running away... at the same time, they didn't forget to unequip their equipment. Otherwise, just like the Yan Huang Alliance's players, not only would they die pitifully, they would also lose their equipment as well.

Yun Meng Xin and the others were completely dumbstruck. Naturally, they couldn't forget that this was the precursor to the skill that had incinerated 2 million players. As they watched on in shock, the figure wrapped in flames rose to where they were, after which the girl turned and blinked at them. She gave them a mischievous smile and landed on the platform.

"Qi Qi, you..." Yun Feng pointed, and was so emotional that he couldn't say anything.

“Qi Qi, you’re awake!” Yun Meng Xin cried out in joy.

“Mmm!” Xiao Qi happily nodded as the flames around her body disappeared. “Because I heard Su Su calling me, I did my best to wake up. After waking up, I really saw Su Su.”

“Qi Qi!” Su’Er leapt over and started crying. Although she was the Heaven’s Secrets Sect’s sect leader, in front of Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi, she was still that girl who liked to cry.

“Hehe, Su Su’s body is still so soft. It feels so nice hugging you.” Xiao Qi looked incredibly fatigued, but her smile was still as beautiful as a flower, tears of joy in her eyes.

The 2 girls hugged each other for a long time, unwilling to separate. This beautiful scene was in direct contrast to the cruel battlefield, making everyone reluctant to interrupt them. Finally, the 2 girls separated as Su’Er wiped her tears and looked at Xiao Qi in admiration, “Qi Qi, I saw everything. Qi Qi is now the Vermillion Bird’s Representative and has become so powerful. You can chase away all those bad guys in an instant.”

“That was just a feint?” Li Xiao Xue was finally able to speak.

“That’s right, that’s right.” Xiao Qi, whose plan had succeeded, grinned in delight, “When I woke up I was saw so many people, so I decided to scare them a bit. I never thought that they would be so afraid and all run off.”

“How could they not be afraid?” Yun Feng retorted. “You killed 2 million players with 1 strike! 2 million players! If you saw a knife instantly kill 2 million people, and that knife started flying towards you, would you be scared? Would you?”

“Heheh, it’d be best if I could scare them to death!” Xiao Qi laughed. There was not a trace of worry or anxiety on her face; she was just as high-spirited as usual. She skipped over to Xiao Qiu Feng, who was looking at her silently, as she looked up and smiled, “Big bro, did you miss me?”

“… It’s good that you’re back.” After lapsing into silence, the countless words that he had suppressed were expressed as 4 words. He placed his hand on Xiao Qi’s arm, confirming that she really was in front of him, as a slight trace of wetness appeared in the corner of his eye. He immediately forced it back with his iron will as he calmed down his emotional heart and softly spoke, “Qi Qi, you fainted just then. Are you feeling unwell anywhere?”

“I’m just a bit dizzy, but I’ll be fine. It’s just that… that… after sleeping for so long, I’ve only recovered by a little bit. The fire and phantasm just then consumed all of my strength, so I can’t fight anymore.” As she spoke, Xiao Qi’s voice became smaller and smaller. At such a critical time, she was unable to fight-she felt a deep sense of guilt.

“It’s alright, Qi Qi’s already so amazing. I’ll protect this place, just like Qi Qi.”

As Su’Er spoke, she ran to the edge of the platform while looking northwards.

This sort of large-scale, panic-stricken escape was not something that could be stopped. Countless players, who were no longer in battle, flashed with white lights as they returned to town. Upon seeing this, other players also returned to town, and in an instant, the incredibly vast grassy plains shone with countless flashes of light from players leaving. In a second, half of the sea of people had disappeared, and in the next second, less than one third of the players remained. In their fear, they forgot that if that skill really was about to be cast, they would still be in battle and would therefore be unable to leave. Being able to return to town meant that they were not under threat from being attacked by a skill.

By the time Long Tian Yun realised this, more than 90% of the Yan Huang Alliance's players had already returned. His order for them had been to retreat, and returning to town is the best way to retreat. Upon the attackers' desperate escape, the suppressed Battle Alliance indulged their bloodlust and redoubled their attack, continuously killing them. Since their leader had not given the order to retreat, the Battle Alliance wouldn't dare to retreat.

The amazing scene that Xiao Qi had created caused Su'Er to feel incredible happy. She turned as she yelled, "Big brother Xiao, hurry and tell the Battle Alliance's army to retreat here! Tell them all to retreat within 500 metres of the new city! Hurry, hurry!"

Although he didn't know why Su'Er had requested this, if the Battle Alliance continued to give chase, they would eventually suffer for it. Xiao Qiu Feng immediately gave the order to retreat, and in the instant he spoke, the entire Battle Alliance stopped advancing and instead orderly moved back towards the new city.

“Goddamit!” Long Tian Yun was so angry that his face started to go black, “Immediately tell the people who went back to town to get the hell back here!”

“Just then… that was a feint?” Flame Shadow wiped the sweat off his forehead, his heart still pounding.

“If it was a real attack, they would have been able to destroy those 10 million troops in an instant! Do you think they would let go of such an opportunity?!” Long Tian Yun roared. “It was obviously a feint! For an attack like that, not deleting her account is already incredibly generous! How could she use it again?”

“Yes, yes,” Flame Shadow could only nod.

“Immediately make preparations and attack in 10 minutes!”

The attackers finally realised what had happened, and all of them cursed loudly. Although most of the players had returned to town, bringing them back took merely a sentence. Soon, they had completed their preparations. The Yan Huang Alliance’s two waves, numbering 4 million players, charged towards the new city with the other attackers by their sides. Instead of obstructing each other, they seemed to form a tacit understanding.

Under Xiao Qiu Feng’s orders, the Battle Alliance had retreated within 500 metres of the new city while glaring like tigers at the dark mass of people approaching from the north. Su’Er stood on the platform, watching as the attackers drew near. When they

were about 1,000 metres away, she raised the horsetail whisk in her hand upwards as a light that only Su'Er could see shot out of the horsetail whisk, streaking into the sky.

Following this, it was as if a star twinkled in the sky. The light that only Su'Er could see fell down from the sky, falling about 500 metres in front of Su'Er. In then split into 2 as it extended towards the east and west in a curve, forming an arc in front of the new city.

"What is that...? There seems to be a light," Xiao Qi pointed out in front of her towards the ground that had suddenly lit up with light, as if it had been covered with a fluorescent powder.

Other people also discovered the traces of light. They were certain that those traces of light definitely had not been there before. Those traces of light were simply too eye-catching; if they were there before, they definitely would have noticed.

"That's it! It can block off those bad guys." After successfully casting the formation, Su'Er exhaled and pointed towards those traces of light, "Look!"

When the attackers reached the traces of light, they felt a bit surprised but didn't pay much attention to them. Just as the first row of attackers stepped onto those traces of light...

Crack!!!

The perfectly clear sky rang out with the sound of lighting. It wasn't the sound of a single lightning strike, but hundreds combined together. The sound was so loud that even the earth trembled, and in the next instant, countless bolts of lightning rained down on the players who had stepped onto the traces of light.

-80,000, -80,000, -80,000...

The sounds of lightning were mixed with pitiful cries. All of the players hit by the lightning were without a doubt insta-killed. Because of the large number of attackers, the attack line extended quite far. Nearly 1000 people had stepped onto or over the traces of lighting, leading to instant death. The players behind them were greatly shocked and hurriedly stopped. However, with such large forces, how could the entire army stop at will? Although the players at the front had stopped, those behind them continued to walk, pushing the players in front forwards...

Crack! Crack! Crack! Crack! Crack...

More than 1,000 lightning bolts once again descended, mercilessly smashing into the players' bodies. Yet another 1,000 or so players died.

By now the attackers started to panic, and each of the leaders gave the order to stop advancing. The mass of players, numbering over 10 million, stopped walking. They looked at the white line on the ground, as well as the corpses, in fear. No one dared to take another step, for they all had seen that those who stepped on or over the line died.

“What… What’s going on?” Yun Feng vigorously rubbed his eyes, completely dumbstruck.

“It’s yet another amazing skill.” Li Xiao Xue tapped her snow-white chin, an expression of deep shock in her eyes.

“Su Su, did you do this?” Yun Meng Xin asked in disbelief.

“Mhmm! That line is called the Heavenly Star Line, and was drawn using this horsetail whisk,” Su’Er shook the Heavenly Star in her hands. She was quite happy that the Heavenly Star Line had been able to block off all of the attackers, “For the past few months, I was at a place called the Heaven’s Secrets Sect. The Heaven’s Secrets Sect can communicate with the heaven’s will, and the Heavenly Star Line is a protective barrier created by singing a protective contract with the heaven’s will. If anything that hasn’t received my consent tries to cross the line, they’ll be struck by Tribulation Lightning. It’s just that I’m still quite weak, so I can only summon the Tribulation Lightning for a little while.”

Chapter 570 – Please Let Me Join You!

Su'Er's description caused everyone to be dumbfounded. Within the virtual gaming world, player professions were related to swords, sabres, spears, bows, daggers, staffs, elements, pets... even angels and demons. However, none of them had ever heard of a profession that communicated with the heaven's will.

Moreover, what was the heaven's will?

The heaven's will was a term thought up by humans. It didn't have a physical form, so to those who thought it existed, it existed; to those who thought it didn't exist, it didn't exist. If they believed in it, it existed for them; if they didn't believe in it, it didn't exist for them. Moreover, whether one believed in it or not, there was no difference. At the very least, it was just something that may or may not affect a person's mindset. However, what was agreed upon was that even if the heaven's will existed, it was not something that people could change or affect. The so-called term 'heaven-defying' came from this. The heavens could not be defied, nor could one change his or her fate. The so-called 'defying the heavens and changing one's fate' was a mere fantasy.

Upon hearing that Su'Er's profession was related to the heaven's will, everyone was dumbstruck, then everyone started nodding as they formed their own ideas on what she meant.

"Oh, is it like a Spiritualist, who use spirit talismans and spirit energy? Apparently under certain circumstances they can wield mighty power," Yun Feng said. "I seem to have heard of a hidden profession like that in a game before, and it caused quite a ruckus."

“No, I feel that it’s a variant of the Mage profession,” Winter of That Year said. “That was evidently lightning just then. Anything concerning the elements should belong to Mages.”

“But that lightning and Mages’ lightning are different…” Su’Er tried to explain.

“Conjurator?” Xiao Qiu Feng guessed. Xiao Qiu Feng had remembered that in a certain movie, a conjuror had also held a horsetail whisk and had summoned rain and lightning.

They could not believe, nor accept that Su’Er’s profession was something that truly communicated with the heaven’s will.

Su’Er became quite frustrated, causing her face to become light pink. When she tried to explain again, she suddenly remembered what Daoist Tian Qing had told her: “Su’Er, don’t try to explain to other people your power. The Heaven’s Secrets Sect’s power is not something people of the secular world can understand. No matter how much you explain it, they won’t understand it or believe you. For those who do understand… they might instead cause trouble for you.”

As such, Su’Er did not try to explain anymore, and let them guess all they wanted.

“Little Su Su, what’s your profession’s name?” Li Xiao Xue asked in curiosity.

“Heaven’s Secrets Sect Sect Leader,” Su’Er replied.

“Eh?” Li Xiao Xue was quite shocked. “Sect Leader?”

“Mm, it used to be ‘Heaven’s Secrets Sect Disciple’, but before coming back my master gave me this horsetail whisk and I became the ‘Heaven’s Secrets Sect Sect Leader.’ It’s really all the same,” Su’Er said as she smiled. After going from Disciple to Sect Leader, apart from having the horsetail whisk, none of her stats or abilities had changed. To her, it was essentially all the same. She didn’t see anything wrong with just saying this.

“Heaven’s Secrets Sect Sect Leader… what a strange name. It doesn’t give any hint as to what sort of profession it is,” Winter of That Year muttered “Why would there be such a strange profession name?”

Xiao Qi hugged Su’Er’s soft body from behind and swayed from side to side as she cried out, “Sect Leader! Sect Leader! It sounds so cool! It’s definitely an amazing profession. That Heavenly Star Line’s so powerful-look, they’re not moving anymore!”

Outside of the Heavenly Star Line, each of the leaders stood with dark expressions and tightly furrowed eyebrows. They had ordered a few men to act as cannon fodder to try stepping over the line from different places. However, no matter if they walked, jumped, or crawled, as long as they crossed the line, they would be struck to death by the lightning. They then found a few flying-type pets and tried to cross in the sky… but similarly, both the player and pet

were struck by lightning, deader than dead.

“What the friggin’ hell is this? Why have I never seen or heard of something like this before?” Black Flames Wild Gale roared.

“Have you heard about a skill that can destroy 2 million players and their equipment in an instant?” Mo Gu Lin replied as he picked up a rock and threw it over the line. There was no reaction.

It seemed that non-living things could pass, but living things could not.

Elsewhere, Long Tian Yun was much calmer.

“Hmph, this is quite interesting. They didn’t use it before and only used it now; looks like this is their trump card. However, it’s evident that this thing won’t last for too long, and will quickly disappear. My guess is that it won’t last for more than 15 minutes. I wonder if they have anything else even bigger.” Looking at the traces of light, Long Tian Yun coldly laughed, “Flame Shadow, note down its characteristics and investigate what sort of defensive item it is when we return. If we can obtain it, it’ll be good for us to use when we need to protect something.”

“Yes… young master, since it’s an item, the line shouldn’t extend for too far. Why don’t we try going around it?”

“Go around it? Has your head been kicked in by a donkey?” Long Tian Yun glared at him. “From the Azure Forest Village to the new

city, it's only these plains where there are no monsters. Everywhere else, the monsters are all at least LV60; are we going to go through those areas to become fodder for those monsters? If we could attack from anywhere else, would those idiots behind us not have attacked from there?"

"Yes, yes, my thinking was too simple. No less than expected from the Alliance Master, always so wise," Flame Shadow hurriedly nodded.

Long Tian Yun looked down towards the traces of light as he said in a low voice, "I want to see how long you can last."

.....

"That's right, Little Su Su, how long will your [Heavenly Star Line] last for?" Li Xiao Xue asked.

"Right now... only 2 hours," Su'Er said, feeling a bit ashamed. She knew that when Daoist Tian Qing casted it, it would last for 24 hours.

"What? 2 hours?" Su'Er's reply complete shocked everyone else. When Su'Er had told them that it wouldn't last very long, they had thought that it would be a matter of minutes, and at most 10 or so minutes... who would have thought that it would be 2 hours?

A gigantic barrier that could prevent people from stepping over it for a whole 2 hours! That was simply too ridiculous!

“Mm.” Everyone’s reactions caused Su’Er to feel a bit shy as she said in a small voice, “Because I’m not strong enough, it’s fairly short.”

“It’s not short at all. It’s an unexpectedly long time,” Li Xiao Xue said as she gave a light smile. She had become quite interested in Xiao Qi after that incredibly shocking [Dazzling Red Lotus], and now she was even more interested in Su’Er. She walked a bit closer as she said in a soft voice, “Little Su Su, can you show me your profession’s information?”

“Mm, okay.” Although she was the Heaven’s Secrets Sect’s Sect Leader, Su’Er’s heart was still pure and didn’t possess any wariness towards the people around her, nor did she want to refuse them. She opened up her stats page, and showed it to everyone and said, “However, master told me that some of the profession’s abilities relate to ‘heaven’s will’, and that I can’t tell outsiders. As such, what you can see is only a portion of the profession’s power. Even if I wanted to show you the portion related to ‘heaven’s will’, I wouldn’t be able to. Only I’m able to see it.”

Everyone’s eyes were attracted to Su’Er’s stats page.

On the first page, Su’Er’s basic stats and information were listed out:

IGN: Su Su, Profession: Heaven’s Secrets Sect Sect Leader, Level: LV50.

HP: 3262, MP: 2360.

Strength: 207, Constitution: 211, Agility: 196, Spirit: 198.

Luck: ???, Comprehension: 8.

Hit: 196, Evasion: 196, Critical Chance: 10%, Pierce Chance: 10%.

After looking at Su'Er's basic stats, everyone including Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue, who were not of a battle profession, couldn't help but frown.

These stats... were simply too ordinary.

In fact, calling them ordinary would be polite. Frankly speaking, these stats were trash for a LV50 player!

Even a Summoner, who had the lowest HP, would have more than 3000 HP at LV50. However, Summoners also had extremely high MP values, while Su'Er's MP was even lower than her HP.

Moreover, the distribution of her 4 primary stats were also quite strange. Normally, each profession focused on a single primary stat: Warriors focused on Strength and occasionally Constitution, Shield Bearers focused on Constitution and sometimes Strength,

archers focused on Agility and sometimes Strength, and Mages focused on Spirit and sometimes Constitution... these were all common knowledge. In the virtual world, the most stupid thing to do was to raise the primary stats equally. If someone did this, they would without a doubt... become useless.

Looking at Su'Er's primary stats – her Strength at 207, Constitution at 211, Agility at 196 and Spirit at 198: they had essentially been raised equally!

All of them were around 200, but none of them were very high. To any profession – Warriors, Shield Bearers, Archers, Assassins, Mages – these were trash stats.

There was something else that was strange-Su'Er's Luck stat was???.

"Err... is there... something strange?" Seeing everyone staring at her stats page, Su'Er hesitantly asked.

"Ahem, no, Su'Er, can you show us your skills?" Li Xiao Xue asked.

"Mm, here you go." Su'Er opened the second page.

On the second page were some of Su'Er's profession's passive abilities.

[Heaven's Blessing]: Under any state, you will be immune to all attacks initiated by the other side. Any being that takes the initiative to attack you will have double the damage reflected back at them. Any being that kills you or participates in your death will have their Luck permanently reduced by 10, and you will not receive any penalties after dying.

[Heaven's Light of Fortune]: Teammates in your party will receive +50% EXP, +50% drop rate of gold, items, and equipment, Luck+10, Critical Chance+15%, Pierce Chance+15%, and no penalties after death.

[Heaven's Secrets Eyes]: ???? (Heaven's Will Skill, cannot be viewed)

[Wheel of Fate]: ???? (Heaven's Will Skill, cannot be viewed)

It felt as if the entire world had suddenly fallen silent. Pairs of eyes looked up at Su'Er, staring at her as if they were tigers and wolves eyeing their prey.

"AHHHH!!!!" Winter of That Year suddenly cried out as he leapt forwards and fell to his knees in front of Su'Er screaming. "Little sister Su'Er, the most powerful and beautiful little sister Su'Er, please let me join you! Please let me be your friend! Please look after me! Please boost me! I'm willing to be your loyal little follower. With a single sentence from you, I'm willing to go up mountains of knives and go down pots of oil without frowning even a bit. Please let me into your party, please let me into your partyyyyyyyyy!!!"

Chapter 571 – Li Xiao Xue's Trump Card

Yun Feng pushed Winter of That Year aside as he also rushed up, "Me too, me too! Ahhh there are actually such overpowered support-type passive abilities? If I join little sister Su'Er's party, not only are there a lot of benefits… but I won't even have to worry about goddamn dying anymore!"

Anyone in Su'Er's party would receive a bonus 50% EXP and drop rate, as well as significant boosts to their Critical Chance, Pierce Chance and Luck. This was already incredibly shocking, and was much more powerful than all other support skills combined. Moreover, none of her party members would receive any penalties after dying. This meant that they would not lose levels, or have to worry about dropping their equipment. In fact, they would not have to fear death at all-the only disadvantage would be having to respawn at the revival point.

Even Xiao Qiu Feng and Hundred Miles of Ice looked quite stirred up, and gazed at Su'Er with a passionate look. Needless to say, this was the most overpowered support skill they had ever seen. It is not an active skill that had restrictions or consumptions; it is simply broken.

Also, the [Heaven's Blessing] is an extremely powerful defensive passive skill. With that skill, unless Su'Er took the initiative to attack anyone, anyone trying to attack her would have wasted their efforts, and would simply be seeking death. Moreover, even if someone killed her, they would receive extremely cruel punishments. If Ling Chen was present, he would have found that this skill was quite similar to Tian Tian's dying skill. However, Tian Tian's dying skill's punishments were much worse.

“Eh? O-Okay.” Upon seeing everyone’s burning gazes, Su’Er nervously created a party and added everyone present.. The limit for a party was 24 people. If there was no limit, Su’Er’s support skill would simply be heaven-defying and game-breaking.

Su’Er showed everyone the last page of her stats page:

[Heaven’s Secrets Formation – Chaos]: ……

[Heaven’s Secrets Formation – Disturbance]: ……

[Heaven’s Secrets Formation – Whirling Heavens]: ……

[Heaven’s Secrets Formation – Dragon Turning]: ……

[Heaven’s Secrets Formation – Dominating in Eight Directions]: ……

[Heaven’s Secrets Formation – Disorder in Heaven and Earth]: ……

……

……

On this page, 12 skills were listed. All of them were active skills, and all of them were formations!

Heaven's Secrets Formations!

They saw the 12 formations' names, as well as the descriptions for each of the 12 formations. After looking through the description of the first formation, a look of deep shock appeared on everyone's faces, they almost couldn't believe what they saw. After looking through the second formation's description, they all gasped, and after looking through the third formation's description, they couldn't help but tremble... after looking through all 12 formation's descriptions, all of them felt incredibly shocked and numb. No one spoke for a long time.

Looking through all of Su'Er's information, there were no attack skills and her stats were mediocre... In other words, her profession had no attack power at all. Instead, her main focus lay in formations.

Any one of those formations were incredibly shocking.

"This... This is..." Yun Feng's tongue wouldn't listen to him, and he simply didn't know how to describe these formations. These formations were almost useless for one on one battles, but on the battlefield, all of them were incredibly terrifying.

Right now, they were at a battlefield with more than 10 million people!

“Has this game world gone crazy? There’s actually such a profession and such skills… my goodness.” Winter of That Year’s eyes became large as saucers, his voice incredibly airy. Even now, he was so shocked that he still had not recovered.

“Unbelievable,” Xiao Qiu Feng slowly said.

“Su Su, you… you’re so powerful!!” Xiao Qi’s red lips were wide open as her eyes shone.

They were all so shocked that they didn’t even know how to describe how they felt. The words heaven-defying seemed to be made especially for these skills. Su’Er looked incredibly fragile and weak, and her stats were extremely unthreatening. However… if she could really use these formations then… then on this battlefield, she would be like a demon god!

Li Xiao Xue, who had thought that there was no hope, felt that stars had started to appear within the boundless darkness. She looked towards Yun Meng Xin, who was feeling the same way, and lightly breathed in as she forced herself to remain calm and said, “Su Su, can you use all 12 of these formations?”

“Mm!” Su’Er nodded, “There are 36 Heaven’s Secrets Formations in total, and I can currently only use the 12 of the lowest grade.”

36 formations in total… and these were the 12 of the lowest grade? Everyone felt like fainting. For the elementary formations to be so overpowered, what about the intermediate and advanced

formations… would they be well and truly heaven-defying?

“In that case, what’s the largest range you can use these formations?” Li Xiao Xue seriously asked.

Su’Er raised her horsetail whisk, saying confidently, “With the Heavenly Star helping me, I can cover these entire plains when casting these formations.”

Su’Er’s words struck everyone’s hearts like a heavy hammer, causing their excited hearts to rapidly thump. The entire plains- that was the entire battlefield!

“It’s just that the difference in numbers is still too big. Even with these formations and their incredible range, we can’t change the outcome,” Yun Meng Xin said as she bit her lips.

“That’s right.” Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng’s expressions became serious as they nodded.

The Battle Alliance’s army still had 500,000 people, and adding on the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan that had returned, they had only 700,000 players. However, their enemies had over 10 million players! The Yan Huang Alliance even had further reinforcements on the way. There is nothing that could possibly bridge the gap between such a disparity.

“What if… we had 3 million reinforcements?” Li Xiao Xue asked as she looked off into the distance.

“What? 3 million players?” Everyone was quite shocked. Yun Feng almost jumped up, “Big miss Li, did you say 3 m-m-million? A-A-Are you joking? Where could we find such reinforcements? Apart from the Battle Alliance, almost all of the major powers in China are trying to attack us right now!”

“No, there’s still 1 more.” Xiao Qiu Feng turned to look at Li Xiao Xue, “The Skyfall Dynasty.”

“That’s right. The Skyfall Dynasty has roughly 3 million players,” Yun Meng Xin spoke. “However, Xiao Xue, hasn’t your Li family and the Skyfall Dynasty cut all ties? Moreover, even if you still had your partnership, the Skyfall Dynasty wouldn’t sacrifice so much for us. At most, they would send maybe 100,000 players as reinforcements as a gesture.”

“That’s right, and even Mo Gu Lin said that the Skyfall Dynasty’s hiding around here somewhere. If they were given a chance, they would have charged over here already. Why would they help us?” Yun Feng said as he gnashed his teeth.

“Don’t worry, I have a method.” Li Xiao Xue gave a relaxed smile, “This method is something I could have used from the very beginning; something I’ve kept as my trump card. It was just that in the beginning, even if the Skyfall Dynasty came to help us, we wouldn’t be able to change anything.”

Everyone nodded. What Li Xiao Xue had said was the truth.

“However, with little Su Su’s arrival, we’ve received a miracle from the heavens,” Li Xiao Xue smiled. She couldn’t help but marvel that at such a desperate and hopeless time, it truly seemed as if fate was taking care of them. Out of these 3 sisters, one had become the owner of the only player city in the entire Continent, one had destroyed 2 million players in an instant, and one had brought the ability to control the entire battlefield.

There was also herself.

It seemed that the new city was not fated to be destroyed.

“There is no guarantee, but I have an 80% chance of gaining the Skyfall Dynasty’s full support without any chance of betrayal,” Li Xiao Xue said earnestly.

If anyone else had said these words, the others would have taken them to be words of comfort. However, it was Li Xiao Xue who had said these words. She was the Loulan Queen, the sole heiress of the Li family, and her words contained a great weight to them.

With her cautious personality, being able to give an 80% chance essentially meant that it would be certain.

“Xiao Xue, what is it? Could it be that there’s a secret agreement between the Skyfall Dynasty and yourself?” Yun Meng Xin hurriedly asked. Everyone became extremely excited, obtaining a chance at life after all hope was lost-who wouldn't be excited over such a thing?

Li Xiao Xue gave a slight smile, but did not answer. She turned as she made a call on her communication device, and very soon the call connected. Li Xiao Xue spoke in a cool and calm voice, “Wan Yu, how far away are you from the Gu family? ..... Very good, immediately go to the Gu family. I don’t care how you do it, but I want you to hand the thing I told you about to Gu Qing Han as quickly as possible. Remember, you must deliver it to her personally. You must not let any third party know.

“Next, make sure that Gu Qing Han reads it in front of you. After she reads it, you can leave. Remember, this is incredibly important. You must not make any mistakes. Wan Yu, go now. I’m sure that if you go alone, Gu Qing Han will personally meet you.”

After talking, Li Xiao Xue turned off her communication device, her expression extraordinarily calm.

Everyone heard Li Xiao Xue. Xiao Qi couldn’t help but ask, “Big sister Li, the Gu Qing Han who you referred to-is that the Gu family’s amazing big miss? I heard that she wields incredible power within the Gu family, and the Skyfall Dynasty’s 3 Heavenly Kings don’t even dare to speak loudly in front of her... what did you tell that person to give to her? Is it some sort of information that can be used against them?”

Everyone looked at Li Xiao Xue, waiting for her reply. Something that could make the Skyfall Dynasty do something this unbelievable... what was it?

Li Xiao Xue gave a mysterious smile as she tapped a finger against her lips, “I can’t tell you right now.”

Chapter 572 – At All Costs!

Su Hang, the Gu family's courtyard.

"Oh? Something for me from Xiao Xue?" Gu Qing Han brushed back a few strands of hair as she looked at Li Wan Yu in surprise. Li Xiao Xue didn't contact her very frequently, and normally she would directly call her. Only when discussing especially important matters would they meet face to face. This was the first time Li Xiao Xue had asked someone else to pass something to her. Looking at Li Wan Yu's expression, this 'something' seemed to be very important.

Within the younger generation of women, Li Xiao Xue was the only person who Gu Qing Han favoured. As such, she did not refuse Li Wan Yu's request to meet her.

"That's right." Li Wan Yu handed over the document protection box that she held tight against her chest. This was the first time she had faced Gu Qing Han by herself, and the aura that the Gu family's amazing woman gave off caused her heart to rapidly thump, "Miss told me that I must hand this personally to Aunty Gu, and that I need to be present when Aunty Gu reads it. Only Aunty Gu can read what's inside, and no one else can see. After looking at it, it's best that Aunty Gu destroys it."

"Oh?" Gu Qing Han raised her eyebrows, her gaze lingering on Li Wan Yu's face for a second before receiving the document protection box. Her observational skills were extraordinary, but there was nothing strange about Li Wan Yu's expression. The document protection box was quite light; it seemed to only contain

a single document.

This sort of document protection box wasn't just to protect the document. It had a special seal that required a unique key... Once the box was unlocked, the lock would be destroyed, making the box unable to be used ever again. This locked document protection box served as evidence that no one had opened the box after it had been locked.

After opening the document protection box, Gu Qing Han saw a few ordinary sheets of paper filled with writing. Gu Qing Han picked up the sheets of paper and found that there were 3 sheets in total, all of them handwritten by Li Xiao Xue. She didn't use any high-tech devices to type this information out and instead wrote it by hand, showing how extraordinary the information was. Gu Qing Han narrowed her eyes as she started to read.

At the beginning, Gu Qing Han's expression did not change at all, only a slight frown on her face. When she read about half of the first page, her right hand, which was holding the paper, suddenly shook as she stood up from her chair with a 'whoosh', as if she had been electrocuted.

Within the Gu family, everyone knew that Gu Qing Han was the sort of person whose expression would not change even if Mount Tai exploded. No matter how big of an issue she faced, her expression would still be calm as water. It was rumoured that Gu Qing Han had suffered some sort of trauma in the past, causing half her heart to die as well as half her person. It was said that nothing in the world could cause her to feel any sort of emotions.

Gu Qing Han's 2 secretaries were so shocked that they nearly cried out. They had been with Gu Qing Han for many years and had never seen such a reaction from her before. Let alone them, no one within the Gu family had seen this. They immediately ran towards Gu Qing Han and hurriedly asked, "Miss, what's wrong?"

Don't come over!!

A voice filled with might and dignity sounded out, causing them to stop in their tracks. Gu Qing Han pressed the documents against her chest while the other hand was outstretched. Evidently, she did not want anyone to see what was written on those documents... not even a single word.

The 2 secretaries hurriedly stopped, but they could see that Gu Qing Han's outstretched hand was trembling and her face, which was normally incredibly calm, became quite red... this was a reaction caused by uncontrollable emotions. The secretaries, as well as Li Wan Yu, were completely dumbfounded. Even when faced with a mass uprising of many esper families, she had not revealed any fear or panic. When the esper families had been completely suppressed by the Gu family and had finally taken back their rightful position as the head, she didn't show any signs of delight.... Just what had caused her to reveal such a reaction?

"Leave. Don't disturb me or let anyone else in."

After speaking, she took in a deep breath and then slowly sat back down on her chair and started reading again. The 2 secretaries didn't say anything and cautiously walked to the door. They looked at each other for a long time, and even began to

subconsciously breathe lighter. Both of them felt the same thing... something big was going to happen within the Gu family.

Gu Qing Han became more and more absorbed into Li Xiao Xue's letter. She began to read slower and slower, until she would spend a great amount of time on each word. She began holding the documents with both hands, her hands continuously trembling.

Normally, Gu Qing Han would be able to read through these 3 pages within a few minutes, however, it had taken her an entire half an hour. Instead of reading it again, her hands dropped to her sides, a blank look in her eyes as if she was recalling something else as well as trying to calm herself down.

Facing anything, she would be able to instantly calm down. However, for this... although she could not confirm the truth of it, she simply couldn't calm down.

Her gaze returned to the document protection box. At the bottom was a thin folder. Gu Qing Han picked it up, opened it, and saw two big words.

Test Report.

These two words sent a lightning like shock down her back and dilated her pupils. She was filled with a strong sense of premonition as she held her breath.

There were 2 test reports, each one clipped to either side of the

folder. Comparing them, everything was revealed.

Gu Qing Han silently stared at the 2 test reports, not moving or speaking. The heart that she had silenced for more than 10 years ago began rapidly thumping, as a feeling of heat passed through her chest, making her feel as if it was going to explode.

Gu Qing Han didn't react in time as the document protection box slid off her knees and fell to the ground. She saw some shiny and crystal-like things fall out, quickly picking them up. They were diamond-shaped and button-sized objects: they were evidently micro-recorders. The small, obsidian-like things on the bottom of those recorders indicated that they could be played through Bluetooth.

Gu Qing Han quickly picked up her Bluetooth earphones and placed them in her ears. The recording that Li Xiao Xue had created started to be played.

Although the dialogue wasn't very long, to Gu Qing Han's ears it made her feel much more emotional than everything she had experienced in the last 10 years combined.

Gu Qing Han took out the earphones and after spacing out for a while, threw the micro recorders into the ecological aquarium behind her. The sound of the recorders falling into the water attracted the attention of the other 3 women in the room, and when they all looked towards Gu Qing Han... in that instant, they almost all cried out.

On Gu Qing Han's face... were 2 streaks of tears!

If it was any other woman, they wouldn't have felt very surprised. However, for Gu Qing Han to cry... it was as if the heavens were falling and the earth was shattering.

Whirring sounds sounded out as Gu Qing Han fed the pieces of paper into a paper shredder, watching them as they were destroyed. After a while, she lifted her tear streaked face that still retained her air of majesty and dignity and calmly said, "Immediately tell Tian Nan, Tian Dong, and Tian Ping to come here."

.....

Mystic Moon.

"Hm? What is that? Why have we never heard of such a defensive item before? Haha, it actually blocked off 10 million players! What an amazing scene," Judging Sky marvelled as he watched on through his binoculars.

"It's been nearly an hour, and yet it's still there," Skyfall said and then shook his head. "But so what if it can last for even another hour? With less than a million players against more than 10 million players, they don't have a single bit of hope."

"Indeed, the new city doesn't stand a chance. That strange defensive item should be their final trump card. As for us, it seems

quite difficult for us to find an opportunity to strike," Against The Sky tapped his chin as his eyes suddenly lit up, "Big bro, third bro, the Yan Huang Alliance's fourth wave has arrived and has about 7.8 million players. This means that there are less than 1 million players defending. If we go to their headquarters..."

"Cheh!" Judging Sky didn't even bother to look at him, "Did some water leak into your head? When a guild's headquarters are attacked, the players can immediately return. The Yan Huang Alliance can just leave 1 million or so players here while the rest of them immediately return to defend; what's the point of doing such a thing?"

"Of course I know that. I just wanted to scare them."

Ding ding ding!

Skyfall's communication device sounded out. Skyfall glanced at it, and immediately picked up. After listening for a few seconds, he said to the others, "Big sister wants us to go back. It seems that there's something urgent."

Within the Gu family, Gu Qing Han's summons were like an imperial edict. The Gu family's 3 brothers didn't dare to dally, and immediately logged off. Very soon, they came to the study in Gu Qing Han's courtyard. Before they could even greet her, their jaws nearly dropped to the ground.

Although Gu Qing Han had wiped away her tears, the Gu family's 3 brothers were all legendary figures in Southern China and had

extremely sharp senses. At a glance, they could tell that the redness and wetness in Gu Qing Han's eyes were not natural... she had been crying!

This was their big sister! From when they young until now, they had never seen her shed a single tear!

What the hell was happening?!

"B-B-B-Big sister, w-w-w-what happened?" Skyfall started to stutter. As he spoke, he suddenly thought of something as his face instantly became pale. He trembled as he asked, "Could it be... that father..."

As soon as they heard this, Judging Sky and Against The Sky almost started crying. Indeed, apart from their father dying, they couldn't imagine what else could cause their big sister to cry! Before they could cry, Gu Qing Han furiously chided them, "Fools! Father's currently boating at West Lake and is perfectly fine. If you dare to curse father again, I'll rip apart your mouths."

"Eh... ah? Father's fine? Whew..." Skyfall sighed in relief, then felt even more dismayed. "Then big sister you... you..."

"Don't say anything unnecessary; I have something important that I want you to do," Gu Qing Han stood up as her voice became strict and heavy. She narrowed her eyes as she looked at the 3 brothers, speaking clearly, "Immediately gather the entire Skyfall Dynasty and hurry to the Azure Forest Village. I want you to stop the Yan Huang Alliance and the other attackers... defend the new

city at all costs!”

“Remember, at all costs!”

“Even if we have to sacrifice the entire Skyfall Dynasty, we’ll protect the new city!”

Chapter 573 – Burning Bridges

“What! Big sister! H-H-H-Have you gone mad?!” The irascible Gu Tian Dong yelled out. Gu Tian was completely dumbfounded by Gu Qing Han’s words, however, after yelling out, he immediately regretted it. Gu Qing Han’s words held an incredible amount of power within the Gu family, and no one dared to disobey her. Her power was not one gained through force, but by gaining the approval and respect of every person, especially the Gu family’s old patriarch. Even he would not interfere with decisions made by Gu Qing Han, nevertheless the 3 brothers.

Gu Tian Dong had called many subordinates ‘mad’, but he would never dare to say it to Gu Qing Han. This time, he had yelled it out before he could stop himself-it was evident how strongly he felt about Gu Qing Han’s decision.

“Big sister… are you… joking?” Gu Tian Ping looked up at Gu Qing Han, completely stunned. He had never seen Gu Qing Han joke before, but her words didn’t make any sense. This was not something that the incredibly intelligent and wise Gu Qing Han would say. They had been observing the situation of the new city this entire time, and they knew what the outcome would be. Asking the Skyfall Dynasty to help the new city when they had no relation at all… this was an incredibly foolish decision.

“Do I look like I’m joking?” Gu Qing Han expressionlessly replied.

“But… But… Big sister, you know that there can only be a single player city in an entire region, right? Any faction in China that

believes it has some degree of power would do everything it can to fight for it. In order to destroy the new city, the Yan Huang Alliance has moved out almost its entire guild, and more than half of the top 30 guilds have gone as well.

"There are more than 15 million players attacking in total! We've been hiding at the back, not daring to go up to fight for it, and now you want me to help the new city at all costs? Our Skyfall Dynasty only has 3 million players, and even if we don't leave any to defend, it'll still be 3 million against 15 million... this is completely suicide. This will drag the entire Skyfall Dynasty down," Gu Tian Dong lost control of his emotions as he loudly retorted.

"No, I do know. I've been paying close attention to this matter, and I know as much as all of you do," Gu Qing Han calmly spoke as she looked at her 3 little brothers. "15 million players is the largest attacking force ever seen in China's virtual gaming history, and their main objective is to destroy the new city. However, the main reason is out of greed and avarice, as all of the guild masters want to be the Lord of the new city. If it was the Yan Huang Alliance that had built this city, no one would dare to attack it.

"There are more than 15 million players attacking the city while there are less than 500,000 players defending. Even if a miracle happens, this new city is still doomed. I'm very clear about all of this.

Gu Qing Han continued to speak, "I also understand that if the Skyfall Dynasty supports the new city, the outcome will not change. We'll simply be delaying the time it takes for the new city to be destroyed, and the price we'll have to pay is 1000 players for

every 200 attackers! The Skyfall Dynasty will also be wiped out!

“Every player in the Skyfall Dynasty will go down by 1 level, and a lot of their equipment will be lost, greatly reducing the Skyfall Dynasty’s overall strength to the point that we may not recover. The Yan Huang Alliance, who has been opposing us in the dark, will take this opportunity to completely eliminate the us so that we may never oppose them again.”

Every word that Gu Qing Han spoke was the cold and hard truth. Every word served to prove that the Skyfall Dynasty could not help the new city no matter what, and that they had absolutely no reason to.

Gu Qing Han’s tone changed as she spoke with great determination, “However, what I said just then was not a joke. Even if the Skyfall Dynasty is destroyed here, we still need to help the new city at all costs.”

“But big sister…”

“Second bro, third bro.” Gu Tian Nan suddenly cut Gu Tian Dong off as he said seriously, “Stay quiet for now. Don’t we know what sort of person big sister is? When has big sister ever made the wrong decision before?"

He looked at Gu Qing Han as he continued speaking, “Big sister, we’ve never doubted your decisions before. However, this time… I’m sure that big sister must have a good reason to do such a thing. I hope that big sister can tell us, otherwise, despite big sister’s

decision, we still can't mobilize the entire Skyfall Dynasty to help the new city. We've put in so much blood, sweat, and tears in order to develop the Skyfall Dynasty, and if it's truly destroyed because of this, then... then... ah, big sister, could it be that you want us to pretend to help the new city so that they will willingly hand over the City Creation Token to us because they feel indebted to us?"

Gu Tian Nan's words caused Gu Tian Dong and Gu Tian Ping's eyes to light up... that's right! That's how it must be! If they just waited by the side, the chances of them obtaining the City Creation Token amongst the competition with the Yan Huang Alliance and other guilds were incredibly slim. However, what if they went to help the new city? That would be completely different! The new city was already a lost cause, and if the Skyfall Dynasty went to help them and gave their all to help them, they would definitely feel incredibly grateful. As for why they were helping them... the reason was very simple! Because Li Xiao Xue was there-the Gu family and Li family had a very good relationship. This reason was more than enough.

However, even if the entire Skyfall Dynasty moved out, they would still be unable to stop the Yan Huang Alliance and the other attackers. At the very end when all hope was lost, what would the owner of the City Creation Token do? That's right, there was a 99% chance that they would give it to the Skyfall Dynasty who had the power to protect it. The reason was very simple-instead of having the new city destroyed and the City Creation Token stolen, it would be better for them to disband the new city and hand it over to the people who had helped them.

The more they thought about this, the more they felt in awe of this idea, and the 3 of them started to feel ashamed... obtaining the

City Creation Token by waiting like they had before was simply impossible. However, their big sister's idea was much better. Although they would suffer some losses, it would definitely be worth it if they could obtain the City Creation Token. No less than expected from their big sister-she is wiser than wise. They all felt stupid for doubting their big sister's decisions.

Seeing her 3 little brother's eyes light up, Gu Qing Han naturally knew what they were thinking about. She lightly sighed as she said in a heavy voice, "It's not at all like what you're thinking. What I want you to do is protect the new city at all costs without thinking about the consequences or price, even if we have to fight to the very last person. There's nothing else. Unless a miracle happens, the only outcome will be the annihilation of the Skyfall Dynasty. Moreover, to the Gu family as well as the Skyfall Dynasty, there will be no benefit at all. There are no secret deals-just the Skyfall Dynasty giving its all. In other words, a suicide mission for the entire Skyfall Dynasty."

The air suddenly froze as the 3 brothers stared at Gu Qing Han, unable to believe what they had just heard.

"Big sister," Gu Tian Nan's throat became hoarse. "We 3 brothers have listened to big sister our entire lives. As long as it's big sister's decision, we'll... we'll follow it. However, we need a reason, a reason..."

Over the course of the Skyfall Dynasty's development, it had become the second largest guild in China, and one of the top 20 guilds in the entire world. They had paid a lot of effort to grow the Skyfall Dynasty to this size, and had worked hard to gain this

reputation. The Skyfall Dynasty was like 3 brothers' child, slowly and carefully nurturing it. Right now, their big sister wanted them to send the Skyfall Dynasty on a suicide mission... a suicidal mission with no benefits at all.

To them, it was equivalent to asking them to throw their own child into a volcano.

"Reason..." Gu Qing Han closed her eyes as she turned around, not allowing anyone to see the tears once again flowing out of her eyes. Her voice, which was usually filled with might and vigour, became light and hoarse, "It's been more than 10 years since I died. At the very least, my heart had completely died. However, my body has lived on because I needed to support the Gu family, and I've continued living all this time for the Gu family."

The 3 brothers felt a pain within their hearts.

If it wasn't for Gu Qing Han, the current Gu family wouldn't exist. This is something that no one within the Gu family, or even in all of the Southern region of China, knew about. Without Gu Qing Han, the Gu family might have fallen to become a second-rate family, or may have even been split and destroyed. However, because of Gu Qing Han, the Gu family retook its position as the head of the esper families in the south, and could figuratively cover the sky with a single hand in the south... that was why the Gu family had the Skyfall Dynasty.

Even the name 'Skyfall Dynasty' was thought up of by Gu Qing Han. Only these 3 brothers knew of the undying hatred hidden by Gu Qing Han within this name.

In other words, without Gu Qing Han, the current Skyfall Dynasty wouldn't exist.

No one knew better than the 3 brothers how much Gu Qing Han had done for the Gu family over the years. The Gu family influences the entire Southern region of China, and is tied to innumerable things. Every day, she had to consider and plan out countless things, she slept so little that their hearts ached.

These years, apart from brief periods of sleep every day, she was working for the Gu family. She didn't have any time of her own, nor did she have any interests or hobbies... because she didn't have any free time. Moreover, no one had ever seen her smile before... even today she is single, and had decided that she would live in the Gu family by herself for the rest of her life...

The Gu family had become more and more powerful every day, but when had she experienced any happiness? When had she lived for herself?

She wasn't like a living person; no, she was like a working machine for the Gu family.

Although they were used to looking at Gu Qing Han's back, their hearts still ached. Compared to what their big sister had done and given up, the things they had done even when added together were incredibly miniscule.

At this moment, Gu Qing Han's final sentence sounded in their

ears, causing their entire bodies to tremble, “But this time… I want to do this one thing… for myself…”

This short sentence swept into the 3 brothers’ hearts like a gale, turning their hearts upside down. They looked at each other with the same expression and intent in their eyes… there was no more hesitation, reluctance, or unwillingness in their eyes, only resolution.

Doing something for themselves… to a normal person, this was more normal than normal! However, for the first time in over 10 years, Gu Qing Han had wanted to do something for herself…

“Big sister don’t worry. The entire Skyfall Dynasty will go to defend the new city with not a single person less! We’ll fight until the last person!”

Gu Tian Nan’s words were tough and resolute, and Gu Tian Dong and Gu Tian Ping heavily nodded… they did not even continue to ask for a reason anymore. This was enough; they couldn’t say no to this reason. The Skyfall Dynasty contained their blood, sweat, and tears, but compared to their big sister, it meant nothing. This was something they were doing for their big sister, not for the Gu family… let alone the Skyfall Dynasty, even if she needed their lives they wouldn’t hesitate at all!

After casting out all stray thoughts, the 3 brothers became resolute and left together, returning to the virtual world.

“Brothers and sisters of the Skyfall Dynasty, put on your

strongest equipment and make sufficient preparations. I want everyone to gather at the Azure Forest Village in 10 minutes. Those who are late, regardless of the reason, will be permanently kicked out of the Skyfall Dynasty!”

Chapter 574 – Heaven's Secrets Absolute Formation (1)

An hour and a half passed, but the [Heavenly Star Line] still hadn't disappeared. Long Tian Yun started to feel a little nervous. He had thought that such a domineering defensive item that covered such a large range would only last 10 or so minutes. He completely did not expect it to last until now. No matter what he tried, there were no players who could cross over those traces of light.

Despite this, no matter if it was the Yan Huang Alliance or any of the other attackers, nobody retreated because those traces of light had to disappear at some point. Perhaps it could last 1 or 2 hours, but it surely couldn't last for an entire day.

Elsewhere, Li Xiao Xue, who had been waiting for news, finally put down her communication device as a smile appeared on her face. She made a gesture to Yun Meng Xin and the others to relax, "The Skyfall Dynasty is moving out, and has moved out all of their forces. Not a single person has stayed behind to defend, and are currently moving here from the Azure Forest Village. They'll be here shortly."

"All of them? In order to help us, they're not even defending their headquarters? Big miss Li, just what did you do? You couldn't have promised to give over half of the Li family's assets, right?" Everyone was completely dumbfounded, and couldn't believe what they had just heard.

"Of course not, I would never make such a bad deal. I didn't give

anything or make any promises. All I did was ask Wan Yu to take a trip," Li Xiao Xue casually said.

"This... This..." Yun Feng and the others stared.

"Xiao Xue, just what did you do? Is the Skyfall Dynasty truly helping us?" Yun Meng Xin still could not believe it.

"To put it simply, I used a method that I didn't want to use unless I had absolutely no other options. This method didn't have anything to do with bribery or blackmail, only 'emotions'," Li Xiao Xue explained.

"Yes, it's actually quite easy to explain." Li Xiao Xue turned to look at Xiao Qiu Feng as she asked, "Alliance Master Xiao, do you think you're a calm and rational person?"

"Of course he is," Xiao Qi immediately replied.

"This is undeniable. Otherwise, how would he be able to lead and support the Battle Alliance?" Yun Feng said confidently. They had been friends since they were young, and knew each other well.

Li Xiao Xue gave a slight smile, "In that case, Alliance Master Xiao, if your parents gave your little sister, Qi Qi, to you, but then you lost her on the very first day and heard that she died... what would you do if you suddenly learned 10 years later that she was alive? Even if you didn't have the ability to rescue her, wouldn't the usually calm and rational Alliance Master Xiao still give up

everything and try to save her regardless?”

Everyone fell silent. Xiao Qiu Feng’s cold gaze dissipated as he looked over at Xiao Qi. No one doubted that he would indeed make that decision... after thinking about it, all of the people present would make such a decision... because that decision was not related at all to wisdom or logic. Anyone who possessed emotions would choose to become a madman or madwoman for their loved ones.

“It’s that simple,” Li Xiao Xue looked at them as she said while smiling. “However, don’t ask me for any specifics; I can’t tell you them right now. Perhaps one day you’ll know... mm, the Skyfall Dynasty is here.”

In the north, a black mass was moving towards them. The rumbling from millions of players marching together could be heard. Li Xiao Xue narrowed her eyes and turned to Su’Er as she said, “Little Su Su, can you control that [Heavenly Star Line] at will? Are you able to let anyone you want in?”

“Yes,” Su’Er nodded.

“Very good.” Li Xiao Xue’s smile became wider as she picked up her communication device and earnestly said, “Heavenly King Skyfall, let’s not waste words. You will be able to pass through the traces of light stopping the Yan Huang Alliance and other attackers. In order to move to the best defensive position, it’s best that you cross over that line and join with the Battle Alliance. We’ll talk about the specifics later.”

After the call ended, Skyfall changed to the guild channel and yelled, “Quickly advance!”

“Big bro, second bro, do any of you know what happened to big sister?” Judging Sky couldn’t endure it anymore as he asked.

“I want to know even more than you,” Against The Sky said as he rolled his eyes.

“Ai,” Skyfall gave a long sigh. Although he didn’t regret his decision, he was still nervous about the outcome of today’s battle, “You should have seen that big sister actually cried. I never thought that I would see big sister cry within my lifetime. Something big definitely happened, and it definitely has something to do with someone defending the new city. For big sister, who’s so wise and rational, to make such a crazy decision, this person must be incredibly important to big sister. As such, we need to do this no matter what. As for why… we shouldn’t ask her about it or even think about it before big sister tells us willingly.”

Against The Sky and Judging Sky simultaneously nodded as their gazes became resolute. Looking at the massive attacking army in front of them, their eyes were filled with battle intent.

Very soon, the Skyfall Dynasty would face its most intense battle in its history. With 3 million players against 15 million players, they were fully resigned to their fate. Since they had burned all their bridges and cut off all retreat, they had to fight a world-shaking battle! They would let the entire world know how

terrifying the Skyfall Dynasty was.

"Young master, it's the Skyfall Dynasty. All 3 Heavenly Kings are present," Flame Shadow reported to Long Tian Yun.

"Oh? They can't wait anymore?" Long Tian Yun coldly laughed.

"However, the situation seems a bit strange," Flame Shadow frowned, "The Skyfall Dynasty's numbers are unexpectedly large, and we estimated that they have around 3 million players. That's almost their all of their forces. I don't think the Skyfall Dynasty hid any forces from us, which means that the 3 Heavenly Kings seem to have moved out all of the Skyfall Dynasty's forces and left nobody to defend! This... is very strange."

"....." Long Tian Yun deeply frowned and didn't say anything. He pondered about what the Skyfall Dynasty was trying to do. Had they gone crazy for the City Creation Token, and moved out all of their forces? He didn't think that the 3 Heavenly Kings were so foolish as to do such a thing. In that case... what were they trying to do?

"Avoid contact with them, and keep an eye on them to see what they're doing," Long Tian Yun said in a low voice.

The Skyfall Dynasty started to advance faster, arriving at where the attacking forces were. The two forces were about 1,000 metres away, and neither side showed any intention of getting closer, as if they wanted to see what the other side would do. The Skyfall Dynasty's army soon approached the Heavenly Star Line, but did

not show any intentions of stopping. The attackers watched on in amusement, as they gleefully watched them draw closer and closer to those traces of light.

Countless players watched on in wicked glee, waiting for the Skyfall Dynasty's army to be smited, when the players at the front finally crossed over the line.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom...

Every second, the marching of 3 million players caused the earth to shake, producing booming sounds. However, that sound is evidently different from the sound of descending lightning. As the attacking forces watched on in disbelief, the Skyfall Dynasty's players marched over the traces of light that were supposedly un-crossable, their speed didn't even decrease as they continued to march forwards.

"What's going on? They were perfectly fine when they crossed... goddamnit! Could it be that the light has lost its effects?"

Each of the leaders immediately sent another wave of cannon fodder to test it out... the results made them want to cough up blood. The Skyfall Dynasty's army was still marching forwards, but no matter who they sent, as soon as they touched or crossed the line, the lightning would immediately smite them.

"I get it," Mo Gu Lin stamped his feet. "The range of the line isn't as long as we thought it was. It blocked our army, but everywhere else the line is just a feint! I knew there couldn't be such a powerful

defensive item with such a large range.”

A wave of players went out from the attacking forces towards where the Skyfall Dynasty’s army was. The Skyfall Dynasty continued to advance, completely ignoring them.

Because the other side was ignoring them, the attacking players didn’t try anything either. They followed behind the Skyfall Dynasty’s army and tried to pass through behind them.

Crack! Crack! Crack! Crack…

The sound of lightning once again rang out, and the bolts of lightning struck the attacking force’s player’s bodies accurately. Any player and mount belonging to the attacking force would be struck to death by the lightning, without exception. However, the lightning ignored the Skyfall Dynasty’s army. Let alone kill, the Skyfall Dynasty’s army was not even touched by the lightning.

Very soon, another wave of players charged over, this time wanting to mix in with the Skyfall Dynasty’s army. The Skyfall Dynasty’s players continued to march forwards, and continued to ignore them. The result caused the attacking forces to almost cough up blood… despite mixing in with the Skyfall Dynasty’s army, they were still struck by lightning when they stepped on or over the line. As for the Skyfall Dynasty’s players, not even a hair on their heads was harmed.

“Looks like there’s only one explanation,” Long Tian Yun said as his expression darkened. “The Skyfall Dynasty seems to know

about that strange defensive item, and knows the method for avoiding it… they must have a special item similar to a ‘lightning rod’!”

Of course, the other possibility was that they were here to help the defenders, and had been granted access. However, this idea was almost instantly discarded by Long Tian Yun. Why would the Skyfall Dynasty muster their entire army to go help the defenders? Even if the 3 Heavenly Kings were complete idiots, they wouldn’t make such a decision.

“What should we do then?” Flame Shadow asked worriedly.

“What should we do? Heh…” Long Tian Yun coldly laughed. “Since they want to cross over, let them cross. That Battle Alliance isn’t a very big problem, but it isn’t very small either. Now, it looks like there’s someone who can’t wait to get rid of this problem for us for free.”

Without facing any obstructions, the Skyfall Dynasty’s massive army finished passing over the Heavenly Stay Line and gathered in front of the new city. By now, there were only a few minutes before the Heavenly Star Line’s effects ran out.

Chapter 575 – Heaven's Secrets Absolute Formation (2)

After the Skyfall Dynasty's entire army passed over the Heavenly Star Line, they did not immediately attack the new city as the attacking forces had expected. Instead, they turned around and quickly formed a formation. In just a little while, they had formed a long defensive formation! 3 million players glared at the attacking forces in the north, their gazes filled with enmity… those gazes were ones that knew they would soon be destroyed.

"What's going on? What are they doing?" Flame Shadow yelled out in shock. They were obviously not attacking the city, and with this defensive formation… it looked like they were defending the new city behind them against the attackers in front of them. This was impossible!

"Interesting," Long Tian Yun coldly laughed as his expression darkened. "Looks like I need to personally go and meet the 3 Heavenly Kings. Call the 3 Heavenly Kings for me and say that I want to talk to them. I'm sure they have things to say to me too."

Long Tian Yun personally went to the front of the army, and Skyfall, Against The Sky and Judging Sky also came out from within their army, facing each other across the Heavenly Star Line that had not yet disappeared.

"Heavenly King Skyfall, what are you doing?" Long Tian Yun said in a menacing tone while sitting on his tiger.

“Hoh! Isn’t this Alliance Master 3~~~? Can’t Alliance Master 3~~~ tell what we’re doing?” Against The Sky spoke sarcastically. Before he could finish speaking, he couldn’t help but laugh. Behind him, millions of Skyfall Dynasty players laughed while the Yan Huang Alliance and other guild’s players all pursed their lips, their faces reddening as they struggled not to laugh. They looked like they were in immense pain from holding it in.

The nickname ‘Alliance Master 3’ had quickly spread around the entire virtual world after the mass streaking event, and was reserved just for Long Tian Yun. This nickname contained a humiliation that no man would be able to endure, and was the greatest humiliation Long Tian Yun had ever suffered in his entire life. This nickname spread incredibly quickly within China, especially among male players... the high and mighty Long Tian Yun, who most people didn’t even have the right to look up at, was ‘Alliance Master 3’, and was inferior to them in their manliness- the satisfaction and amusement that the men received was simply too refreshing!

However, very few people in the world dare to say this nickname in front of Long Tian Yun. Once they did so, they would attract Long Tian Yun’s hatred. And yet, Against The Sky had called out this nickname so loudly in front of millions of players, meaning that Long Tian Yun would feel irreconcilable hatred for him from now on... before, the Skyfall Dynasty and Yan Huang Alliance often fought in the dark, but acted peaceably in public. No matter if it was the Yan Huang Alliance or Skyfall Dynasty, neither of them wanted to go to war if it was not necessary. However, the Skyfall Dynasty was fated to be destroyed today, so was there any need to worry about going to war? He might as well gain some satisfaction from humiliating a person he didn’t like.

“You’re… seeking… death!!”

It was as if Long Tian Yun had been stripped naked in front of the whole world. He became so angered that he felt as if all of the blood within him was burning up. He venomously stared at Against The Sky who did not seem scared at all. He grinned as he met Long Tian Yun’s gaze-it was as if the angrier Long Tian Yun became, the better he felt. All 3 of the brothers knew the meaning behind the name ‘Skyfall Dynasty’. They all hated the Long family, and after suppressing this hatred for so many years, they finally got to vent it out.

“Young master you must stay calm. They’re clearly trying to make you lose your cool and make a rash decision,” Flame Shadow hurriedly reminded Long Tian Yun.

“Oh? Lose his cool?” Judging Sky said, his face full of surprise. “Doesn’t the entire world know of the nickname ‘Alliance Master 3’? Why would you lose your cool over my second bro calling it out? Hm? Alliance Master Long, what’s wrong with your face? Why has it become as red as a monkey’s ass? I remember that your face should be quite white… whiter than your little brother 3 down there!”

“Hahaha… hahahaha…” Against The Sky burst out into laughter, and started laughing so hard that he bent over backwards. He almost couldn’t breathe from laughing so hard, and the Skyfall Dynasty’s players were once again sent into laughter. The laughter of millions of people travelled for over 10 miles in all directions.

“Shut up!!!!” Skyfall, who hadn’t spoken this entire time,

suddenly roared out. His loud and coarse voice caused Against The Sky, Judging Sky, and all of the other players to stop laughing. Skyfall turned around and looked at Judging Sky and Against The Sky angrily as he chided them, “Second bro, third bro! I’m very disappointed in you both. How did father raise us? In order to be a true man and do great things, you must act with dignity and honour. Even if he is the enemy, we can’t trash-talk him in public! But what did you do? You called Alliance Master Long ‘Alliance Master 3’ in front of so many people. Did you not know that the meaning of this nickname is that Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long?!”

Skyfall’s expression was both sorrowful and furious, “As a man, how humiliating would it be to have a ‘little brother’ that’s only 3 centimetres long? To any man, this would be incredibly shameful- in fact, with such a length, they wouldn’t even deserve to be called a man! Alliance Master Long is the heir of the Long family, and is a dragon among men. He only has this tiny, little, shortcoming, and yet you mocked him for this, calling him ‘Alliance Master 3’ in public? Aren’t you essentially yelling that Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres in public? How could you say such a thing in public? This is simply too wrong! How is Alliance Master 3... no, no, Alliance Master Long supposed to maintain his dignity?”

“Alliance Master Long is a man! How could you be yelling that his ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long in public? Don’t you feel ashamed?”

“In future, neither of you are allowed to say that Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long, got it?”

“If anyone dares to say Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long, I, Heavenly King Skyfall, will become enemies with them!”

“The Skyfall Dynasty’s 3 million brothers and sisters: did you hear that? In the future, no one is allowed to say that Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long, especially not to Alliance Master Long, understood?”

“Friends from the Yan Huang Alliance, you’re not allowed to say that Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long in public as either, alright?”

“To dare to say that Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long in public-this is an outrage!”

“Even if Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long, you shouldn’t say it out in public!”

“Although Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long…”

“How could you publicly say that Alliance Master Long’s ‘little brother’ is only 3 centimetres long? What would you do if more people found out, hm?”

“……”

“……”

.....

Skyfall's eyes were open wide and his spittle flew out as he roared at Judging Sky and Against The Sky. Every single sentence he shouted out would include something along the lines of Alliance Master Long's 'little brother' is only 3 centimetres long. Judging Sky and Against The Sky lowered their heads in shame, fearfully repenting, "Yes, yes, big brother's right. In the future, we'll never publicly say that Alliance Master Long's 'little brother' is only 3 centimetres long, even though Alliance Master Long's 'little brother' really is only 3 centimetres long. However, we shouldn't say that Alliance Master Long's 'little brother' is only 3 centimetres long. If more people found out that Alliance Master Long's 'little brother' is only 3 centimetres long, then how shameful would that be for Alliance Master Long, whose 'little brother' is only 3 centimetres long?"

The Skyfall Dynasty's players resisted the urge to laugh, to the point where they thought they were going to suffer internal injuries. Every single person's face and body uncontrollably trembled as they desperately held in their laughter. On the platform at the back, everyone was extremely amused, and Winter of That Year smirked as he looked ahead and said, "These famous 3 Heavenly Kings... why are they all acting like hooligans?"

"The Skyfall Dynasty possesses a deep hatred towards the Yan Huang Alliance, and has never seen eye to eye with Long Tian Yun. However, for the development of the Skyfall Dynasty, they couldn't destroy their cordial relationship with Long Tian Yun. However, they're fully prepared for death, so they have to enjoy themselves at least. At the same time... they're doing this to calm

themselves down." Li Xiao Xue's gaze became serious as she picked up her communication device and said in a low voice, "Heavenly King Skyfall, the defensive line is about to disappear. Please meet us here at the platform."

Xiao Qi had unwittingly bared Long Tian Yun's greatest humiliation to the world, and this was capitalised on by the 3 Heavenly Kings. They boldly humiliated him again and again, causing Long Tian Yun to feel as if his internal organs were burning up. His darkening face slowly became purple, and just as everyone thought he was going to explode, he suddenly started to laugh.

Long Tian Yun's gaze actually became gentle as he looked at the 3 Heavenly Kings and spoke slowly, "So it's like that. You actually came to help the new city that was about to be destroyed. Moreover, you're willing to destroy the entire Skyfall Dynasty for it, hahahaha... I'm very curious as to what sort of benefits the Li family has given you for you to do such a thing for the Li family."

By now, Long Tian Yun became completely certain of the Skyfall Dynasty's goal.

"Benefits? Heheh," Skyfall smirked. "There aren't any benefits at all, nor do we need to receive any benefits. It's simply because you piss us off, hahaha... second bro, third bro, we should be going so that we don't worry the big miss Li. We'll have many more opportunities to talk with Alliance Master 3 – ahem – Alliance Master Long in the future."

"Alliance Master 3, I should also tell you that I know an amazing

hospital for males. Without any surgery, or any need to stay at the hospital, you'll be able to increase your length by 4 centimetres by just following a treatment plan... heheh, that would be an amazing length for Alliance Master 3! Moreover, there's very little pain and it costs very little, nor will it affect your day-to-day activities. The quality is guaranteed, and they're incredibly professional. If you're interested, you should hurry and go do it. Alliance Master 3, just let me know secretly when you want to do it."

Skyfall reached out and dragged off Against The Sky who had a disgusting smirk on his face. Long Tian Yun darkly glared at the 3 Heavenly Kings as they walked off, raised his head, and then narrowed his eyes.

"Within 7 days, the Skyfall Dynasty will be wiped off from this world with not even a single fragment remaining..."

The low and sinister voice travelled into Skyfall's ears. He paused for a moment, but he didn't turn around, and instead continued to walk towards the platform.

At this moment, the traces of light in front of the attacking forces suddenly began to flash.

"The Heavenly Star Line is going to disappear in 5 minutes," Su'Er said anxiously.

Skyfall, Against The Sky and Judging Sky all climbed up the platform and stood in front of the others. Li Xiao Xue went up and spoke seriously, "3 Heavenly Kings, I won't waste our time with

words of thanks. I'll introduce these friends behind me momentarily. The defence line that's holding the attackers back is about to disappear, and with how furious Long Tian Yun is, the instant it disappears he'll immediately start attacking. As such, we need to immediately discuss tactics."

"I understand," Skyfall nodded. "Since we've completely offended the Yan Huang Alliance, we don't have any path of retreat, nor will we hesitate. Since we're your reinforcements, you can command the Skyfall Dynasty's players however you like. That's what big sister wants."

"Good!" Li Xiao Xue nodded. "Right now, can Heavenly King Skyfall please order the Skyfall Dynasty to merge with the Battle Alliance's army and quickly form a winged formation no shorter than the attacking force's formation."

Skyfall frowned. In a battle where they faced an overwhelming numbers disadvantage, they should be shrinking down their formation. In battles where one faced a numbers disadvantage, using a winged formation was a great taboo. This would increase the area of the fighting, allowing the other side to make full use of their numbers advantage.

However, Skyfall knew what sort of person Li Xiao Xue was. Although he knew that this was the worst possible formation under the circumstances, he didn't protest and immediately gave the order. Xiao Qiu Feng also gave an order as the Skyfall Dynasty's 3 million players and the Battle Alliance's 500,000 players merged together. They then spread out in a gigantic winged formation.

Chapter 576 – Heaven's Secrets Absolute Formation (3)

"Meng Xin, how many more drops of Dew of Dusk do you have? Give them all to Su Su."

"Okay." Yun Meng Xin immediately took out all of the Dew of Dusk given to her by Cai'Er and gave them to Su'Er. Su'Er's Heaven's Secrets Formations required large amounts of MP to cast, and normal MP Potions were unable to sustain that sort of consumption. However, the Dew of Dusk would be more than enough.

"Su Su, make preparations to use the [Disorder in Heaven and Earth] Formation. I'll let you know as soon as we need to change formations," Li Xiao Xue said as she stood in front of Su'Er. She was now incredibly familiar with the 12 Absolute Formations that Su'Er could use. Although the formations Su'Er could use were not extremely powerful, they were incredibly strange and unpredictable. Once the battle began, they would use them to affect both sides' morale. As such, Li Xiao Xue needed to use one of the most powerful formations from the very beginning.

"Okay, I understand." Su'Er gripped the Heavenly Star horsetail whisk with both hands, with an earnest and honest look on her face.

"Heavenly King Skyfall and Alliance Master Xiao, immediately give the order that when the fighting begins, all players must face the north the entire time," Li Xiao Xue said.

“Don’t worry. Even if we die, none of us will try to escape,” Skyfall replied. The enemies were at the north and they were at the south. When attacking, they would naturally be attacking towards the north, and would only face away from the north when escaping… that was how he understood Li Xiao Xue’s words.

“That’s not what I meant,” Li Xiao Xue shook her head. “I meant that when fighting, under no circumstances are they allowed to turn around, even if the enemy is right behind them. Unless I give an order to the contrary, they must always attack towards the North!”

Skyfall was utterly confused by this order, but Xiao Qiu Feng instantly understood. He picked up his communication device and rapidly gave the order. Skyfall looked at Li Xiao Xue and Xiao Qiu Feng and also did the same.

At that moment, the Heavenly Star Line finally disappeared.

When the traces of light had started flashing, Long Tian Yun’s eyes had been fixed on them the entire time. His entire body was burning with anger, and only by massacring the Skyfall Dynasty and destroying the new city would he feel better. The instant the light disappeared, his arm, which had been raised, chopped downwards as his voice travelled into every Yan Huang Alliance’s player’s ears.

“Attack!!”

Attack!!!" The other attacking forces also simultaneously gave the order.

The sounds of over 10 million players and their mounts charging forwards could shake the heavens and move the earth, causing the entire grassy plains to tremble. The dense waves of players rushed forwards like floodwaters, seemingly unstoppable as they charged towards the new city. In front of the new city, the Battle Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty's players also roared as they charged up towards the attackers.

"Su Su, activate the formation! Attack towards the north!"

As Li Xiao Xue spoke, Su'Er, who had already finished preparations, waved her horsetail whisk. As the white strands of the horsetail whisk travelled through the air, countless tiny star-like motes of light floated down from the sky, covering the entire grassy plains. After covering the entire battlefield, the light gave a slight flash as it disappeared.

The attacking forces and defending forces came closer and closer to each other, but no one knew that a terrifying Heaven's Secrets Formation had been placed where they were.

The 2 forces smashed together, and the massive sound that resulted was as if 2 mountains had crashed together. Countless blades, spells, and arrows attacked from each side, and within a few seconds, the ground became littered with corpses.

However, all of these corpses belonged to the attackers... not a

single defender had died.

The defenders' attacks landed on the attackers, resulting in innumerable damage figures rising up. However, when the attackers' attacks landed on the defenders, no matter if it was an attack by a Warrior, Shield Bearer, Archer, Assassin, Mage, Priest, or Summoner, none of them dealt any damage! Even the type of attack didn't matter!

When the attacking players, who thought that it would be a one-sided massacre, realised this, they were struck with fear and dismay.

When the defending players, who thought that it would be a one-sided massacre, realised this, they became delirious with joy and delight... when a person found out that their enemy could deal no damage to them, what did they have to worry about? More and more defending players rushed towards the attacking players while completely ignoring the attackers' attacks. They mercilessly and crazily took life after life, while the other side couldn't deal any damage to them at all.

More and more corpses became to cover the ground, but not a single one of them belonged to the defending players. After the attacking players died, they stared with wide eyes, unable to believe what they were seeing. The attackers had a 5 times numbers advantage, and the attacking players had thought that they would instantly destroy the defending players. It was unthinkable that the defending players would be able to stop them at all. However, after they charged over, the attackers felt as if there was an unmovable mountain stopping them... because no

matter how they attacked, the defenders simply would not die.

The attacking force's leaders were completely shocked, and even the Skyfall Dynasty's 3 Heavenly Kings were dumbfounded.

"What... What's going on? Why are their attacks useless against us? Is there some sort of incredible bug in the system?" They had thought that they would be completely suppressed, and yet this sort of inconceivable scene had unfolded. Incredibly, it was the attacking forces, who had 5 times their numbers, who were being suppressed. They all felt completely stunned.

"This is a formation called the [Disorder in Heaven and Earth] Formation," Li Xiao Xue slowly said as she looked at the battlefield. "This is an indescribably miraculous formation that I've never even heard of. After laying down this formation and picking a direction, within the formation, only attacks towards that direction will be effective. Attacks towards all other directions will be wholly ineffective! This is why I asked you to give that order before."

"Is... Is this true? Such a mystical formation exists?" Skyfall asked in shock. He suddenly thought of something as he became even more shocked, "Could it be that this formation is so big as to cover the entire battlefield?"

"That's right." Li Xiao Xue smiled as she looked at Su'Er.

The 3 Heavenly Kings also looked at Su'Er, and realised that this formation had come from this extremely cute girl.

“Holy crap… what sort of hidden profession has these sorts of ridiculous formations. With these sorts of skills, a person can control a massive battlefield!” The 3 Heavenly Kings simultaneously marvelled inwardly.

Skyfall now understood why Li Xiao Xue asked the defenders to be arranged in a winged formation. This incredibly strange formation made them almost invincible, but its weakness was that it could easily be seen through.

As more and more attacking players unwittingly attacked towards the north, the formation’s secret would be discovered. When that happened, the defenders would no longer be able to capitalise on this advantage. However, before this happened, this winged formation would be able to cause heavy casualties to the attackers, while also boosting the defenders’ morale and reducing the attackers’ morale.

“What an incredible ability. Su Su, you’re simply amazing,” Li Xiao Xue continuously marvelled. They faced an army that was much bigger than their own, and yet they were able to cause the other side to take heavy losses while suffering none themselves-no matter how wise or powerful one was, they would not be able to achieve such a thing. However, Su’Er had evidently accomplished this, causing Li Xiao Xue to become completely amazed.

At this moment, a loud cry sounded out as a grey shadow flashed past like a bolt of lightning, charging towards the battlefield.

It was the Sword Emperor! As well as her pet the Lightning Falcon!

"Ah!!" Su'Er cried out in shock.

Li Xiao Xue immediately reassured her, "Su Su, don't worry. The Sword Emperor is now helping us. Looks like the Sword Emperor has fully recovered. What's amazing is that the Sword Emperor took down over 10,000 people singlehandedly."

"She's... the Sword Emperor?" Su'Er's eyes remained shocked, looking like she was quite scared. "But... but... she's a woman..."

"Hm?" Li Xiao Xue looked at Su'Er in surprise. "How did you know that she's a woman?"

"I have a special profession skill called Heaven's Secrets Eyes that can see hidden things. Just then when she flew past, I saw that she was a woman, and... and..." Su'Er gulped as she spoke, "Her face is so scary..."

"Face? Scary? You can see her face?"

"Mm, I can see it... her face is so scary, like a demon's... so scary... I've never seen such a terrifying face before." As Su'Er spoke, she thought back to the face she had just seen, and her little face paled. It seemed that the face had given her a terrible fright.

"Are you sure... that's her real face?" Li Xiao Xue asked.

“I’m completely sure,” Su’Er said as she earnestly nodded.

Li Xiao Xue fell silent as she frowned.

She didn’t doubt Su’Er’s words because she understood Su’Er’s personality. She simply wasn’t someone who would tell lies.

A woman… with a terrifying face… like a demon’s…

What was going on?

No way…

Could it be that her guess had been incorrect?

Or…

“Wait, the thing that I couldn’t understand before… if the Sword Emperor really is that person, she should have tried to meet him after knowing who Ling Chen was. And yet, it seems like she has been trying to avoid Ling Chen…

“Could it be because of this reason?”

Looking in front of her, Li Xiao Xue fell silent for a long time. The Sword Emperor charged into the battlefield, and when 5 silver

sword lights shone out, everyone knew that the death god had reappeared. Her reappearance caused countless attacking players to have nightmares.

Within the formation, the battle was a one-sided massacre in the favour of the defenders. However, as expected, this sort of situation did not last, and the secret was eventually discovered... however, by the time they realised this, the attackers had already suffered heavy losses, and had lost a million more players than the defenders. Moreover, even after discovering the secret and ordering the attackers to change the directions of their attacks, it was still difficult for them to swing the battle in their favour.

The reason was very simple. The attackers were attacking from the north towards the south. As such, the vast majority of their attacks were aimed towards the south, while it was the opposite for the defenders. The 2 sides started to fight for better positioning. Although the defenders had the advantage of the formation, the other side had an absolute advantage in numbers. After the secret of the formation was exposed, the defenders' advantage started to decrease, but their morale was so high that they continued to block the attackers, not retreating even a single step.

"It's about time," Li Xiao Xue said in a low voice before turning around. 'Heavenly King Skyfall and Alliance Master Xiao, give the command for magic professions to move to the east and for physical professions to move to the west. Make sure they're fast, otherwise the formation will be broken."

Xiao Qiu Feng and Skyfall immediately gave the orders. After their experience with the previous formation, they unhesitatingly

gave this order that seemed completely mad.

At that moment, the [Heaven's Secrets Formation – Disorder in Heaven and Earth] was deactivated as [Heaven's Secrets Formation – Whirling Heavens] was activated.

Formation effect: West: Magic Attacks become useless while Physical Attacks are empowered; East: Physical Attacks become useless while Magic Attacks are empowered.

Chapter 577 – 3 Moon Goddesses

Mystic Moon world, Moon God Realm.

The elemental essence here was incomprehensibly dense, but was also incredibly gentle. They did not show even hints that they might become a berserk Elemental Storm. At a glance, there were clouds and fog everywhere, making the place seem like a celestial realm... or perhaps, this was a celestial realm. The tallest palace looked like it extended into the clouds, making it difficult to see it clearly. The formless pressure that it gave out made people subconsciously wary of getting too close, and it caused slight changes to the flow of elemental essences in the Moon God Realm.

Within the palace, there were 3 women wearing different coloured clothes sitting cross-legged. The woman at the front was wearing white, and seemed to be the leader. Next was the woman in purple and then the one in blue. They seemed to detect something, and simultaneously opened their eyes. Just this simple action seemed to cause a small change in the flow of the elemental essences in the Moon God Realm.

“North of the Fairy Forest in the Forgotten Continent, the natural order has been disturbed. Purple, do you want to take a look?”

The voice was gentle and beautiful, and it had an ethereal feel to it. It was gentler than the wind, and any mortal that heard this voice would feel intoxicated. Perhaps this was what it meant to call someone’s voice ‘celestial and ethereal’.

The one who spoke was a woman dressed in white. Draped around her shoulders were snow-white feathers, and there were simple inscriptions on her snow-white dress. Her waist was incredibly slim, enough so that one could easily wrap their arm around it, and she had a delicately-shaped body. Her hair was drawn up by a white-jade Moon God Hairpin, and just her silhouette made her look celestial and otherworldly.

“I’ve investigated already. The person who caused this is a human from the other world, so I shouldn’t interfere. She used the Heaven’s Secrets Sect’s Heaven’s Secrets Absolute Formations to cause these disturbances in the natural order, so there’s even less reason for me to interfere.”

Compared to the softness of the voice of the woman in white, this voice was incredibly clear and cold. Upon hearing this voice, one would think of icy plains and feel as if their entire body was buried in snow and ice, causing them to tremble.

The woman who had spoken was dressed in purple, and apart from the colour of her clothes, her silhouette looked the same as that of the woman in white. Her long hair fell to her shoulders and was drawn up by a purple-jade Moon God Hairpin. There were light purple tassels hanging down from it, which slightly swayed as she spoke. She was the ‘Purple’ who the woman in white had referred to. Evidently, it was because of the colour she was dressed in.

“Oh? Heaven’s Secrets Formation? This generation’s successor is a human from the other world?” The woman in white spoke with a voice as soft as smoke, “Although it’s quite surprising, there’s

indeed no reason for you to act. In that case, are you also going to keep silent about the matter regarding Snow Cherry?”

Upon hearing this, the woman in purple looked up. Her eyes were as clear as water, and they had a bone-piercingly cold chilling intent. It was as if a gaze from her could cause the heavens and earth to freeze over, and that nothing in existence could escape those incredibly cold eyes. “The other person is also a person from the other world, so I have no reason to interfere. Moreover, Snow Cherry made that decision herself.”

“That’s right! This was what Snow Cherry wanted; we shouldn’t meddle in this.”

A woman in blue suddenly spoke at that moment. The 3 women had the exact same voice, but the tones and emotions expressed in their voices were as different as heaven and earth. While the woman in white’s voice was beautiful and gentle and the woman in purple’s voice was cold, the woman in blue’s voice was delightful and spirited, as if she was a youthful girl.

She had been quite concerned about the matter about Snow Cherry and said earnestly, “We can’t trace that human, nor can we trace Snow Cherry. Why is that? Snow Cherry must have hidden herself so that we can’t find her. Evidently, she left willingly with that human from the other world rather than being forced. Also, she seems to have returned to her original form and become that human’s pet. Since she has become part of the mortal world, there’s even less reason for us to interfere. This is what Snow Cherry wanted, and although she was saved by Purple, freedom is the most beautiful thing in the world. Could you really bear to

snatch Snow Cherry's away?"

The woman in white smiled, "Blue, as the Moon Goddess who controls 'freedom', of course you would say such a thing. However, Snow Cherry's situation is special. With our help, it wouldn't take long for her to reach the Saint Destroyer level... however, now that she has become that human's pet, it's indeed out of our control."

At that moment, the woman in purple suddenly stood up. The instant she rose, a beautiful and heavenly face was bathed in the light coming from outside the window. Her skin was white as snow, and there was a faint trace of purple in her eyes. It was just that the coldness within them completely hid away her emotions. Her skin was smooth and supple as jade, and her light pink lips were full and lovely. Two locks of hair fell down either side of her face, making her look extremely enchanting.

"Purple, where are you going?"

The woman in purple looked towards the east, "I don't want to think about Snow Cherry's matter for now. However, with Snow Cherry leaving, there's no one maintaining the seal on the Yamata no Orochi. The new Moon God Representative's power is not enough to suppress it, and with the Yamata no Orochi once again rousing, I need to go to the East Ocean Continent myself."

"Very well," The woman in white nodded. "Blue, go with Purple. After staying here for so long, I'm sure you've been wanting to go out."

“Hehe, it’s still White Snow who understands me the most,” the woman in blue happily responded. She lightly arose as her charming face was revealed. Her skin was soft and waxy, and there was a faint pinkness contained within the whiteness of her skin. Her eyebrows were as beautiful as a painting’s, and her eyes twinkled like stars. Under her cute nose, her mouth was upturned as she cheerfully smiled. It was difficult to guess her age from her looks; she looked 20 or so years old, yet also like she was 10 or so years old.

The expressions and atmospheres around the woman in purple and the woman in blue were completely different. One was chillingly cold while the other was bright and warm. And yet, their faces… were exactly the same! Eyebrows, eyes, noses, mouths… there was nothing that was not identical. Even their heavenly bodies looked exactly the same. Standing together, if not for their clothes, it would have been impossible to tell them apart from the back. However, standing in front of them, they could be immediately distinguished due to their expressions and emotions.

After the woman in purple and woman in blue left, the woman in white remained by herself within the palace. The surroundings became peaceful again, and the flow of elemental essences returned to their natural state. After a while, a soft murmur could be heard within the palace, “The Moon God Orb is glowing… is the Lunar Scourge going to reappear?”

……

“Su Su! Change formations! West to east!!”

The Heaven's Secrets Formation changed. This formation is called [Heaven's Secrets Formation – Chaos], and can cause all elemental essences to flow in a certain direction. The most direct impact of this is that the elemental essence will push the players in a certain direction. When the formation activated, a formless force caused the unprepared attacking players to lose their balance and crash to the ground. The defending players, who were prepared, were affected only very slightly and resisted the pushing force. They took this opportunity to rush up towards the attacking players, ferociously ripping through their forces. In just a few minutes the attacking players had suffered yet another great loss.

When they started to adjust to the pushing force, the formation suddenly changed again so that the pushing force came from the other side. The attacking players once again crashed to the ground.

With Su'Er's current abilities, she was only able to maintain the formations for 45 minutes. Within these 45 minutes, the formation had changed 19 times, tormenting the attackers so much that they simply wished for death.

"Heavenly King Skyfall and Alliance Master Xiao, give the order for everyone to concentrate and await your orders... as soon as you give the order, tell them to lie on the ground!"

"Su'Er, prepare to change the formation... Dragon Turning Formation!" Li Xiao Xue yelled.

"All players heed my orders... 5, 4, 3, 2, 1... lie down!"

“Su’Er, Dragon Turning Formation!!” Li Xiao Xue shouted.

As soon as Skyfall and Xiao Qiu Feng yelled out their orders, all of the defenders laid on the ground. The attackers all stared in shock at this strange scene, but in the next instant, the world seemed to turn as everyone who was standing was flipped to the ground, and everyone who was lying on the ground… was flipped upright.

“Hurry, attack!!!” Skyfall roared.

A scene of massacre once again played out. The defenders roared as they charged up, furiously attacking those on the ground. As for the attackers, who all had expressions of confusion, all they could do was wait for death. By the time the attackers had crawled up, those at the front had already been annihilated by the defenders. The 2 armies chaotically fought for 10 or so seconds before the defenders once again lay down on the ground.

The Dragon Turning Formation was once again activated as those who were upright were flipped onto the ground, and those who were lying down were flipped upright. Even the countless corpses on the battlefield stood upright…

The flow of the battle was now completely out of Long Tian Yun’s hands. He stood on the tall platform as his face became a pig-liver colour. There had never been a force of 15 million players attacking a city before in China’s virtual gaming history. Despite the Skyfall Dynasty’s obstruction, they should still have been able to attain a flawless victory. Based on his estimates, he had believed that he could completely wipe out the defender’s forces within 2 hours.

However, 5 hours had passed, and yet these 15 million attacking players still had not torn apart those measly 3.5 million players. In a battle of such a scale, the number of deaths every second was quite terrifying. If this sort of battle happened in the real world, corpses would litter the entire plains and blood would form rivers. Currently, the attacking forces had lost 5 million players-a rate of 1 million players every hour… while the defenders had lost less than 1.2 million players! The remaining players were becoming more and more vigorous. The defensive line, which had looked so fragile, could not be broken at all, and they had not retreated by a single step.

Everyone clearly knew that what caused this definitely wasn't that the Skyfall Dynasty and Battle Alliance were more powerful than them. Clearly all of their players aren't capable of fighting against 5 enemies simultaneously… it was because of that incredibly powerful formation that was being used to continuously toy with the attackers!

During this period of time, Su'Er had continuously used 9 Heaven's Secrets Absolute Formations: Chaos, Disturbance, Whirling Heavens, Dragon Turning, Dominating In Eight Directions, Disorder In Heaven And Earth… some of these formations affected elemental essences, while others affected space, skills, and the mind… all of the formations had caused the attackers to suffer immensely.

The formations covered the entire battlefield, affecting all of the players. However, what was different was that the defenders all had advance notice, making it so that they were almost unaffected. As for the attackers, they were always caught completely

unprepared, making it so that none of them were able to resist the effects of the formation. On the battlefield, a small variable could cause a mountain of loss, let alone massive blows to the army time and time again.

After being tormented like this for 5 hours, the attacking players simply wished for death. They spent each second in deep fear, anxiously waiting and trying to prepare for the next misfortune as their battle intent slowly faded. If at this very moment their leaders gave the order to retreat, they could immediately run as fast as they could... in a normal battle, they had nothing to fear. However, after being toyed around with and tormented like this, they felt that death would be a release.

As for the Skyfall Dynasty and Battle Alliance players, even though they faced a force 5 times larger than theirs, they didn't show any signs of fear at all. Their morale burned brighter and brighter like an intense flame, and each attack was more ferocious than the last. They had come fully prepared to die, and they never expected that such a scene would play out... if they could truly defend against an army of this size, how glorious would that be?

Chapter 578 – Ling Tian Returns

Flame Shadow, with his forehead covered in sweat, hurriedly rushed over to Long Tian Yun. Before he had even come close, Long Tian Yun asked him with a dark expression, “Have you found them yet?”

Flame Shadow hurriedly lowered his head as he ashamedly replied, “Young master, we’ve sent out 1,000 players to go around the entire battlefield, but we haven’t found any formation items on the players.”

“None?” Long Tian Yun’s expression became even darker. “A group of trash. You haven’t found anything after such a long time?!”

“Please calm down young master,” Flame Shadow hurriedly spoke. “The places we looked were the boundaries of the formation, as detected by our highest-level Hunters. However, it’s true that there are no formation items or players there. Young master, could it be that a player is controlling… this formation… I mean…”

“You mean that this formation is a player’s skill?” Long Tian Yun asked as he looked at him.

“Yes, yes.” Flame Shadow nodded, but he thought that this was essentially impossible. However, there were no players or items at the boundary of the formation, so he couldn’t think of any other possibility.

“Foolish to the extreme!” Long Tian Yun coldly said. “Do you know how large this place is? It spans nearly 20 kilometres. If it was an NPC of the Mysterious God grade or Saint Destroyer grade it might be possible, but they can’t interfere in this battle… you’re telling me that a player released this formation? I doubt it’s possible to have a thought stupider than this.”

Being rebuked like this, Flame Shadow’s face and ears became red. He lowered his head, not daring to say anything. After thinking about how large the battlefield was, he realised how stupid his idea had been.

“In order to cover such a large area and use so many different formations, they need at least thousands of players and thousands of formation items. They would normally be spread around the boundary of the formation in a perfect circle. As long as you can find them and kill them, the formation will collapse! Hmph, in order to lay down such a large formation, the Skyfall Dynasty must have spent a fortune. I never thought that the Skyfall Dynasty would have such an ace up their sleeves-no wonder they dared to move out their entire alliance to fight against us.

“It seems that before they weren’t simply hiding, but rather laying down the formation… after spending so much time and effort laying down this formation, how could it be possible for us to discover it so easily? It’s possible that the boundary that you searched was obscured by some sort of concealment. Immediately increase the search radius… those players and the formation items might be even further away. In fact, they might even be hidden within the high-level monster territories.”

Flame Shadow's eyes lit up as he hurriedly nodded, "Yes, yes. In the end, it's the young master who's truly wise. I'll immediately give the orders... right, young master, the changes in this formation are very disadvantageous towards us, and we've suffered great losses. Should we temporarily retreat and find the formation's weaknesses and then..."

"And let the entire world know that the Yan Huang Alliance and 30 or so other guilds were forced to retreat by the Skyfall Dynasty and Battle Alliance?" Long Tian Yun's face was as dark as thunderclouds.

Flame Shadow only just realised what a stupid suggestion he had made. They had been almost tormented to tears and had suffered terrible losses, and yet they could not find out how to break the formation. Temporarily retreating should have been a wise decision... however, they had gone into this battle with a 5 times number advantage, and the number 1 guild was allied with 30 or so other guilds against 2 or 3 guilds... if they retreated, it would be a massive humiliation. Putting the other guilds aside, the Yan Huang Alliance, which had always been victorious, would become a massive laughingstock. Even if they later destroyed the Skyfall Dynasty, they would never be able to raise their heads in front of the 3 Heavenly Kings again.

More and more people were sent to find the key points in the formation, but they would never be able to find them. This was because the idea that they thought was incredibly stupid, and in reality, was an impossibility.

This formation that covered 20 kilometres was set up and controlled by Su'Er alone.

The Heaven's Secrets Absolute Formation was still being maintained, and Su'Er's clothes were completely drenched in sweat. Her face was already shockingly pale, but she did not stop swirling the horsetail whisk around.

Li Xiao Xue's gaze never left the battlefield, analysing the situation every second. For the battle to go this well, most of the credit went to Su'Er, but Li Xiao Xue had also made incredible contributions. While Su'Er's Heaven's Secrets Formations were incredibly powerful, Li Xiao Xue had maximised their might.

Yun Meng Xin stood beside Su'Er, continuously using her handkerchief to wipe away her sweat. The descriptions of the Heaven's Secrets Absolute Formations had written that casting them required not only large amounts of MP, but also consumed one's mental energy incredibly quickly... as for what would happen to a person who tried to use them when he or she was exhausted, that was not written.

Winter of That Year, Hundred Miles of Ice, Yun Feng, Against The Sky and Judging Sky couldn't sit by and watch, so they had joined the battle. Skyfall and Xiao Qiu Feng, the two leaders who couldn't allow themselves to be killed, watched the miraculous battle being fought by their guilds, causing their blood to boil. Their voices had already become hoarse from yelling, but each command was given with great vigour.

"Su Su, are you alright? Are you feeling very tired?" When Xiao

Qi looked at Su'Er, her heart ached. It was evident just how exhausted Su'Er was.

Su'Er whirled her horsetail whisk, causing the formation to once again change. Because of this simple action, the battlefield of millions of players was once again greatly changed. Upon hearing Xiao Qi's voice, a sweet smile appeared on her face, "I'm fine, and only feeling a bit tired. Don't worry about me."

"Su Su, if you're too tired just take a break. Don't force yourself." Every bead of sweat that rolled down Su'Er's forehead caused Yun Meng Xin's heart to ache a bit more. She silently looked at this 16-year old girl... although she hadn't seen Su Su for a long time, she had indeed grown up. The Su'Er who was gentle, meek, didn't dare to talk to strangers, and always relied on others, had changed a battle of millions singlehandedly. At the same time, she carried the hope of so many people on her shoulders.

The Sword Emperor returned from the battlefield, once again sitting down to recover. Looking at the Sword Emperor, Li Xiao Xue raised her eyebrows. The Sword Emperor needed to rest because her sword intent relied on her mental energy. Despite being so powerful, the Sword Emperor was completely fatigued-what about Su'Er who had been going for even longer...

Looking at how pale Su'Er's face was, Li Xiao Xue gave a light sigh as she picked up her communication device and called Chao Ying and Chao Xi.

"Ying and Xi, have you received any news from Ling Chen?"

“No. Tian Tian has stayed by his side the entire time, and he has not shown any signs of waking up. How’s the situation over there?”

“… I don’t know how long we can last for.”

After powerlessly putting down the communication device, a look of frustration appeared on Li Xiao Xue’s face. They had received miracle after miracle and had used their trump card. They had already stalled for as much time as possible… Ling Tian, why aren’t you here yet? Just where are you?

If Su’Er collapsed, the Heaven’s Secrets Formation would dissipate. If Ling Tian still didn’t appear, then everything they had done would still have been for nought.

……

A dark world.

With an angelic companion like Sha Sha, Ling Chen did not feel lonely or bored on the way back. After Sha Sha dove into his embrace, she would occasionally lie outstretched, curled up, or even hang from him, but she refused to get off. She was so cute that Ling Chen couldn’t help but smile the entire time.

The road of light extended as far as the eye could see, and after seeing the same scenery for 10 hours, Ling Chen couldn’t help but

feel annoyed. He looked down towards Shadissika in his embrace as he asked, “Sha Sha, do you know when we’ll reach the exit?”

“Does Ling Chen want to get back quicker?” Sha Sha asked as she smiled and looked up.

“Of course. There’s nothing to do here. I want to leave this place as quickly as possible,” Ling Chen replied as he smiled.

“Oh… right now, it’s just me and Ling Chen with nobody else to disturb us. I really like this peace and quiet, but if Ling Chen wants to go back that much, we should be there soon,” Shadissika said as she laughed.

Just as she spoke, a white circle of light appeared within Ling Chen’s field of vision.

Ling Chen quickly looked over, “What is that?”

“Wow! It looks like the exit! I was right! We’re at the exit.” Shadissika delightedly smiled and lay against Ling Chen’s chest, looking lazy and reluctant to get up.

I can finally leave this place… I hope this exit really will take me back to where I was before… Ling Chen’s arms, which were holding Sha Sha, slightly tightened as he quickened his pace and jogged over. He had originally thought that the circle of light was quite far away, but after a few steps, the circle of light quickly became bigger and bigger. In just a few moments, he was standing

right in front of it.

Ling Chen hesitated before stepping into the circle of light. As the white light flashed, the white-haired girl in Ling Chen's embrace opened her eyes and looked at the dark world that she would be leaving forever.

After walking into the circle of light, an intense white light obscured Ling Chen's vision, causing him to subconsciously close his eyes. In the next moment, the air suddenly became cool as Sha Sha cried in delight.

Could it be...

Ling Chen immediately opened his eyes... the world in front of him was no longer dark. In front of him was the thing that had sucked him inside-the mysterious door!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

As Ling Chen appeared, the Celestial Slayer Insignia, Heaven Slayer Insignia, and God Slayer Insignia that had been socketed above the mysterious door fell to the ground and shattered. It was as if they had fulfilled their mission and had no use anymore.

"Wow! Where is this? The air is so cold! Could this be Ling Chen's world?"

Sha Sha blinked as she excitedly looked around her. When she

looked up to see the beautiful layer of ice, she started to yell out in joy.

That's right, Ling Chen had returned to where he was before he was sucked into the mysterious door-the summit of the Godchild Peak.

Wait... Godchild Peak?!

Ling Chen suddenly realised something and looked down at the girl in his embrace. There was still a rosiness within her cheeks while her gaze was filled with curiosity. He stared in shock for a moment before asking, "Sha Sha... don't you feel cold?"

The summit of the Godchild Peak was an extraordinarily cold place. Even Qi Yue, who was a spirit, had to seal herself off. Even most Mysterious God beings did not possess the ability to come to this place... and yet he didn't see any abnormal reactions from Sha Sha's body.

"Cold? Just a little bit. But it's more cool than cold, and it's very comfortable." As Shadissika spoke she spread out her hands, feeling the air around them. She closed her eyes and smiled, a look of intoxication on her face.

Ling Chen fell silent and was speechless. Sha Sha's entire body was snow-white... could it be that she was a snow-spirit? Maybe that was why she wasn't afraid of the cold...

Chapter 579 – Purple Winged Cloud Leopard

“Ling Chen what is that? It’s all sparkly and so pretty.”

Shadissika stretched out her snow-white hand and pointed near Ling Chen’s feet. Ling Chen looked towards the direction she was pointing in and saw 2 piles of crystals. The first time Ling Chen had come here, these 2 piles of crystals had caught his attention. They looked like ice, but were clearer than most ice crystals and gave off a faint light. Back then, he had only looked in appreciation and hadn’t paid them much mind. That was because this is the summit of the Godchild Peak and there is snow and ice everywhere. Thousand year and ten thousand year mystic ice that couldn’t be seen anywhere else could be found here.

“It’s ice; hasn’t Sha Sha seen it before?” Ling Chen asked as he smiled.

“Ice… although I can’t remember when, I feel like I have seen it before and I know its name, but in my memories, the ice didn’t look so nice,” Shadissika said as she stared at the ice crystals. “Ling Chen, can you help me take a few? I really like them.”

“Haha, if you like them just take them all.” Ling Chen walked over to the 2 piles of ice crystals and took one at the top and then gave it to Shadissika. Shadissika gave a bright smile as she started to cheer and play with it. Ling Chen then put the rest of the ice crystals in his bag. Ice crystals were incredibly ordinary items here, and there was an abundance of them… however, although bags could store things, they could not keep things cool. After leaving the Godchild Peak, the ice crystals would quickly

disappear.

After opening his communication device and looking at the time, Ling Chen's heart thumped. Within the dark world, he had no idea that a whole day and 2 nights had gone by. Tian Tian must be worried sick.

Ling Chen looked at the young girl in his embrace as he felt quite complicated... ever since he had picked up Shadissika, she had refused to come down. She had been brought out by him from a strange world, and seemed to have lost all of her memories. What would she do if he logged off?

"Sha Sha, do you want to come home with me? I'll introduce you to a few big sisters." Ling Chen swayed the girl's body... a pure girl like this could only be given to Yun Meng Xin to be looked after. He still needed to look for the Lunar Scourge's other God Orbs, and he didn't know what sort of places he had to go or how much danger he had to face. He couldn't always keep her with him like this.

"Mm, okay, okay! I want to see what Ling Chen's home is like!" Shadissika happily laughed.

"Snow Cherry, let's go."

After being summoned, Snow Cherry appeared and quickly turned into her mount form. Ling Chen carried Shadissika onto Snow Cherry's back and introduced the beautiful Nine-tailed Snow Fox to her.

Suddenly, the roar of a wild beast sounded out. The roar sounded quite close and was absolutely deafening. It contained an immense pressure, causing Ling Chen's body to involuntarily shiver. At the same time, the ground underneath him started to tremble as the layer of ice above him started to shake, causing ice crystals and snow to fall.

Ling Chen could clearly feel an extremely dangerous aura lock onto his body. This aura felt incredibly hateful and berserk, and it came from beneath him.

"Ah... Ling Chen, what's happening? What's going on?" Shadissika pressed her soft body against Ling Chen in fear as she cried out.

"Don't worry, we'll be fine soon. Hold on tight."

Shadissika's hands clung onto Ling Chen, and with a slight thought, Snow Cherry dashed into the air like a streak of lightning, traversing 50 metres until she reached the layer of ice. To Ling Chen, anywhere related to water was advantageous. Snow Cherry's body entered into the ice layer and directly flew upwards, breaking through the surface in no time at all.

The surface of the ice layer was still the same, and although it had been half-covered by snow, the fissure within the ice was still present. Ling Chen did not stop at all and urged Snow Cherry quickly towards the edge of the summit. Only when they reached the summit did he stop and turn around... at that moment a

massive sound came from below them as the layer of ice exploded. Countless ice shards were blown high into the air, some reaching 100 metres high in the air, as a golden shadow leapt through and landed on the summit.

It had 4 short but powerfully built limbs, and a thick tail that was almost as long as its body. It had a tiger-like head with a protruding nose. Its 4 paws were incredibly large, and its claws firmly gripped into the ice. Its body was a golden colour, and it was covered by a cloud-like pattern. As it appeared, a pair of oval eyes locked onto where Ling Chen was.

That appearance... it was a leopard!

It was about 2 metres long and was larger than most fully-grown leopards. However, it was still much smaller than most of the extremely powerful monsters Ling Chen had encountered in the virtual world. However, the might and sense of danger emanating out from it caused Ling Chen's heart to tremble. The pressure this beast gave off was greater than even that of a Celestial grade beast, and thinking back, Ling Chen was shocked to realise that this sense of pressure was no less than the one he felt from the Mountain Giant!

In other words, this ordinary-looking leopard was most likely a Heaven's End grade Boss!

As Ling Chen thought about the situation, he felt quite confused. Before the leopard had jumped out, there had been no change to the ice layer, which meant that the leopard had always been beneath the ice layer. If it had always been below the ice layer, why

hadn't it reacted at all the first 2 times he had come here? The Ice Demon Beast claimed that she had been here for countless years, and she treated this place as her home. If she had discovered the leopard, she most likely would have eaten it. Why did it suddenly jump out this time... and the aura it was giving off was as if Ling Chen was its most hated foe, on the level of killing its father.

With Ling Chen's current strength, he is able to easily defeat Celestial grade Bosses near his level, but while he might be able to defeat low-level Heaven's End grade Bosses, he would only be able to run away from those near this level. He had only defeated that Mountain Giant with Tian Tian's help.

Facing this large leopard that seemed to have come from nowhere, Ling Chen only had a single option...

Run!!

Without hesitating at all, Snow Cherry turned and spread her wings, gliding along the cliff face as she flew downwards. Normally, if he met such a strong Boss, he would at least try fighting it. However, he absolutely could not do this right now because he had Shadissika with him! The Evil God's Mask could reflect fatal attacks for him, but Shadissika would instantly die. Moreover, once she died, she would be permanently dead.

Whoosh...

Snow Cherry descended extremely quickly, causing the wind to howl in their ears. With Snow Cherry's Movement Speed, normal

creatures were unable to catch up to her at all. Just as Ling Chen was able to relax a bit, the sound of a gale came from above.

WHOOSH!!

Ling Chen looked up and saw the leopard's grey-green eyes. On its back were 2 purple wings that looked mismatched on its body. The wings gave off a cold light... as if they were made from crystals.

Within the sound of this wild gale, the 2 grey-green eyes came closer and closer to Ling Chen, and in an instant, the 100 metres distance shrank to 50 metres and then to 10 metres.

What the hell? Leopards can sprout wings?

This is ridiculous!!!!

With Ling Chen mounted on her, Snow Cherry's Movement Speed was 345, a speed that can be described to be as fast as lightning. And yet, they were still unable to shake off this leopard and were being caught up to by it. Ling Chen frowned as he unhesitatingly activated [Broken Shadow].

WHOOSH!!!!!

With Broken Shadow activated, Snow Cherry's speed skyrocketed, shooting off like a bolt of lightning. A white shadow blurred as she disappeared off into the distance.

Under the extreme speed, the wind howled and screamed in his ears, making it difficult for Ling Chen to even sit properly on Snow Cherry's body. He was actually almost thrown off. He tightly hugged Shadissika, protecting her small head with his arms as he breathed out. With Broken Shadow activated, Snow Cherry's Movement Speed was 3450. Not even a god would be able to catch up to her. Broken Shadow was an escaping skill that had never failed Ling Chen before, and no matter how powerful an enemy was, he would be able to escape from them in an instant. They wouldn't be able to even catch the dust he left behind.

"Sha Sha, don't worry. It's fine now."

Ling Chen patted Shadissika's arm as he comforted her and then casually looked behind him... just this casual glance almost caused him to fall down from Snow Cherry's back.

He could still see the leopard, and it was only about 30 metres behind him! Despite activating Broken Shadow, this leopard was still giving chase. On its back, the crystal-like wings were giving off a bright crystalline light.

Ling Chen desperately wanted to rub his eyes.

What the hell was going on!!

He had activated Broken Shadow! Broken Shadow!! And yet this leopard was still keeping up with them!

What the hell was going on?

Could it be that this leopard had a rocket in its ass?

After feeling extremely shocked, he quickly calmed down. He noticed the leopard's shining wings and realised that though it was fast, it shouldn't normally be this fast. Ling Chen guessed that this explosive increase in speed was probably some sort of skill it used.

If that is the case then it probably can't use that skill for very long, so it is still possible to outrun it!

Ling Chen continued to rapidly descend. He was no longer restricted by the coldness, and with gravity on their side, they were able to travel extremely quickly. As they descended, the temperature gradually began to rise.

After Broken Shadow's effects ended, Ling Chen immediately cast a second Broken Shadow. He turned around to find that the leopard was still right behind him, and didn't seem to be any further away. With 3450 Movement Speed, they traversed around 200-300 metres every second, meaning that the gap between them was almost nothing.

Chapter 580 – Chilling Crystal Chalcedony

When climbing the mountain, Ling Chen had been greatly restricted by the temperature. Each step he had taken was with great difficulty. Now, not only was he not affected by the temperature at all, but he was also rapidly flying downwards with Snow Cherry. The speed at which he had ascended could not be compared at all to the speed at which he was descending. Back then, it had taken Ling Chen more than a month to climb to the summit of the Godchild Peak, while right now, by the time the third Broken Shadow had almost ended, Snow Cherry was almost halfway down the mountain. There were barely even any traces of snow around.

At that moment, Ling Chen heard Qi Yue's voice in his head.

"Little master, where did you go during this time? Why couldn't my consciousness come out from within the Lunar Scourge? I couldn't even detect your presence."

There was a sense of deep shock contained within Qi Yue's face. While within that dark world, Ling Chen couldn't contact Qi Yue, and Qi Yue's mind couldn't even leave the Lunar Scourge, let alone contact Ling Chen. She realised that Ling Chen had most likely entered into a special region that had a powerful isolating force. However, she couldn't think of any sort of place in the Forgotten Continent that was like that.

"I'll tell you later! Can't you see there's a leopard behind us?" Ling Chen inwardly roared.

“Oh?” Qi Yue seemed to only just notice the leopard that was relentlessly chasing after them. She paused before crying out in shock, “It’s a Purple Winged Cloud Leopard!”

“Purple Winged Cloud Leopard? You’ve seen them before?”

“No, but I’ve heard of them,” Qi Yue replied. “They’re not very famous in the Forgotten Continent. Who would have thought that after 10,000 years, the Purple Winged Cloud Leopard Clan still existed? I thought that they had long since become extinct. I’m sure that there are still records of it though. ‘Star-chasing tiger and wind-pursuing leopard’ were names that everyone knew back then.”

“‘Star-chasing tiger and wind-pursuing leopard’?”

“The ‘star-chasing tiger’ refers to the Moon God Clan’s holy guardian beast. It’s one of the Forgotten continent’s 5 Saint Destroyer Beasts, the Eight-Winged Heaven Tiger. It’s said that its speed is extremely fast and can chase after the stars and moon. There’s no creature in the heavens that can rival its speed. As for the ‘wind-pursuing leopard’, that refers to the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard behind you. When travelling at its fastest speed, it can rival that of the wind.

“However, this Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard cannot fully exhibit the maximum speed of a Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard because it’s not yet mature and is only Heaven’s End grade. Mature Purple-Winged Cloud Leopards are Mysterious God grade, and even if you activate Broken Shadow, they’ll still be able to easily catch up to you. Despite this, it’s already quite amazing you’ve

been able to stay ahead of this Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard for so long.”

This monstrously fast Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was not yet mature?!

Ling Chen couldn’t help but feel dumbfounded. It seemed that there were all sorts of miraculous things in this world. He had thought that his speed after activating Broken Shadow was one of the fastest in the world, exceeding anything comprehensible by humans. He thought that apart from Xiao Feng Chen, nothing could catch up to him. It seems that he had simply been a frog in the well.

“Little master, where did you discover this Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard? Why is it chasing you? Although Purple-Winged Cloud Leopards aren’t very well-natured, they’re not so easily enraged, nor would they attack humans for no reason.”

“Why is it chasing me? I want to know as well!” Ling Chen said as he gnashed his teeth. “It was hiding under the ice layer at the summit, and didn’t react at all the first 2 times I came here. I don’t know what went wrong with its brain for it to suddenly run out and relentlessly chase after me.”

“From what I know, because of their incredible speed and power, they’re often tasked with guarding or protecting things. Unless one’s overall strength far surpasses theirs, with the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard’s speed, no one is able to steal the things they protect. Little master, did you steal something that it was protecting?” Qi Yue asked.

“How is that possible? Apart from snow and ice, there’s nothing at the summit of the Godchild Peak! Even if there’s some amazing treasure, it’s definitely buried under the thick ice. Xiao Hui can’t come out at the summit, so even if I wanted to find it, I wouldn’t! How would I be able to steal it? I’ve been to the summit 3 times and all I took were some… ice crystals…”

Ling Chen suddenly paused as cold sweat appeared on his forehead and he weakly spoke, “It can’t be those ice crystals right… they’re all over the Godchild Peak…”

“What ice crystals? Show me!”

Ling Chen immediately took out one of the ice crystals that he had taken from in front of the mysterious door and looked at its description:

Chilling Crystal Chalcedony: Mystic ice that has existed for over 100,000 years that has absorbed the aura of True Gods from the ancient times. Cannot be melted even by fire, and is incredibly tough and durable. Contains boundless chilling qi, but does not feel cold at all. Has great affinity with living creatures. Consuming one will immediately increase one’s level by 3 levels, and the chilling qi will gently change the consumer’s body, giving them a permanent 40% Resistance to Water. If combined with armour, it will become virtually indestructible, and if combined with equipment, it will become incredibly tough and durable. It will also gain a powerful freezing effect.

“This… this is the legendary item that was supposedly left behind by gods, the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony!” Qi Yue cried out.

Ling Chen’s mouth fell wide open… he had taken these ice crystals only because Shadissika had said they were pretty, so he took them for her to play with. Who would have thought that these ice crystals had such powerful effects! Eating one would instantly raise one’s level by 3 levels and could give 40% Resistance to Water! This was simply incomprehensible!

What’s more… after counting, Ling Chen found that he had 80 or so of these Chilling Crystal Chalcedony!

I’m rich… Ling Chen inwardly screamed.

This meant that the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was the guardian of these Chilling Crystal Chalcedony. After all, it had only appeared after he had taken the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony.

Suddenly, Ling Chen did not feel wronged anymore. Of course it would try to chase him down after he took 80 or so of these overpowered items from the Purple Winged Cloud Leopard!

Of course, now that he knew, that didn’t mean he would hand these Chilling Crystal Chalcedony to the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard. Since he had obtained these overpowered things, they were now his. Return them? No way! Moreover, these Chilling Crystal Chalcedony had been left on the ground, and it wasn’t as if they had anyone’s name written of them. They were evidently ownerless, so he was completely justified in taking them away. It

was the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard, which had suddenly rushed out, who was the bandit.

After telling himself this, Ling Chen felt much better inside.

By the time the last Broken Shadow had nearly expired, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was still right behind them. When Broken Shadow expired, it would catch up to them in an instant. Ling Chen looked down at the girl in his embrace as he gritted his teeth. He let go as he vigorously jumped off from Snow Cherry's back, the Great Ravager and the Twilight Spear appearing in his hands as he shot towards the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard.

"Snow Cherry, take her as far away as possible!"

"Ling Chen!!"

Shadissika cried out in fear and shock as Ling Chen's body smashed into the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard... they were travelling too quickly, and because of how suddenly Ling Chen had turned and jumped, even the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard could not react in time... however, it did not need to react, because its goal was to kill Ling Chen. Ling Chen giving up escaping and suddenly attacking was what it wished for.

Bang!!!

-26,500, -26,502, -90,800!

The sound of them crashing together at such a speed sounded like a massive explosion. In the next instant, the man and beast shot apart from each other as 3 bright red damage figures rose up in the air... two were dealt by Ling Chen himself and the third was damage reflected by the Evil God's Mask. All 3 damage figures had been dealt to the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard.

This incredibly powerful impact almost knocked Ling Chen unconscious, and he didn't even know when he had fallen to the ground. By the time he crawled up, he realised that he was lying in a big crater and half of his HP was missing... evidently, his loss in HP wasn't dealt by the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard, but from falling to the ground. After a while, his mind finally became clear again. After some struggling, he was able to stand up. He thought to himself that this was how it must feel after being hit by a train. Some distance away from him, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was in a much worse shape than him-its entire body had smashed into a mountain... the Evil God's Mask reflected not only damage, but the impact and force.

Snow Cherry obeyed Ling Chen's command, and had flown far, far away. After trying to detect her, Ling Chen found that she was 1,000 metres away in the air and was only a white dot in the distance. This allowed Ling Chen to relax... even now, he could still hear Shadissika's shocked and fearful voice.

Since I can't run away, I'll have to kill you! Ling Chen's eyes flashed murderously as he rushed towards where the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was. Just as he took a few steps, the ground under his feet suddenly trembled as the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard launched itself towards Ling Chen like a bolt of lightning with a roar.

The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's wings were no longer shining, but it was still incredibly fast. However, it was much slower than it was when it was chasing them-evidently, it couldn't travel that fast whenever it wanted to. Ling Chen's eyes narrowed into slits as he tracked the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's trajectory... the, Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's body wasn't very big, which meant that its attack range was not very big either. Ling Chen was confident that he wouldn't be completely defenceless against this sort of speed and attack.

Whoosh!

The gale-like Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard swept towards Ling Chen... but found that its target was only an afterimage. Although Ling Chen was not as fast as the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard, his monstrous senses and his incredible explosive strength allowed him to perfectly evade the attack. Because he had evaded so well and with such perfect timing, his afterimage looked incredibly clear. His body had ducked underneath the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's attack as he activated Soul Sacrifice and sent 2 heavy attacks towards the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's hind legs: A Thousand Kilogram Rend with his left hand and a Ling Tian Slash with his right!

Boom! Bang!

-132,500, -220,850.

Even the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard couldn't receive Ling

Chen’s furious attacks, which were buffed by Soul Sacrifice, so easily. As the 2 heavy explosions sounded out, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard, which was already travelling incredibly quickly, was blasted away by the 2 attacks like a rocket. It crashed to the ground after flying about 100 metres and could no longer maintain its balance as it started to roll down the mountain.

Chapter 581 – Meeting Xi Ling Again

However, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was not to be underestimated. Just as Ling Chen let out a breath and started to smile, a purple light flashed as a wild gale rushed towards him. As Ling Chen's pupils expanded, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard, which had been rolling 30 metres away, was suddenly right in front of him. By the time he had realised what he had seen, the massive front paws were less than half a body length away.

Bang!!

Ling Chen was hit heavily as he was sent flying like a bale of hay. He felt utterly shocked inwardly… from when the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard had hit the ground to when it had rushed in front of him, its speed was so fast that he couldn't react in time… it had essentially teleported! The attack it just unleashed was many times faster than its first attack and was slightly faster than even when it had been chasing behind him.

Back then, its wings had been glowing, meaning that it had used a skill to increase its speed. Evidently, Ling Chen's attacks, which had made it suffer greatly, had completely enraged it.

Just as Ling Chen's body fell to the ground, an icy and dangerous aura swept towards him from behind. The Evil God's Mask had once again saved him, but the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard, who had been sent flying by the Evil God's Mask, once again sprang towards him. It was as fast as lightning, and with its berserk speed, it covered tens of metres in 0.1 seconds. Ling Chen didn't have time to think, much less turn around, before he released a silver

light from the Lunar Scourge.

"Moon Shadow!"

"Ding... the Libra Orb's effects have been activated, [Moon Shadow]'s cooldown time has been reset."

The dangerous aura disappeared, and the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's body froze in mid-air. Ling Chen turned around and found that its sharp paws were less than 3 centimetres away from his forehead. Upon seeing this, Ling Chen's body erupted into cold sweat. The Evil God's Mask could only protect him once every 10 seconds; if he was hit by that attack, he would have died without a doubt.

"Now you know how powerful it is!" Qi Yue's voice contained a hint of schadenfreude; she knew that Ling Chen wouldn't stand a chance against it in a straight-up fight. Within the Lunar Scourge, she had been continuously observing Ling Chen and had seen him face many powerful bosses. They had all completely suppressed Ling Chen in terms of stats and skills as well as levels and grades, but this was the first one that had an overwhelming speed and agility advantage over him. The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was the first creature to be able to continuously hit Ling Chen with its attacks.

Within the Forgotten Continent, its speed was inferior to only that of the Eight-Winged Heaven Tiger's-it indeed lived up to its reputation!

Ling Chen did not waste any words as he rushed up towards the frozen Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard and furiously attacked it. After 4 rounds of attacks, Moon Shadow's effects expired. The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard gave a roar of pain as it heavily crashed onto the ground. However, it bounced back like a spring and accurately jumped several meters towards Ling Chen's position.

Bang!

The impact from a Heaven's End grade beast caused the ground to crack, as stones and sand flew into the air. Ling Chen appeared 15 metres high in the air-the Twilight Spear's Moment of Elegance allowed him to successfully dodge its lightning-like attack. These 2 simple attacks from the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard demonstrated to Ling Chen just how terrifying it was.

The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard had not used any skills the entire time, and every time it attacked, it was simply leaping at Ling Chen. However, with this sort of speed, agility, and explosiveness, it didn't need any attack skills. The number of beings under the heavens that could dodge its attacks could be counted on a single hand. For an immature Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard to be so monstrous already, it was inconceivable to imagine what a matured Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard would be like.

Ling Chen quickly fell from the air, and before the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard could attack again, he activated his second Moon Shadow to once again freezing the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard. However, this time he wasn't lucky enough for the Libra

Orb's effects to activate. Instead of attacking it like last time, Ling Chen took two steps forwards and unleashed a Moon Flare.

The incredibly bright and piercing light stabbed into the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's eyes, causing a scream of pain to erupt from its throat. At the same time, its aura that was locking onto Ling Chen wavered because of the loss of its sight and the immense pain. At that moment, Ling Chen activated Vanishing Shadow and disappeared.

Once Moon Flare's effects ended, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard regained its sight and let out a howl of fury. Its piercing eyes looked around, but they couldn't find Ling Chen. It could not detect Ling Chen at all within the range of its senses. The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's aura became berserk as it continuously roared in anger.

Ling Chen was squatting on the ground 20 metres to its right, not daring to move.

"Hmm? Little master isn't going to fight with it anymore?" Qi Yue asked mockingly.

"Fight my ass! With such an obscene speed, how am I supposed to fight it?" Ling Chen angrily retorted. What was the fastest speed on earth? Teleportation. However, if he faced an enemy with teleportation, he would not have to fear at all because teleportation was a type of skill. With Moon Grief, his enemies would not be able to use any of their skills. Moreover, if the enemy wasn't fast enough, it would be hard to say who would hit who first even if they teleported behind him. However, the Purple-

Winged Cloud Leopard surpassed him in speed, senses, reaction time, and explosiveness. These sorts of things couldn't be sealed off with Moon Grief.

Even if this was a powerful player, Ling Chen wouldn't have minded. With his Attack Power, he would be able to insta-kill any player. However, this was a Boss! Even if Ling Chen activated Soul Sacrifice, he might not be able to kill it even if he hit it 100 times, while it would take a single hit from the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard to insta-kill him. The Evil God's Mask couldn't protect him every time, nor could he use Moon Shadow whenever he liked. If he continued to face the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard head-on like this, the chances of him dying were above 90%!

After perfectly hiding his presence with Vanishing Shadow, even the Cherry Blossom God Representative was unable to detect him, much less the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard. After rampaging around, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard still could not find Ling Chen. It took a few steps forwards as it suddenly raised its head, its aura, which had been calming down, once again became berserk. Its grey-green eyes stared into the sky.

The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's actions caused Ling Chen to feel slightly confused, forcing him to also look over. He immediately saw the white shadow 1,000 metres away, causing his face to fall. The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's ear-splitting roar sounded out as it spread its purple wings, its body blurring as it shot towards the white dot.

Evidently, that was Snow Cherry and Shadissika.

Ling Chen's heart trembled, and he immediately deactivated Vanishing Shadow and yelled, "I'm right here!!"

This sudden yell successfully attracted the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's attention onto him. Its body suddenly froze as it looked back before it let out a roar and rushed towards Ling Chen... it was Ling Chen who had taken the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony, so its target was naturally Ling Chen.

Ling Chen frowned as he concentrated and watched the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard come closer and closer... Looks like I have to kill it! If I really have to do it... I still have the Shura's Death Domain and Lightning Attraction!

With the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's speed and the fact that they were only about 100 metres or so apart, it would be upon him in a blink of an eye. At that moment in the distance, a piercing bird's cry sounded out. This cry caused Ling Chen's body to tremble as a look of disbelief appeared on his face. The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's body also trembled as it paused and looked up. This bird's cry contained an overwhelming sense of might, and the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's body and soul trembled uncontrollably at the sound.

As for Ling Chen, this cry sounded incredibly intimate, and it caused him to feel delight from the bottom of his heart. He was incredibly familiar with this cry, because no one would be able to forget this beautiful cry after hearing it. He quickly looked up, searching for where this cry had come from. When he looked towards the south-east, he saw a beautiful red shadow. He immediately yelled out in joy, "Xi Ling!! Xi Ling!! Is it you?"

Crimson red feathers covered her body, and the body was also decorated by some golden feathers. The first time Ling Chen had seen Xi Ling, he had been deeply amazed by her beauty. The crimson figure in the sky was much larger than he remembered, but apart from Xi Ling, who could possess those beautiful feathers?

A bird cry filled with joy gave Ling Chen his answer. Xi Ling started to fly faster, and she reached the air above Ling Chen in an instant. Her beautiful body spiralled above him in the air as her cries of joy sounded up to the heavens. Ling Chen looked up at Xi Ling and couldn't help but laugh. The weight within his heart finally disappeared... the Vermillion Bird had fulfilled its promise, and Xi Ling really had come back.

"How miraculous, she actually revived and came back. The Vermillion Bird burned its soul flame for her... could it be because of its reverence towards the Golden Crow?" Qi Yue said in astonishment before muttering, "Her grade also rose from Heaven's End to Mysterious God... with enough time, it's possible that she'll become a Saint Destroyer grade beast again."

Some distance away, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard, which had been floating in the air, fell to the ground. The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard, which had seemed so violent and domineering before, now lay with all 4 limbs on the ground shivering. Its grey-green eyes lost their berserk look, and were instead filled with respect and fear. When its constricted eyes looked over to Ling Chen, it seemed to remember its duty. The look of fury reappeared as it sprang towards Ling Chen... however, under the suppression from Xi Ling's pressure, it was no longer as agile, becoming 3 to 4 times slower than before.

Chapter 582 – Xiao Hui Evolves

This sort of speed posed no threat to Ling Chen. Just as he was about to react, a furious cry came from Xi Ling from above as a crimson red line of flames shot down from the sky, accurately smashing into the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's body.

-3,028,000!

The Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's body was flipped over by the attack as its entire body started to burn up. It howled pitifully as it rolled around in pain, '120,000' damage figures continuously rising up from its body. Upon seeing this, Ling Chen's jaws dropped.

... If he saw correctly, that [Red Laser] just dealt more than 3 million damage!

"No less than expected from the Golden Crow's flames. It is able to deal Saint Destroyer grade damage while still at the Mysterious God grade... the reputation of the strongest attacker in the Forgotten Continent is well-deserved!" Qi Yue gasped in shock and admiration.

Just this simple attack caused the Heaven's End Grade Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard to lose more than 1/3 of its HP! Moreover, the red flames did not disappear, continuing to consume the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard's HP. After being attacked by a holy beast like Xi Ling and losing 1/3 of its HP, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was scared out if its wits. It howled as it ran up the mountain while still covered with flames, hoping that the freezing

temperature at the summit would extinguish the flames that caused it so much pain. To Xi Ling, attacking Ling Chen was absolutely unforgivable. She continuously rained down flames towards the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The large region became a sea of flames, but in the end, the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was not to be underestimated. Even if it was in a pitiful state, it was still incredibly fast, dodging all of Xi Ling's attacks. Finally, Xi Ling gave another furious cry as she spread her wings, a ring of red fire shooting towards where the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was escaping. It grew larger and larger as it flew through the air.

Whoosh~~

In the distance where the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard was running, a sea of flames that reached tens of metres high instantly erupted. The flames spanned a distance of over a thousand metres. The flames devoured everything it touched, including the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard. Cries of fear and pain sounded out from within the flames... until everything became silent again.

"Ding... the LV60 Heaven's End Grade Boss 'Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard' has died. Because you have dealt damage to it, you have received proportionate rewards. Fame+5350, SP+5350."

"Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV50, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1."

“Ding… you have levelled up to LV50 and have therefore fulfilled the conditions to enter the Forgotten Continent’s royal city, the ‘Forgotten Continent’. The beginning phase of your journey in the Mystic Moon has concluded, and your true journey in Mystic Moon has begun. You can now head to the Forgotten City and find your profession trainer to complete your second profession upgrade. If you have a hidden profession, you need to find certain items or fulfill certain criteria to upgrade your profession. After rising to a certain level or fulfilling a hidden condition, your profession will automatically be upgraded.”

“Ding… because you have reached LV50, have Physical Attack Power greater than 2,000, and all of your profession’s skills’ levels are more than half of the maximum level, [Ling Tian Battle Soul] will automatically be upgraded to [Ling Tian War God]. HP+500, MP+200, Physical Attack Damage+150, 4 Primary Attributes+20, SP+300, [War God Technique]’s maximum level has been increased to LV20, [Ling Tian Slash] has been upgraded to [Heaven Destroying Slash], [Ling Tian Burst] has been upgraded to [Boundless Desolation], [Four Corners Star Formation] has been upgraded to [Eight Direction Annihilation], [Battle Soul Possession] has been upgraded to [War God’s Fury], and the War God’s 2 ultimate skills have been unlocked: [Extinguishing The Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] and [Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor].”

“Ding… under the effects from Holy Spirit Beast Xiao Hui’s ‘Holy Spirit’s Gift’, the skills [Heaven Destroying Slash], [Boundless Desolation], [Eight Direction Annihilation], [War God’s Fury], [Extinguishing The Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest], and [Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor] have all been raised to LV4.”

“Ding… because you have reached LV50, have Comprehension greater than 15, and have unlocked more than 5 Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses, you have received the right to succeed as the Feng Chen Sect’s Sect Leader. [Feng Chen Curse Zanni] has been automatically upgraded to [Feng Chen Sect Leader], Constitution+50, Agility+100, Spirit+100, Movement Speed+15. The skill [Feng Chen Technique] has been increased to max level. [Broken Shadow] and [Vanishing Shadow] have been raised to LV5 with their maximum levels raised to LV10. You have also unlocked a new shadow technique: [Burning Shadow].”

“Ding… you have unlocked the new Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses: [Deity Curse], [Irreconcilable Hatred Curse], [Love Magnet Curse] and [We’re All Sheep Curse]. The success rates of all Feng Chen Curses have all greatly increased.”

Ling Chen received a portion of the EXP from the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard’s death, leveling him up from LV 49 to LV50. LV50 was the point when all players could do their second profession upgrade. Because both of his professions were quite special, he had wondered how he would upgrade his professions. He could find Xiao Feng Chen for his Feng Chen Curse Zanni profession, but who did he have to meet for his War God profession?

Who would have thought that these 2 professions would have both automatically upgraded as soon as he hit LV50!

Of course, level wasn’t the only condition for upgrading the professions. Ling Chen had unknowingly fulfilled all of the other conditions, allowing his 2 professions to simultaneously be

upgraded instantly.

Every profession upgrade was a massive power spike for players, and Ling Chen was no exception. After both of his professions were upgraded, Ling Chen received massive stat increases, and more importantly, he unlocked more powerful skills.

The mountain in front of him continued to burn, but Ling Chen's focus was no longer on that. Xi Ling had returned and both of his professions had been upgraded-he felt incredibly delighted. Just as he was about to hurriedly look at his new skills, the system announcements once again sounded out.

"Ding... your pet 'Xiao Hui' has levelled up to LV50..."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui is requesting to leave the Pet Dimension."

A strong wave of energy came from the Pet Dimension, and Ling Chen immediately let out Xiao Hui. The instant Xiao Hui appeared, an intense purple light pierced into Ling Chen's eyes, causing him to subconsciously shield his eyes with his hand. When his eyes had adjusted to the light, he found that the light was coming from Xiao Hui's sharp horn. The light slowly covered Xiao Hui's entire body... this purple light was the same as the one from the White Tiger's lightning.

Xiao Hui's entire body was bathed in the lightning, and he didn't move at all as the sounds of lightning became louder and louder.

What… What's going on? Ling Chen took a step back as he looked at the strange scene in front of him.

"Ding… your pet Leng'Er has levelled up to LV50, MP+100, Magic Attack Power+20, Defence+10, Favorability+2, and has unlocked [Soul Lock]. Special ability [Summon Undead] has levelled up to LV2."

"Ding… your mount-type pet 'Snow Cherry' has levelled up to LV50, HP+1000, MP+300, Physical Attack Power+100, Magic Attack Power+60, Defense+50, and has entered into her five-tail form. [Murdering Soul] can now be used, and [Godly Fox Sky-Toppling Dance]'s effects have changed."

Leng'Er and Snow Cherry also levelled up to LV50, resulting in some changes in their stats and skills. Ling Chen didn't have time to have a look at their changes-his eyes were fixed on Xiao Hui who was covered with purple lightning… as he watched, he thought of something: This light looks more and more like the White Tiger's lightning. Could it be that when the White Tiger had passed those skills to Xiao Hui, it also gave some of its power to Xiao Hui that could only be released after LV50?

According to the White Tiger, the Azure Dragon, and the Vermillion Bird, White Tiger and Black Turtle's power were all birthed from the Holy Qilin. That meant that their power could once again go back to the Holy Qilin. Could it be that after receiving some power from the White Tiger, Xiao Hui was… evolving?!

Buzz!!!

The light suddenly expanded, but Ling Chen immediately realised that it wasn't the light from the lightning that was expanding... but that within the light, Xiao Hui's body was slowly growing... it was a slow process, but it was observable by the human eye. As his body became bigger, his 4 limbs became longer and thicker, and the horn on his head also grew longer... Ling Chen's heart started to beat faster-perhaps his guess really was right.

Xi Ling's attention was also attracted by Xiao Hui's change. She hovered in the air as she silently watched him.

Crack!!

A loud crack of lightning sounded out as the lightning around Xiao Hui's body suddenly disappeared, revealing Xiao Hui's body. He was still grey, had a sharp horn, and a short tail. Overall, he didn't look too different. However, his body shape had greatly changed. Before, he was only as tall as a basketball, but now he was as tall as Ling Chen's knee.

After the changes took place, Xiao Hui looked quite happy, wagging his tail as he walked over to Ling Chen. His eyes shone as he affectionately rubbed against Ling Chen. Apart from the increase in body size, not much had changed.

"Ding... your pet Holy Spirit Beast 'Xiao Hui' has become Heaven's End grade, and all of his stats have greatly increased. Passive Skills [Eye of the Holy Spirit] has levelled up to LV4, [Holy

Spirit's Aura] has levelled up to LV11, and a new Passive Skills have been locked: [Holy Spirit's Sacrifice], [Holy Spirit's Pearl], as well as the special skill [Purple Qilin Light]."

Chapter 583 – Ling Tian War God, Feng Chen Sect Sect Leader

"As 1 of the 5 Saint Destroyer Beasts, the Holy Qilin's bloodline contains immense power. However, its body and strength grow incredibly slowly, taking thousands if not tens of thousands to completely mature. For Xiao Hui to rise an entire grade after only being born a few months ago is simply incomprehensible." Qi Yue, who had been watching this entire process, said. "Evidently, the White Tiger gave a portion of its spirit power to Xiao Hui. Not only did it give him the 'Thunder Bulwark' and 'Lightning Attraction' skills, but it also helped him grow faster."

"That sounds right." Ling Chen nodded as he patted Xiao hui's head and opened his stats page. He quickly read through his stats and found that after the upgrades, both of his professions had become much more powerful. The Ling Tian Battle Soul's skills were originally quite powerful, but after being upgraded, the skills were even more destructive. After looking through the new skills, Ling Chen's eyes lit up. When he saw the 2 new ultimate skills, he almost cried out in excitement.

Ling Tian Battle Soul was only the War God profession's 'infant stage', and the Ling Tian War God profession was the true, complete profession. All of the skills were so powerful that one could not help but stare. There was not a single useless or sub-par skill. The War God's profession's skills were all about annihilation and destruction, but each skill's effects were different. Although they each had a different effect, Ling Chen felt that all of them were absolutely necessary.

With Xiao Hui's LV3 [Holy Spirit's Gift], apart from the [War God Technique], which maximum level had become LV20, all of the other skills were automatically raised to LV4. Looking at these powerful skills, Ling Chen wished he could immediately raise all of them to their maximum level. Once this desire appeared it became stronger and stronger, but Ling Chen forced the idea back... although they were very close to max level, when Xiao Hui's [Holy Spirit's Gift] reached LV5 they would automatically become max level, saving him large amounts of SP. However, the temptation from these monstrous skills were too strong and he couldn't wait anymore.

After killing the White Tiger and his first Mysterious God grade Boss, he had received a whopping 300,000 SP. After the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard had died, he had received another few thousand. With so much SP, he could spend them without worrying. Ling Chen opened his skills page and started to upgrade all of his War God's profession's skills to the max level.

However, he soon saw just how 'monstrous' the War God's profession truly was. With 300,000 SP, he could upgrade all of the second profession upgrade skills of a normal profession to max level... and still have extra. As for the War God's profession, all of these skills were already at least LV4. By the time the 2 ultimate skills, which required the most SP, were a single level away from max level, when the [War God Technique] is only LV10 out of 20, Ling Chen had already spent 200,000 SP. After happily going around and upgrading skills only to realize that he only had 100,000 SP left, his face twitched. He didn't dare to continue spending SP..

This profession was indeed quite powerful, but it was like a

voracious beast that had an insatiable appetite.

[Ling Tian War God]: A powerful profession gained after inheriting the War God's soul's power, it was upgraded from the 'Ling Tian Battle Soul' named by player 'Ling Tian'. This profession was created for war, and has extreme offense and destructive capabilities. All of the profession's skills focus on powerful attacks. The skills are all incredibly destructive, but there are no support, defence, or crowd control skills. This profession is the War God profession's final form, and cannot be upgraded a third time.

Profession Passive Abilities: Negates all debuffs from Physical Attack Damage. Basic Attribute Effects: 1 Strength = 2 Physical Attack Power; 1 Constitution = 10 HP, 1 Defence; 1 Agility = 1 HIT, 1 Evasion; 1 Spirit = 2 Magic Attack Power, 10 MP. Every level up gives 20 HP, 20 MP and 5 AP, which are automatically put into Strength.

Profession Skills:

[War God Technique]: Current Level: LV10. Highest Level: LV20. SP required to upgrade to LV11: 20,000. Practicing powerful battle techniques originating from War God's soul force can greatly increase one's Attack Power permanently. Effect: Strength increases by 10*X points and Physical Attack Damage increases by 25*X (X=Current level).

[Heaven Destroying Slash]: Current Level: LV10, max level. A single-target skill upgraded from [Ling Tian Slash], it possesses even more destructive power, containing enough might to destroy

the heavens and split the earth. It uses one's weapon to attack a single target with the ferocious and mighty War God's power, dealing massive damage to the target. Effects: Single target attack, Damage is equal to 500% of normal attacks, Critical Chance+30%, 10% chance to stun the target for 3-5 seconds, 10% chance for the target's Defence to fall by 60% for 5 seconds, 90% of knocking the target back. MP Consumption: 40. No cooldown time.

[Boundless Desolation]: Current Level: LV10, max level. An AOE skill upgraded from [Ling Tian Burst], it has a larger range and more destructive power. After guiding the War God's power into one's weapon, it is released as one sweeps their weapon, releasing a large-scale explosion. It attacks the area 10 metres in front of the user, and it has a 100% chance of knocking back the targets. Damage is equal to 300% of normal attacks. MP Consumption: 50. No cooldown time.

[Eight Direction Annihilation]: Current Level: LV10, max level. An ultimate skill upgraded from [Four Corners Star Formation]. Unleashes the War God's power unreservedly when cast, creating a terrifying storm of destruction within 30 metres of the user. Damage is equal to 1200% of normal attacks, Critical Chance+30%, 100% chance to knock back targets. MP Consumption: 250. Cooldown time: 60 seconds.

[War God's Fury]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Gives incredibly power in times of desperation by igniting the War God's soul power. After activation, Physical Attack Power+100%, Attack Speed+100%, Defence reduced to 0, Evasion reduced to 0, and Maximum HP is decreased by 50%. All attacks will have [Absolute HIT], [Absolute Critical], [Absolute Pierce], and lasts for 20 seconds. Can be activated when one's HP is less than 40%.

Cooldown time: 90 seconds.

[Extinguishing The Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest]: Current Level: LV5, max level. It is an ultimate killing move of the War God profession that belongs exclusively to ‘Ling Tian’. The War God’s fury ignites all of the War God’s power, releasing power that is enough to shatter the heavens and the earth, shake the wind and clouds, overturn oceans, and destroy the sun and moon. Effects: Close-ranged single target attack that deals 5000% damage to the target and stuns them for 3 seconds. The energy waves affect all targets within 60 metres, dealing 1000% damage to them. MP Consumption: 1200. Cooldown time: 3 days.

[Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor]: Current Level: LV5, max level. An ultimate move of the War God profession that belongs exclusively to ‘Ling Tian’. It can only be activated with incredibly powerful mental energy and willpower. It integrates the War God’s power into one’s body and mind, blocking off all external damage and ignoring all attack delays. Lasts for 10 seconds. MP Consumption: 4000. Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

[Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] and [Disdaining the Heavens and Scorning The Earth, I Am Emperor] are both obscenely powerful skills. Among all of the attack skills Ling Chen had seen before, only the Shura’s [Shura’s Death Domain] could surpass the [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] in terms of destructive power. Moreover, not only did [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] have extremely powerful single-target attack damage, but it also could also deal damage within a massive area. No matter if it was a one on one battle or group battle, it could

achieve terrifying results.

As for [Disdaining the Heavens and Scorning The Earth, I Am Emperor], it gave him 10 seconds of invincibility and no attack delays. This meant that within those 10 seconds, he could instantly move after launching attacks and wouldn't have to spend time 'finishing' his moves. When he was attacked, no matter how strong the attack was – even if a mountain was thrown at him – it would not affect him at all... in that state, he would indeed be like an emperor who could look down on the entire world. Nothing in the world would be able to injure or move him.

Compared to the War God's profession, the Feng Chen Sect's profession's skills didn't change as much. He now had a new shadow skill, [Burning Shadow], while [Broken Shadow] and [Vanishing Shadow] were enhanced. The biggest change was that he now had more powerful Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses.

At LV5, Broken Shadow and Vanishing Shadow both require over 100,000 SP to level up. Although the remaining 100,000 SP seems like a lot, it isn't even enough to level up these 2 skills to LV10. Ling Chen gritted his teeth as he levelled Broken Shadow and Vanishing Shadow up to LV8. He spent the rest of the SP on Burning Shadow.

[Feng Chen Sect Leader]: You have inherited the previous Feng Chen Sect Leader Xiao Feng Chen's special profession that originated from the evil ancient sect 'Feng Chen Sect'. After becoming the current Sect Leader, you can freely enter and exit the Feng Chen Sect's secret grounds, [Heart End Cliff]. This profession does not have any attack power, but its escaping skills are

unrivalled under the heavens. The profession's 'Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses' can affect the target's mind without them noticing, a truly incredibly terrifying skill. The Forgotten Continent's experts fear nothing except the Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses.

Profession skills:

[Feng Chen Technique]: Current level: LV10, max level. A technique unique to the Feng Chen Sect. After cultivating, the user's body will become incredibly light and nimble, as if they are riding on a gentle breeze. It is said that when cultivated to the peak, the user can use the winds to walk in the sky and even falling from a cliff will not hurt them at all. Effects: Movement Speed+100, Evasion+100%, can freely control one's falling speed in the air, and can walk in the air.

[Broken Shadow]: Current level: LV8, Highest level: LV10. SP required to upgrade to LV9: 18,000. One of the Feng Chen Sect's ultimate escaping techniques. After activating, the user's body becomes like an illusory shadow, almost impossible to stop or capture. Effects: Movement Speed+900%, Evasion+900%, effects last for 30 seconds. Can be used five times per day.

[Vanishing Shadow]: Current Level: LV8, Highest Level: LV10. SP to Upgrade to LV9: 18,000. One of the most advanced concealment techniques of the Feng Chen Sect. After casting, the user's body disappears without even a trace, and even the Ghost God isn't able to discover him or her. Effects: Conceals the user's body. While concealed, the user cannot attack or counterattack. The concealment is cancelled upon receiving damage. Lasts for 50

seconds, Cooldown Time: 100 seconds.

[Burning Shadow]: Current Level: LV5, max level. One of the most advanced concealment techniques of the Feng Chen Sect. After casting, the user's body becomes half real and half illusory, seeming both real and fake like a shadow or fog. Effects: 90% chance of evading any attack (including Magic Attacks). Lasts for 20 seconds, Cooldown Time: 100 seconds.

Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses: [Complete and Utter Belief Curse], [Lovey Lovey Curse], [I'm Just A Sheep Curse], [Scaredy Cat Curse], [Utter Despair Curse], [Soulstealing Curse].

[Deity Curse]: Medium Level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, can't be levelled up. The target will believe you are a deity who has descended from the heavens, and will respect and worship you as well as comply with all of your wishes. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and the target's mental energy as well as overall strength. The number of seconds the effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat. Costs 10 MP. Cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[Irreconcilable Hatred Curse]: Medium Level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, can't be levelled up. Can be cast upon multiple targets within one's field of vision. Those affected will feel irreconcilable hatred towards each other, and will want to grind each other's bones to dust. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and the target's mental energy as well as overall strength. The number of seconds the

effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat. Costs 10 MP. Cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[Love Magnet Curse]: Medium Level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, can't be levelled up. Can be cast upon multiple targets within one's field of vision. Those who are affected (no matter male or female) will fall madly in love with a specified target. The specified target can be the caster or another target. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and the target's mental energy as well as overall strength. The number of seconds the effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat. Costs 10 MP. Cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[We're All Sheep Curse]: Medium Level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, can't be levelled up. The upgraded skill for [I'm Just A Sheep]. Can be cast upon multiple targets within one's field of vision. Causes all affected to think that they are a sheep. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and the target's mental energy as well as overall strength. The number of seconds the effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat. Costs 10 MP Cooldown time: 100 seconds.

Chapter 584 – Holy Spirit's Pearl

The might of the Medium Level Feng Chen Curse undoubtedly surpassed that of the Low-Level Feng Chen Curses, even able to affect multiple targets. Because Ling Chen has 25 Comprehension, he is able to select 25 targets. The 2 shadow skills are both levelled up, and a third shadow skill had been unlocked, more than doubling Ling Chen's survival abilities. If he met the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard again, he would not be scared at all.

Following this, Ling Chen opened Xiao Hui and Leng'Er's stats pages, and looked through their abilities, particularly Xiao Hui's.

Holy Spirit Beast (Xiao Hui): Type: Beast Pet, Level: LV50, Grade: Heaven's End, Owner: Ling Tian.

Stats: HP: 50,000, MP: 10,600, Physical Attack Power: 1, Magic Attack Power: 1, Physical Defence: 3200, Hit: 1, Evasion: 1, Critical Chance: 50%, Pierce Chance: 50%, Movement Speed: 350.

Passive Skills: [Soul Devour], [Holy Spirit's Shield] – LV3, [Holy Spirit's Gift] – LV3, [Thunder Bulwark], [Lightning Attraction].

[Eye of the Holy Spirit]: Current Level: LV4, Highest Level: LV5, Level Required to upgrade to LV5: LV60. Uses the Holy Spirit's energy to create a pair of eyes that can see through all hidden things. The higher the level, the more information that can be seen and the greater the range. Effects: Can view detailed information and weaknesses about humans, beasts, devils, demons, gods, ghosts and spirits that are less than 30 levels higher than the user.

The information can be transferred to the master. Has a range of 100 metres, and can discover any hidden creatures.

[Holy Spirit's Aura]: Current Level: LV11, Highest Level: LV20, Level required to upgrade to LV12: LV55. Using its Holy Spirit Aura that is void of evil and impurity to seek the protection of mother nature, it upgrades the innate gifts of itself and all companions. Effect: Luck +11 and Comprehension +11 when along with the master and all pet companions. Effect exists even while not summoned.

[Holy Spirit's Sacrifice]: Special Skill, cannot be levelled up. It uses a pure heart and the Holy Spirit's power to create a sacrifice of life. When the owner or other pets die, it can use its own death to die for them; when multiple beings die, it can use a single death as a sacrifice for all of their deaths. Can be used 3 times every day. Because owner 'Ling Tian' is affected by the Lunar Scourge's debuffs, it does not affect owner 'Ling Tian'.

[Holy Spirit's Pearl]: Current Level: LV1, Highest Level: LV3, Level required to upgrade to LV2: LV60. The Holy Spirit Beast uses its unique Holy Spirit power to create a special pearl, containing boundless auspiciousness and Nature's blessings. Can create 1 pearl every level this skill is raised. When the Holy Spirit's Pearl is used on a skill, it can increase the maximum level of the skill by 20% (subject to rounding), and it can instantly raise the skill to the new maximum level.

Upon seeing this skill, Ling Chen's eyes widened and widened, and his jaw nearly dropped to the ground.

Raise the maximum level by 20%... then directly raise the skill to maximum level!

My goodness, this is simply ridiculous!!

After Xiao Hui's Grade increased, the most direct change was the massive increase to his stats. However, though undetectable, the aura of luck and auspiciousness around him had grown denser as well. As for his new skills, Ling Chen had expected that based on how powerful his skills had been when he was only at the Celestial grade, the new Heaven's End grade skills would be quite good as well. However, Ling Chen never would have thought that they would be so powerful, and adding on the effect that the skill would instantly be raised to the new maximum level... even Ling Chen, who had seen all sorts of overpowered skills, couldn't believe his own eyes.

Ling Chen immediately squatted down and patted Xiao Hui's head as his eyes that were as dark as the night burned with a glowing light, "Xiao Hui, this... is it really that powerful?"

The skill's description had stated quite clearly that every level the skill was upgraded, Xiao Hui would be able to create 1 pearl. This meant that Xiao Hui could create on right now! In that case...

The intelligent Xiao Hui immediately understood what his owner was trying to say. He wagged his tail as he moved backwards and suddenly lowered his head, his sharp horn pointing towards Ling Chen. Following this, a ball of grey and purple light gathered on the tip of the horn. Within the light, a pearl gradually formed, and by the time the light dissipated, the pearl was as big as the nail on

one's pinky finger. It was completely clear and looked like a normal glass marble.

As Xiao Hui gave a light bark, the pearl lightly floated over and fell into Ling Chen's hands. The instant Ling Chen held it, he saw its name – Holy Spirit's Pearl! The description of the pearl was exactly the same as he had read in the skill's description!

Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded. This Xiao Hui, who didn't have any battle power, had such shocking support abilities. Just like the White Tiger had said, he possessed the Holy Qilin's bloodline, and could bring to his owner auspiciousness and good luck. However, this wasn't all that Xiao Hui had given him. Without Xiao Hui's companionship, he definitely wouldn't have been able to rise to such a level in the Mystic Moon world.

The incredible power of the Holy Spirit's Pearl was evident, and it was also incredibly precious. This skill had a maximum level of LV3, which meant that Xiao Hui would only be able to create 3 Holy Spirit's Pearls. Ling Chen decided that he had to use such precious items on the best skills to maximize their effects.

Ling Chen immediately thought of a skill. That skill was heaven-defyingly powerful, but raising it to its maximum level would be even more difficult than defying the heavens – [Soul Demise]!

If he used the pearl on this skill...

Ling Chen held his breath and opened his skills page. He looked at [Soul Demise], which was currently only LV4 and required

150,000 SP to raise to the next level, as he carefully crushed the Holy Spirit's Pearl.

The shattered Holy Spirit's Pearl turned into a ray of light and flew towards the skill on the display. It silently landed on it, and the moment the ray of light disappeared, the skill suddenly flashed as a massive change happened in the skill's description.

"Ding... the Holy Spirit's Pearl has been successfully used, your skill's maximum level has been increased by 6 levels and has been raised to LV36."

All of this had happened in just a few seconds. There weren't any complicated steps to follow, nor were there any chaotic images or scenes. Just like that, after crushing the pearl, the effects had taken place.

[Soul Demise]: Current level: LV36, max level. A skill that can destroy souls created from one's powerful spirit as the foundation and support. Using Soul Demise will directly attack the target's soul. Single target attack, can be activated using both hands or through any weapon. An unseen force attacks the target's soul, ignoring level, grade, Defence, Absolute Defence, and takes away 36% of the target's HP and MP. This attack has Absolute Hit, and has a 3.6% chance to instantly kill the target, ignoring level, grade and instant-death resistance. Costs 1 MP, can only be used 20 times per day. Cannot be used on the same target within 12 hours.

The LV36 Soul Demise was an indescribably heaven-defying skill. Against powerful opponents, the effects would be no less powerful than even the Shura's [Shura's Death Domain]. With this skill, no

matter what level, grade, or type his enemy was, once the enemy was hit, he or she would lose more than a third of their HP and MP? What did this mean? This meant that as soon as the battle started, the enemy would almost be half dead... what was even more terrifying was that there was a 3.6% chance of instantly killing the target! This was regardless of whether the enemy was a godly beast, holy beast, or even a Moon Goddess.

The skill that could instantly kill any enemy actually had a 3.6% chance of activation! This was undoubtedly the most game-breaking skill in the entire Mystic Moon world. It shouldn't exist in the Mystic Moon world, much less be in the hands of a player.

"Have I become truly heaven-defying?" Looking at the LV36 skill's description over and over again, Ling Chen couldn't help but mutter to himself.

Apart from this, Xiao Hui had also unlocked another skill. However, although he had unlocked this skill, he could not use it.

[Purple Qilin Light]: Special skill, cannot be levelled up. Unknown effects, unknown casting method.

Purple was the colour of pure Lightning elemental essence. Ling Chen guessed that this skill had some relation to the White Tiger.

Comparatively, after reaching LV50, there had not been much changes in Leng'Er, except that she had unlocked a new skill.

[Soul Lock]: Current Level: LV1, Highest Level: LV3, Level Required to upgrade to LV2: LV60. It uses dark underworld power to bind a single target's soul within 30 metres, completely controlling their mind and soul for 10 seconds. Base rate of success is 30%. Consumes 200MP. Cooldown time: 60 seconds."

Once successful, Leng'Er would be able to control the target's mind and soul with her underworld power. If Ling Chen, or any other player, had obtained this skill it would be incredibly terrifying... however, Ling Chen understood Leng'Er's personality. Even if she successfully cast this skill, she would not truly control the target. The only thing that she liked were dolls.

However, the upgraded [Summon Undead] gave Ling Chen great delight.

[Summon Undead]: Current Level: LV2, Highest Level: LV5, Requirements to level up unknown. It uses the death energy from corpses as mediums to summon medium grade Skeleton Soldiers from the Underworld. The Skeleton Soldiers assume the profession of the corpse, have the same level as the summoner, and have Grades of 1 Star Elites. The Skeleton Soldiers fully obey all commands from the summoner. Every corpse can only be used to summon 1 Skeleton Soldier. Every summon costs 50MP, and multiple Skeleton Soldiers can be simultaneously summoned from multiple corpses. There is no limit to the number of Skeleton Soldiers that can be in existence. Every Skeleton Soldier lasts for 10 minutes and will immediately disappear once killed.

The LV2 Summon Undead no longer summoned normal skeletons that were the same level as the original players; they

would now be 1 Star Elites! Within the ranks of monsters, 1 Star Elites were essentially Mini Bosses! They were much stronger than normal monsters.

If LV1 Summon Undead summoned normal monsters, LV2 summoned 1 Star Elites... did that mean at LV5 Leng'Er would be able to summon Lord Grade Bosses?

If that was the case, that would simply be too terrifying! Lord grade monsters were no doubt Bosses, and it would take tens, if not hundreds, of normal players to kill a Lord Grade Boss of a similar level. If he summoned an uncountable mass of Lord Grade Bosses... merely thinking about it was enough to make his heart tremble. It was simply too terrifying and cruel.

Moreover, the cost for summoning had decreased by half. This meant that with the same consumption costs, Leng'Er would be able to double her output!

After the skill reached LV2, it became countless times more powerful.

LV50 was a great divide in any virtual game. Once someone reached LV50, their abilities and strength would skyrocket. There was only a single level between LV49 and LV50, but the players at LV49 and at LV50 were on completely different levels. After looking at his pet's new skills, Ling Chen happily closed their skill pages and looked up towards Xi Ling in the air. Her return had brought him great comfort, and made him much happier than his professions being upgraded.

“Xi Ling, welcome back.” Ling Chen smiled as he spoke and stretched out his hand. Xi Ling’s return not only meant that she had come back to life, but also meant that she was willing to continue staying by his side. The Contract between them had been cancelled, so after Xi Ling had been revived, she was completely free. With her foundations as a Saint Destroyer beast, there was nowhere that she couldn’t go, and there was nothing that did not fear her. There was no reason for her to return to a measly human player’s side… and yet, she had come back. Although he was at the Godchild Peak, she had followed his aura here. When they had found each other, her cries had been full of joy and delight.

Xi Ling descended, and because of her size, she was no longer able to stand on Ling Chen’s shoulders. Instead, she landed next to Ling Chen and affectionately leaned against him. Unlike Xiao Hui and Leng’Er, Xi Ling’s intelligence was like that of a human’s. The second time Ling Chen had seen her, she was even in human form. This was why she had emotions and feelings like humans… and they were possibly even stronger than those of human’s.

“Ding… the Mysterious God grade beast ‘Crimson Spirit’ has recognised you as its master and is willing to become your pet. Would you like to accept?”

Chapter 585-Mysterious God grade Xi Ling

Although he was somewhat prepared, Ling Chen's heart still trembled when he heard this system announcement.

However, Ling Chen did not immediately accept. He looked at Xi Ling as he gently placed his hand on her beautiful feathers, "Xi Ling, it was a great blessing for me to meet you. Back then, I only rescued you at the Lonely Spirit Ridge out of curiosity, and I never thought that you would repay me like this... you've even sacrificed your life twice to save me.

"Although you're not the Golden Crow, I'm sure you possess the Golden Crow's bloodline within you. That is the bloodline of a Saint Destroyer beast that represents sovereignty in this world. Back then, I was incredibly weak, and was an otherworlder at the lowest hierarchy in this world. In order to save me, you burned the flames of your lifeforce twice. Your actions caused me to feel moved for the first time in this world, and helped me realise that Saint Destroyer beasts aren't all high and mighty; instead, their hearts are even purer and kinder than those of humans."

Xi Ling gave a gentle caw, the meaning of which Ling Chen did not fully understand.

"Back then, you became my pet so that I could save your life. But now..." Ling Chen shook his head, "Xi Ling, you should know that once you become a player's pet, although your Grade will not change, your power will drop to maintain the balance of pets. Moreover, you'll completely lose your freedom, so..."

Before Ling Chen could finish speaking, Xi Ling's body flashed with a resplendent and warm red light which covered her entire body. The light gradually contracted and became narrower and shorter. By the time it disappeared, there was a young girl in front of Ling Chen.

Xi Ling was gone and instead there was a cute and pearl-like young girl wearing red clothes.

"Xi... Ling... you can become human again?" Looking at the girl in front of him, Ling Chen cried out emotionally. This was the girl who he had met back in the Lonely Spirit Ridge... Xi Ling's human form.

"Hehe!" The girl was much shorter than Ling Chen and had to look up to face him. She grinned as she met his gaze. Her large eyes looked clear like glass and she was small and cute. Her waist was quite thin and her beautiful, soft hair fell on her shoulders. Her flame-red dress was quite cute and looked like a princess-style dress, making her look like a doll, "Big brother – no – master, did you forget our promise? Wherever master goes, Xi Ling will go as well. Wherever master is, that will be where Xi Ling's home is. This is the promise we made the first day we met; master already agreed to this."

"But..."

"No 'buts'," Xi Ling cut Ling Chen off with her sweet voice. "I know that master's saying this for my own good because he doesn't want me to lose my strength and my freedom. Hehe, master's always so good to me. However, even though I have so much

power, because of the rules, I can't fight with master or protect master. If that's the case, what's the point of this strength? Although I'll lose some of my strength, if I become master's pet I'll at least be able to fight by master's side and can face all those difficult enemies with master together. I am willing to even if I have to lose all of my current strength.

"Even though I'll lose my 'freedom', I was happiest back when I was by master's side. Even though I'll lose my freedom, I'll be able to stay by master's side. Even if master wants to chase me away or abandon me, he won't be able to do so." Xi Ling's eyes glittered like shining stars. There was a deep look of hope and expectation within those beautiful eyes, making Ling Chen feel as if his heart was going to melt. Xi Ling continued, "So master, please let Xi Ling continue to stay by your side just like before, alright?"

Looking at this girl who was as beautiful as a rose, Ling Chen felt as if none of this was real. He put his hands on Xi Ling's small shoulders as he asked emotionally, "Xi Ling, am I really worth it for you to do all this?"

"Of course!" Xi Ling earnestly nodded and then smiled. "Master saved Xi Ling's life, so Xi Ling's life belongs to master anyways. If master doesn't dislike Xi Ling, please don't reject her."

"Ding... the Mysterious God grade beast 'Crimson Spirit' has recognised you as its master and is willing to become your pet. Would you like to accept?"

Hearing this system announcement, Ling Chen did not hesitate anymore. He smiled as he nodded and accepted. A white light

enveloped him and Xi Ling before it quickly disappeared.

"Ding... 'Crimson Spirit' has become your pet. 'Crimson Spirit' was once your pet and was named 'Xi Ling'. Would you like to rename her?"

"No!" Ling Chen immediately declined.

"Ding... your pet 'Crimson Spirit' ranks as the number 1 pet on China's Pet Rankings. Do you wish to hide your personal information?"

"No need." Ling Chen was slightly surprised, but then he quickly realised something. Snow Cherry had originally been at the top of the Pet Rankings, but this position was now taken by Xi Ling. This meant that Xi Ling was still at least Mysterious God grade! At the Lava Purgatory, under the Vermillion Bird's soul flames, she had not only been reborn, but had become even stronger.

"Ding... your pet 'Xi Ling' has returned to you and has become Mysterious God grade. All of her stats have been greatly increased and her Passive Skills have been upgraded. Her [Rootless Flames] have been levelled up to LV5, [Wild Flames] have been upgraded to [Heaven-Burning Flames], [Red Laser] has been upgraded into [Solar Laser], [Burning Fire Array] has been levelled up to LV5. She has unlocked the new skills [Pale Flames], [Phoenix Arrow], [Vermillion Judgment], [Dazzling Red Lotus] and [World Burning Heavenly Flames]."

Xi Ling had returned even stronger than she was before. As the

system announcement sounded out, Xi Ling's stats appeared in front of Ling Chen.

Crimson Spirit: Type: Beast Pet, Level: LV50, Grade: Mysterious God, Master: Ling Tian. A Fire Spirit Beast that possesses the Golden Crow's bloodline. It has a beautiful appearance and extreme Fire abilities. It can also use the sun's flames. It is currently not yet mature, and its power has not fully matured either. After exhausting its lifeforce, it was brought back to life by the Vermillion Bird's soul flames and received part of the Vermillion Bird's strength, awakening its dormant Phoenix bloodline.

"Wait! Phoenix?" Ling Chen was dumbfounded.

The words 'Golden Crow' had appeared within Xi Ling's description, which meant that the system recognised that she possessed the Golden Crow's bloodline. However, that bloodline was not pure – the description had also mentioned the 'Phoenix'.

Back then, Qi Yue had told him that Phoenixes were ancient godly beasts and that the strongest being within the Phoenix Clan had been at the Saint Destroyer grade. Back then, the Phoenix Clan and Dragon Clan were the overlords, but after a catastrophe, the Phoenix Clan became extinct and no one had seen a Phoenix ever again. By now, 'Phoenixes' had become a myth. Qi Yue possessed 10,000 years of knowledge, which meant that even 10,000 years ago, the Phoenix Clan had already been extinct... so why was the Phoenix bloodline mentioned in Xi Ling's description?

Could it be that she not only possessed the Golden Crow's

bloodline but also the Phoenix Clan's bloodline? Could she be the offspring of the Golden Crow and a Phoenix?

Ling Chen continued to read:

Attributes: HP: 6,000, MP: 120,000, Physical Attack Power: 1,200, Magic Attack Power: 48,000, Physical Defence: 60, Movement Speed: 220. Elemental Resistances: Water: -30%, Fire: 200%, Wind: 80%, Lightning: 80%, Earth: 80%, Light: 80%, Darkness: 80%.

Passive Abilities:

- Can fly up to 50 metres high while carrying people.
- Automatically recovers 2% MP every second.
- Can absorb any form of Fire damage and freely convert it to MP or HP, and the owner and fellow pets become immune to Fire damage.

[Flame Attack]: Normal attack, cannot be upgraded. Burns all targets within a 10 metre range with rootless flames and the damage dealt is equivalent to Magic Attack Power. Consumes 20 MP. No cooldown.

[Rootless Flames]: Current Level: LV5, max level. A passive skill of the Golden Crow bloodline. It uses one's soul to create and control rootless flames that do not require natural Fire Elemental Essence to be created. It ignores all resistances to Fire, and it possesses greater temperature and destructive power than normal flames. Effects: Ignores Fire Resistances, Fire attacks do not require channelling (Does not ignore negative Fire Resistances. For monsters that are weak against Fire attacks, the extra damage still applies). All Fire attacks deal 50% more damage and contain a Medium Destruction element. It is incredibly destructive to things that are weak against Fire.

[Heaven-Burning Flames]: Current Level: LV8, Highest Level: LV10, Level Required to upgrade to LV9: LV60. It unleashes boundless rootless flames, mercilessly burning all targets within 50 metres, dealing 400% Magic Attack Power to the targets with a 30% chance to add a 'Burn' effect for 10 seconds. Consumes 500 MP. Cooldown time: 5 seconds.

[Solar Laser]: Current Level: LV8, Highest Level: LV10, Level Required to upgrade to LV9: LV60. Condensing rootless flames into a bright and burning light from the sun, it shoots down a searing laser from the skies to a single target, dealing Fire damage equivalent to 1000% Magic Attack Power with a 100% chance to add a 'Burn' effect for 10 seconds. Once locked on, it cannot be evaded. Consumes 1000 MP, cooldown time: 10 seconds.

[Phoenix Arrow]: Current Level: LV5, max level. A destructive skill from the Phoenix bloodline. Uses the Phoenix's flames to create a crimson shadow that pierces through 200 metres in front of it, burning everything in its path. Deals 500% Magic Attack Power and has a 10% chance to add a 'Burn' effect for 5 seconds. It can even burn the surroundings. Consumes 600 MP. Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

[Vermillion Judgment]: Current Level: LV5, max level. A destructive skill from the Vermillion Bird's soul flames. Spreads the Vermillion Bird's flames in an area of 50 metres, causing all targets within the range to take Fire damage equivalent to 100% Magic Attack Power every second for 10 seconds. Consumes 1500 MP. Cooldown time: 30 seconds.

[Burning Fire Array]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Uses rootless flames to cover all directions, creating a destructive formation array of heavenly flames that burn all targets within its radius. Covers 200 metres around the caster, dealing damage equivalent to (10,000 + Magic Attack Power x 10) with a 100% chance to add a 'Burn' effect. Takes 5 seconds to set up the formation array and burns for 3 seconds. Consumes 13,000 MP. Cooldown time: 2 hours.

[Nine Suns Rebirth]: Fixed Skill, cannot be levelled up. After dying, it uses the power of the Nine Suns to revive. After reviving, there will not be any loss, but will not be able to fight within 1 hour. The power of the Nine Suns is limitless and the Nine Suns Rebirth can be used an unlimited number of times.

[Pale Flames]: Special Skill, cannot be levelled up. A unique flame that belongs solely to Xi Ling created by combining the Golden Crow, Phoenix, and Vermillion Bird's flames. After fusing these flames from different origins, a terrifying white flame is created. Once activated, all of the flames Xi Ling releases will become white. The white flames ignore all resistances to Fire and deal triple the amount of Fire damage. They also destroy everything they come into contact with. After activating, consumes 3,000 MP per second and can be maintained for 30 seconds at most. Can be used once every day. Because Xi Ling's strength is insufficient, the power of her flames will fall asleep for 3 hours after use.

[Dazzling Red Lotus]: Forbidden Skill, cannot be levelled up. The most destructive ability from the Vermillion Bird Clan. Cannot be used yet because the Vermillion Bird's flames have not yet fully fused with Xi Ling's soul.

[World Burning Heavenly Flames]: Forbidden Skill, cannot be levelled up. The most destructive ability from the Phoenix bloodline. Cannot be used yet because Xi Ling's Phoenix bloodline has not fully awakened.

[Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns]: A destructive Forbidden Skill from the Golden Crow's bloodline, cannot be upgraded. It releases its own source of power and condenses flames similar to the nine suns into an ultimate flame that can burn anything. When it reaches the peak of its strength, the Flames of the Sun can be directly used. The fire doesn't distinguish friend from foe, and the damage is equivalent to (Magic Attack Power x 9 x Crimson Spirit's current level). The maximum range can be controlled within a range equivalent to Xi Ling's Magic Attack Power. Consumes all current MP. Cooldown time: 1 month. Because Xi Ling's strength is vastly insufficient, it is best not to use it. If forcefully used, Xi Ling will fall unconscious for 3 days, her maximum HP will permanently decrease by 20%, and her level will fall by 10.

Chapter 586 – Vermillion Bird's Heart

Without a doubt, Xi Ling was the most extreme attack-type pet. The power of the Heaven's End Grade Xi Ling already greatly surpassed Ling Chen, and despite being a pet, she was able to even insta-kill Lord Grade Bosses of a similar level. Now that Xi Ling was Mysterious God grade, no matter if it was her strength or the range of her attacks, they were completely shocking. For normal monsters around the same level, no matter how much Defence or Fire Resistance they had, they would undoubtedly still be insta-killed. As for Lord Grade Bosses of a similar level, a single Solar Laser was enough to insta-kill them without giving them a chance to even struggle.

Just the Golden Crow alone was the most powerful attacker out of the 5 Saint Destroyer beasts. It essentially represented the extremes of attack power within the Forgotten Continent. Within Xi Ling was not only the Golden Crow's flames, but also the Vermillion Bird's soul flames as well as the ancient Phoenix Clan's flames. The 3 sovereigns of flames were all mixed within Xi Ling's body.

Compared to her attack power, her lifeforce was incredibly pitiful. Despite being a Mysterious God grade beast, her HP was only 10% that of Xiao Hui's. However, with her attack power, how many enemies could attack her before they were insta-killed? Moreover, there Xiao Hui was protecting her as well.

"Phoenix's flames, Vermillion Bird's flames... I understand that she has the Vermillion Bird's flames because she was reborn from the Vermillion Bird's soul flames, so her lifeforce is filled with the Vermillion Bird's soul flames. However, the Phoenix bloodline...

this is simply incomprehensible." Qi Yue's voice sounded out in Ling Chen's mind. She knew much more than Ling Chen about the Phoenix Clan. The Phoenix Clan had gone extinct 10,000 years ago and was never mentioned again. Who would have thought that the Phoenix bloodline would reappear after 10,000 years?

After thinking for a while, Qi Yue spoke tactfully, "In that case, there's only one explanation. Xi Ling does not possess only the Golden Crow's bloodline or the Phoenix's bloodline, but a mixture of both. No wonder why she was able to use the flames of the nine suns but also have it look so different to the Golden Crow's."

"But aren't the Phoenix and Golden Crow 2 different tribes? They can mate?" Ling Chen looked at Xi Ling as he wondered.

"It's indeed possible. After reaching their level and grade, they're able to freely transform into their human form. Just like the little Xi Ling in front of you, she's in her human form, right? If little master wants, you can mate with her," Qi Yue said as her tone became racy.

Ling Chen: "#$%....."

"It's just that as a Saint Destroyer beast, the Golden Crow is restricted by the Mystic Moon world's rules. There has only ever been one Golden Crow in existence. As such, the Golden Crow uses the flames of the nine suns to give birth to the Golden Crow of the next generation. This process is extremely slow, and when the Golden Crow of the next generation is birthed, the previous Golden Crow will immediately die. The Phoenix Clan was not too large or too small. They also possessed a single Saint Destroyer Grade

Phoenix as their leader. It was just that the Phoenixes were too proud and looked down on all other beings. They would never allow their bloodline to be mixed with something else and have impurities. As such, they never mate with other clans. In fact, this is a rule that they've never dared to disobey for the punishments are incredibly severe."

"That means that there was a single Phoenix that broke this rule and mated with the Golden Crow, giving birth to Xi Ling?" Ling Chen asked.

"That's right... and that Phoenix was actually the only Saint Destroyer Phoenix, the Clan Leader of the Phoenix Clan," Qi Yue said slowly.

"What?" Ling Chen was quite shocked, "How do you know that?"

"It's very simple. It's not too difficult for demons, devils, and spirits to take human form, but for beasts, they must be at least at the Saint Destroyer grade – this is not an exception even for the Phoenix Clan. If the Phoenix wanted to mate with the Golden Crow, they would both have to be in their human forms. There was only ever one Saint Destroyer Grade Phoenix, so the answer is quite evident."

"Wait!" Ling Chen suddenly cut in as he looked at Xi Ling, "But isn't Xi Ling only at the Mysterious God grade? Why can she turn into her human form?"

"... I'm not sure. Perhaps it's because of some mutation brought

by the fusing of the Golden Crow and Phoenix's bloodlines. After all, the Phoenix Clan Leader and the Golden Crow were both Saint Destroyer grade existences and were both sovereigns of fire. Their mating was an act that defied the heavens, so their offspring might not be bound by the rules of this world," Qi Yue explained.

"The Clan Leader broke one of the Phoenix Clan's greatest taboos – if this matter was spread, this would cause an uproar within the Phoenix Clan. As such, no matter if it was the Phoenix Clan's Clan Leader or the Golden Crow, they protected this secret with their lives and gave birth to little Xi Ling in secret. Afterwards, the Phoenix Clan faced a great catastrophe and went extinct. No one knows how the Golden Crow died. It's possible that it died together with all of the Phoenixes after that catastrophe. Afterwards, Xi Ling was finally born, but she was quite unlucky in that after she was born, she was discovered by the Demon Beast Clan. Because she was too young and did not possess enough strength, she was sealed by the Demon Beast Clan within their Demon Beast Silk until she met little master."

Ling Chen carefully thought about what Qi Yue had said and then spoke in a soft voice, "Perhaps that's the truth."

"The pain from being imprisoned for 10,000 years is not something that people who have never experienced it can imagine. In those 10,000 years, I'm sure Xi Ling wanted to escape from there every day. Her gratitude towards little master for saving her is just as strong as her desire to leave there. Afterwards, in order to save her, little master risked his life to go to the Lava Purgatory to find the Vermillion Bird. This gratitude slowly developed into something else. As such, little master, you should accept Xi Ling's goodwill. She has evidently decided to devote all of her time

repaying you; this isn't something she has forced herself to do, but something she enjoys doing. Even if little master wants to mate with little Xi Ling, I'm sure she'd be willing, hehehe," Qi Yue said as she flirtatiously laughed.

Ling Chen wisely chose not to reply.

"Hehe, this is great!" After becoming Ling Chen's pet again, Xi Ling was incredibly delighted. The smile on her face bloomed like a flower, "I've become stronger than before, and I can help master more."

"That's right!" Xi Ling suddenly thought of something. She stretched out her arms and a soccer ball-sized object covered by a crimson-red light appeared within her palms, "Big sister Vermillion Bird said that if I decided to return to master's side and found master, I should give this to master. This is big sister Vermillion Bird's heart; she said it can help master."

When mentioning the Vermillion Bird, a trace of sadness appeared within Xi Ling's eyes. After all, her life had been saved by the Vermillion Bird's death.

"The Vermillion Bird wanted to give this to me?" Ling Chen received it in shock. This crimson red ball was unexpectedly heavy and he almost dropped it. After getting a solid hold on it with great difficulty, Ling Chen looked at its description:

[Vermillion Bird's Heart]: The core of the guardian beast's heart. It contains the most power out of any other part of the Vermillion

Bird's body. Not only does it contain immense power, but it can also absorb Nature energy to go through rebirth. However, apart from the Vermillion Bird, other creatures will find it incredibly difficult to control its power.

The Vermillion Bird's Heart! It was evidently the same sort of thing as the White Tiger's Heart. They both came from guardian beasts, and they are the cores of their hearts. They were both where the guardian beasts' energy was most concentrated, the only difference being the attributes of the power they contained.

Although Ling Chen didn't know what they did, things that come from the bodies of guardian beasts definitely were not ordinary. Ling Chen put away the Vermilion Bird's heart and bent down as he smiled at Xi Ling, "I'll look after it properly. I didn't do anything for the Vermillion Bird, yet I received such immense favour from it. Now that you've returned to my side, I don't know how to thank it. It's just that even if I want to thank it, it would be impossible."

"That's not for sure,' XI Ling said as she smiled and looked up.

"Hm?" An expression of surprise appeared on Ling Chen's face. "Could it be... that the Vermillion Bird didn't die?"

However, the Vermillion Bird's heart was in his hands-that was the core of its heart. Without its heart, how could the Vermillion Bird still be alive?

"Master will know when he's met big sister Qi Qi... ahh!!!" After

saying half of her sentence, Xi Ling suddenly remembered something and yelled, as her smile was replaced with a panicked expression.

"Qi Qi has returned as well?" If Xiao Qi had also returned safely, that would also be a great surprise. However, Ling Chen immediately noticed Xi Ling's strange expression and hurriedly asked, "Xi Ling, what's wrong?"

"Oh no, oh no!" Xi Ling stretched out her hand and grabbed Ling Chen's arm as she worriedly shook it while on the verge of tears, "After meeting master again, I was so happy that I forgot the most important thing. Master, we need to go quickly! There are lots of people attacking the new city, and although Qi Qi's defeated some of them, there will be many more of them attacking soon. There aren't many people left, and it's impossible for them to hold out. They've all been looking for master and waiting for master to go to them."

"What?!" Ling Chen's expression suddenly fell.

He hurriedly opened his communication device and immediately saw countless messages asking him to immediately go to the new city... the earliest one was more than 20 hours ago!

Ling Chen deeply breathed in as he calmly asked, "Xi Ling, from when you left to now, how long has it been?"

"I don't know," Xi Ling shook her head. "It's been a long time. Because I once had a Contract with master, I could still trace

master, so I flew directly from the new city to here. I flew for a very long time."

Ling Chen did not dally as he turned and yelled, "Snow Cherry, come back."

A thousand metres away, because Snow Cherry hadn't received any instructions from Ling Chen, she had obediently waited in the air the entire time. Upon hearing Ling Chen's yell, she rushed over at her full speed and arrived in the blink of an eye. Ling Chen jumped on and took out the last Spatial Orb in his bag.

"Ling Chen, are you alright?" Shadissika immediately leapt into Ling Chen's arms, looking anxious and scared. Her eyes were drawn over to Xi Ling in red and gave a soft "Eeh?" Xi Ling was also looked at her in curiosity, and after locking gazes, they looked towards Ling Chen with a questioning gaze.

"Who is this girl?" Qi Yue asked. It was the first time Qi Yue had seen this snow-white girl.

"This is a girl who I met behind the mysterious door. There are some things I want to ask you about her, but the situation is urgent, so we'll talk about it later," Ling Chen quickly replied to Qi Yue. He put his arm around Shadissika, "Sha Sha, we're going to go to another place. It will be quite chaotic there, and when everything has settled down, I'll introduce some good friends to you... Xi Ling, Xiao Hui, Snow Cherry, let's go!"

As the Spatial Orb shattered, Ling Chen disappeared within a

flash of white light. The instant he disappeared, a dense killing intent emanated out from his body.

… No matter who you are, and whether you've succeeded or not, everyone who has participated in attacking in the new city should prepare themselves for terrifying retribution!

Chapter 587 – Yellow Springs Struggle Formation

2 hours prior…

10 or so hours had passed since the Yan Huang Alliance's first wave had attacked the new city. Following this, the other attackers, who had been lying in wait, had finally moved out as well, forming the largest attacking force ever seen in China's virtual gaming history. An army of such a scale looked simply unstoppable, but they were faced with the Skyfall Dynasty, who had suddenly joined the defenders, and Su'Er.

This battle, which should have been easily won, was now tied up in a shocking stalemate because of Su'Er's return.

It was almost impossible to keep count of the casualties, and everyone knew that it would be an incredibly mind-blowing number. Despite having 15 million attackers, they simply couldn't beat back the 3.5 million defenders. This massive battle of attack and defence went from night to dawn and then from dawn to midday without any pause at all or orders of retreat. The defenders had nowhere to retreat to, and the attackers could not retreat no matter what. Once they retreated, they would be filled with humiliation that could never be washed away.

What caused all of this was the strange and miraculous formation that covered the entire battlefield. The formation continuously controlled the battle, giving the defenders countless opportunities and making the attackers suffer bitterly. It was only because of this formation were the defenders able to contend against a force that

was 5 times greater than theirs. The Yan Huang Alliance and the other attackers desperately looked for the weak points in the formation, and despite sending out more and more people, they couldn't find anything at all.

After fighting for such a long time, both sides were in a state of severe mental exhaustion. The pace of the battle slowed down, but with such large forces, the number of people dying each second was still astronomical. Su'Er's formations still affected the battlefield. As for Su'Er, she had fallen into a very dangerous state.

Su'Er was holding Heavenly Star with her eyes closed, a calm expression on her face as she continuously controlled the formation. However, there was not a trace of blood in her face, and her hands holding the Heavenly Star had long since started to shake. Beads of sweat constantly rolled down her forehead.

Xiao Qi stood beside Su'Er, continuously wiping her sweat while also trying to convince her to stop and rest. However, Su'Er, who had always been obedient and found it difficult to refuse others, determinedly stayed silent and persisted. Although she knew the consequences of overusing the Heaven's Secrets power, the new city behind her contained the hopes and dreams of countless people. She was willing to give up her life for this.

During this period of time, the Sword Emperor had left the battlefield twice to recover, yet Su'Er had not stopped at all. She knew that once she stopped controlling the Heaven's Secrets Formation, the defenders would immediately be overwhelmed by the attackers and collapse in an instant.

Li Xiao Xue knew this too, so although her heart ached seeing Su'Er like this, she didn't try to force her to stop.

It was approaching Noon, and they had unknowingly guarded her for almost an entire day. Ling Tian, who they had been calling out to in their hearts, still had not appeared, but the new city still had not been destroyed yet. The first wave of attackers had been obliterated by Xiao Qi, and the second wave had been stopped by Su'Er's amazing formation and willpower. However, she was reaching her limits.

Su'Er was just a girl... a girl who everyone recalled as weak and tender – she wasn't a god.

"Little Su Su," The way Li Xiao Xue spoke to Su'Er changed. The Su'Er she saw today completely changed her impression of her. She truly liked and respected this girl from the bottom of her heart, "You're so amazing. If the new city can really overcome this disaster, you'll become the author of this miracle. Since we've persisted until now, let's make a final struggle."

Li Xiao Xue turned and looked at Xiao Qiu Feng and Skyfall. There was not a trace of weariness in her eyes, and although her voice was hoarse from speaking, there was still an air of confidence within it, "Heavenly King Skyfall and Alliance Master Xiao, immediately give the order for people not to use ultimate skills with long cooldown times so they can keep them and use them at a moment's notice."

By now, Skyfall and Xiao Qiu Feng understood that every order from Li Xiao Xue was incredibly important. They immediately

relayed her order. Li Xiao Xue turned and looked at the battlefield littered with corpses as a hazy and profound look appeared in her eyes, “No matter if we win or lose, this battle is fated to go down in history.”

“Su Su, shrink down the formation and try to make it so that the formation mostly covers our own players. Cancel the current formation and prepare to activate... the Yellow Springs Struggle Formation!”

Su’Er slightly lowered her hands, and just this simple action took her an enormous amount of her strength, causing her body to slightly sway. The light around the Heavenly Star did not change, and the new formation was not immediately activated. Su’Er’s white lips parted as she asked with a slight sense of hesitation, “Do we really... have to use that?”

“Mm,” Li Xiao Xue nodded, “We’ve already given it all, and many miracles have happened. As such, no matter what the result is, we’ll leave it to the heaven’s will... even if we lose, we have to make the other side suffer a heavy loss in exchange for their victory.”

Su’Er did not say anything else and raised up the Heavenly Star again. The formation quickly shrank and changed. In the next instant, a large formation of light flashed on the battlefield and then disappeared. Compared to the formation from before, this one was a third of the size, and it didn’t extend to the northernmost parts of the battlefield. The light of the formation... was now blood-red!

The Yellow Springs Struggle Formation was the cruellest formation out of Su'Er's 12 Heaven's Secrets Formations. Once the formation was activated, the Physical Attack Power and Magic Attack Power of everyone within the formation were doubled while their Physical and Magic Defence and Resistances fell to 0... there was also a mental effect: the formation would bring out all of the violence that resided within people...

Yellow Springs Struggle Formation... a cruel formation that allowed people to give a final struggle with one foot already in the Yellow Springs of death!

This was a Heaven's Secrets Formation that Li Xiao Xue did not want to use because once this formation was activated, it would mean that their final struggle had begun. However, at this moment, she had no other choice - Su'Er couldn't last for much longer. Li Xiao Xue was incredibly intelligent and dabbled in many things including medicine. Moreover, she was an esper herself. From Su'Er's complexion, she could tell that she had depleted all of her mental energy, and was now consuming... her lifeforce!

As such, she decisively made this decision.

"Heavenly King Skyfall and Alliance Master Xiao, give the order... disperse the defensive formation and form an attacking formation. All professions... including Shield Bearers, are to give up on defending and attack at all costs!"

With the Yellow Springs Struggle Formation activated, once Li Xiao Xue's orders were spread, the battlefield became a terrifying purgatory of death.

The defenders gave up on their goal of defending the new city and roared as they unleashed all of their ultimate skills with their boosted Attack Power. With millions of players unleashing their ultimate skills and with everyone's Defence lowered, in just a few seconds countless attacking players were annihilated, leaving behind innumerable corpses.

This beautiful attack felt like a sharp blade had stabbed into the attackers, causing Long Tian Yun and the other leaders' faces to fall. Following this, the Yellow Spring Struggle Formation's effects on the players' minds manifested, causing all players to possess a frantic desire to cut their enemies into a thousand pieces. Boundless hatred swept out from the players, igniting like a flame that shot to the heavens. Everyone's expressions changed as their faces became savage as a beast's.

The attackers forgot their goal of destroying the new city, and the defenders forgot their duty to protect the new city. They couldn't even hear the orders of their leaders anymore. Their entire world became one of killing... they had never felt such strong killing intent before!

The 2 oceans of players madly leapt at each other, and everyone had frenzied expressions on their faces as they roared. Their killing intent and hatred could be felt in the air, and the slaughter became countless times as intense as before.

The earth shook as the sky darkened and the wind began to howl.

There was only a single thought in everyone's minds-madly attacking their enemies. Behind every player and under their feet were masses of corpses, and beside them, numerous people fell every second. While their Attack Power had been greatly boosted, their Defence had plummeted; every one of their attacks would cause enemies to fall like stalks of wheat that had been cut.

The battlefield spiralled out of control and fell into utter chaos. Every second, countless players died. The entire battlefield was like a massive meat grinder, and under the effects of the Yellow Springs Struggle Formation, the players only had attacking on their minds. The only thing that both the attackers and defenders could think of were their enemies dying.

On the platform, Xiao Qiu Feng and Skyfall looked at each other and nodded. They jumped off the platform and rushed into the battlefield. Now that the situation had become like this, there was no need for them to give orders anymore.

The 2 Heaven Ranking experts were like 2 indestructible blades that pierced into the battlefield. The 'Cold Magistrate' Xiao Qiu Feng was at the front, whirling his heavy sword around as he roared. Wherever he passed, no one even saw how he attacked, but the players he passed would fall in droves. The 'Apocalypse Judge' Skyfall followed behind him. In just this short period of time, he had already summoned 20 powerful monsters that ripped into the enemy's lines.

Chapter 588 – Soldiers At The City Walls

The battle raged on with mad killing happening everywhere. From above, the intense and desperate battle stretched as far as the eye could see. Li Xiao Xue did not give any more orders, and instead watched on with a terrifyingly calm gaze. After their initial shock, Long Tian Yun and the other leaders gradually calmed down and silently watched the battle progress… because no one could control this sort of situation anymore. With such a large and chaotic battlefield, even if someone had the power to topple the heavens and flip the earth, they wouldn't be able to control the situation. As such, they could only watch on.

On the platform, the only person who could maintain their cool was Li Xiao Xue. Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi's faces paled. Although they had been watching the battle unfold for a long time, the sudden desperation and intensity of the battle gave them a great shock, making it difficult for them to accept what was happening. Upon seeing such a scene, they felt as if they were seeing a mountain of bones and sea of blood.

Su'Er's eyes were tightly closed, and there was still red light hovering around the Heavenly Star, maintaining the Yellow Springs Struggle Formation. By now, her consciousness had already become hazy, and she couldn't sense anything other than her own body. She was barely holding on with her willpower.

In just an hour, under the frantic attacks of the defenders, the attackers had lost nearly 2 million players while the defenders had lost around 700,000 players. They now had less than 500,000 players remaining. The region of the battle shrank, but remained just as intense.

Against the Sky and Judging Sky had both died in battle in succession, and Yun Feng had also died twice. However, they would always immediately rush back to the battlefield. Skyfall and Xiao Qiu Feng had each died once as well. Their strength was undeniable, but in the end, they were not invincible gods, and they could not retreat as they wished like the Sword Emperor. Only Mu Bing Yao, Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice had not fallen, but their minds and bodies were incredibly fatigued.

No one noticed a hazy dot appear high in the air that was difficult to see with the naked eye. The figure swept his eyes around the battlefield with a calm expression, as if what he saw was not a purgatory of death, but a group of ignorant children playing pretend. His gaze fell on Su'Er as he gave a light sigh.

"What a silly child... even if you blame me, I can't watch on as you harm yourself..."

After speaking with a voice filled with pain, he stretched out his hand and gently swept it out. The Heavenly Star in Su'Er's hand fell to the ground as she fell backwards.

"Su Su!" Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi rushed up, catching Su'Er's strengthless body.

Su'Er's face was deathly pale, and she breathed shallowly. Her body was covered with sweat, and she had lost consciousness. The Yellow Springs Struggle Formation had been deactivated the moment she fell unconscious.

“Let her have a good rest.” Upon seeing that Su’Er had fallen unconscious, Li Xiao Xue let out a breath and then looked back towards the battlefield with a trace of worry in her gaze.

The hazy figure in the sky gave a light sigh and disappeared.

Although the Yellow Springs Struggle Formation had disappeared, the players remained just as berserk and full of bloodlust. The savage slaughter continued, but the pace of the battle had once again slowed. The players slowly regained their rationality, which spelt the beginning of a crisis for the defenders, who were at a numbers disadvantage. The attackers, who held an overwhelming advantage in numbers, started to form orderly ranks again, using their numbers advantage to devour the groups of defenders. They formed small encirclements, separating and dispersing the defenders.

Li Xiao Xue gave a heavy sigh.

Without Su’Er’s Heaven’s Secrets Formations, no matter how intelligent she was, she would not be able to affect the situation. This was not like in the real world where she could use time, place, people, and strategies to twist things her way; the rules in the virtual world were set, and they were not things that mere players could change. Su’Er’s were already incredibly heaven-defying.

Li Xiao Xue did not give any more orders, because the situation was now beyond her control. The battlefield began to fall back into order, and the remaining defenders were quickly devoured by the

attacking forces. In the end, they were completely dispersed, and their numbers fell down to less than 100,000 players.

However, the other side still had more than 4 million players.

Regardless, within the virtual world, 3.5 million players holding out against more than 10 million players was a miracle that had never happened before. Li Xiao Xue was certain that even if the Skyfall Dynasty and Battle Alliance were completely destroyed, they would still be the victors. Their fame and reputation would explosively rise because of this event.

However, no one knew that the one who had truly created this miracle was a weak girl holding a horsetail whisk.

“Meng Xin.” Li Xiao Xue turned to look at Yun Meng Xin. Out of everyone, the person who could not accept defeat was Meng Xin. The new city behind them contained far too much of her hard work, hopes, and dreams.

Yun Meng Xin sat at one side of the platform, allowing Su’Er to lean against her as she finally rested. Hearing Li Xiao Xue’s words, she looked up, understanding the intention in her look. However, there was not any despair within her eyes as she gently smiled, “It’s fine. Before Qi Qi and Su Su returned, I wouldn’t be able to accept the new city, which contains all of our sweat, blood, and tears being destroyed... however, now, no matter what happens, I won't’ be afraid. I have such amazing sisters who are working hard with me; what do I have to fear? Rather than the new city, they are my pride and joy.”

She gave a beautiful smile that could even topple a city, causing even Li Xiao Xue to space out for a moment. Li Xiao Xue carefully looked at Yun Meng Xin's face as she marvelled, "Meng Xin, you're truly a woman who all other women envy. Even if you have nothing else, simply because of your looks, 99.9% of men would be willing to give up everything for you. Most of the remaining 0.01% are homosexual, and the remaining ones are insane. If you wanted to, you would be able to obtain the city behind you with just a few words, and anything else you wanted. However, you're evidently not that sort of person, otherwise Qi Qi and Su Su wouldn't be such good sisters with you, nor would Ling Tian care so much about you."

Yun Meng Xin smiled, and did not say anything.

Despite only exchanging a few words, they felt much better about the impending demise of the new city. Li Xiao Xue held her communication device as she calmly said, "Bing Yao, Yun Feng, Heavenly King Skyfall... please come back. Perhaps we can only use that method..."

Under the vicious assault from the attackers, the surviving Skyfall Dynasty and Battle Alliance players were slowly being completely wiped out. Yun Feng, Xiao Qiu Feng, Mu Bing Yao, the 3 Heavenly Kings, Winter of That Year, and Hundred Miles of Ice all retreated to the platform as they watched the final remnants of the defender's army being destroyed. However, there was not any despair in their hearts, for they knew that being able to last until now was already incredible.

In fact, this was one of the greatest miracles in the virtual world.

After the final defender died, there were no more obstacles in front of the attackers. Long Tian Yun and the other leaders came to the front of their respective armies, bringing their 4 million players to the walls of the city. However, in contrast to Li Xiao Xue and the others, none of them were able to smile. All of their faces were as dark as the bottom of a pot, especially Long Tian Yun's – he looked like he had just eaten a pot of hot dung.

The Skyfall Dynasty and Battle Alliance had been wiped out, but the attackers had lost 11 million players! They never thought that such a thing could happen, nor could they accept it. Behind this massive figure was a massive loss in terms of strength and resources. As for the Yan Huang Alliance, they had lost 2 million players in their first wave, and all of their equipment had been destroyed. They had also lost 5 million players in the second wave... whenever he thought of the losses, Long Tian Yun felt like coughing up blood.

This sort of loss almost exceeded the gains in obtaining a player city!

The Yan Huang Alliance had always been high and mighty, and all of the deaths they had suffered in the past added together wouldn't be as much as what they had suffered today.

The soldiers were now able to go to the walls unopposed, and the thing they desired most was right in front of them. Looking at the 'losers' on the platform, Long Tian Yun could not smile at all. He ground his teeth as he finally spoke, "Good, good, Heavenly King

Skyfall... good, good, Li Xiao Xue...”

“Haha, Alliance Master Long, you look quite disappointed. Apologies, but we’re not going to let you take the city so easily. All of you had 15 million players in total, but now you have less than 4 million remaining. After you obtain the City Creation Token and build your own city, will you forget this number?” Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled, evidently mocking him.

Long Tian Yun’s chest heaved as an unsightly cold smile appeared on his face, “Our losses were indeed quite great. However, big miss Li, I’m sure that you spent much more than us in setting up this formation... heheheh, at the very least, we’re the winners in the end. It’s a pity that despite all of your struggling and your expenditures, you’re still going to lose the city!”

Upon hearing Long Tian Yun’s words, Li Xiao Xue and the others smirked. Expenditures? Haha... the attackers would never believe that the formation came from a single girl and had nothing to do with Li Xiao Xue. Apart from Su’Er’s strength, they had spent nothing at all.

The ones who had truly suffered loss were the Skyfall Dynasty, Battle Alliance, Disillusion Alliance, and Snow Moon Loulan.

Li Xiao Xue smiled as she replied, “Then I’ll have to disappoint you. Out of the Li family, only I participated in this battle, and I didn’t spend a single cent. What might disappoint you even more is that... back then, I decided that if we couldn’t protect the city, we would give up on the new city and take back the City Creation Token. Even if you killed me, you wouldn’t necessarily be able to

obtain the City Creation Token. As for who I'll give it to, that'll be up to me... at the very least... it won't be you."

Long Tian Yun's face darkened as he wildly laughed, "Really now? You think you can just take it back? Alright, do it then. I want to see if you can take it back faster or if I can destroy the city faster... all players, heed my orders, destroy the city!!"

"Yes!!"

Long Tian Yun finally lost his patience as he suddenly gave the order to destroy. The massive army roared in response as 4 million attackers charged towards the platform and the wall of vines.

In the east, somewhere no one noticed.

"Aiya, looks like I need to act. Yola, do you want to come with me?"

The woman slightly raised her head as her red hair blew in the breeze. She was wrapped in tight red clothes, and had a slim waist and a full bottom. Her 2 slim and long, snow-white legs were exposed, giving off a succubus-like air.

"Big sis, are we really going to go? If you act, it's more than likely that you'll be exposed," the girl called Yola replied.

"Of course, being exposed isn't good. However, if that despicable man found out that I sat by and didn't do anything, it would be

even worse. 4 million players... should I play with them slowly or quickly get rid of them... aiya, I hate making choices... eh?" The woman in red suddenly paused as she looked over and smiled, "Looks like I don't need to make this decision. That despicable man still likes to play the hero and arrive at the last moment. He's so annoying that I want to tie him up and smack his ass... come to think of it, he owes me his ass 3 times now."

The eyes of the woman in red narrowed as she smiled and folded her arms around her bountiful breasts, looking like she was going to stand by and watch.

Beside her, Yola started sweating as she heard the 'owes me his ass 3 times'.

Chapter 589 – Shattering The Heavens And Shaking The Earth

After using a Spatial Orb to teleport from the Godchild Peak to the North of the Fairy Forest, the scene that greeted Ling Chen's eyes gave him a big fright.

The grassy plains that he remembered were gone. Instead, it was replaced by a incredibly large city that seemed to stretch on forever. The city had mostly taken form, and there were Dwarves hurrying around, working tirelessly to finish construction.

The scale of the city as well as the style caused Ling Chen to stare, dumbfounded. In just a few glances, he couldn't help but admire the Dwarves' wisdom and skills in construction. The central administrative plaza was grand and impressive, and it was the first time Ling Chen had felt such an imposing might coming from buildings. The surrounding areas were beautiful and elegant, and one could tell at a glance that the marketplace gave off an air of temptation. There was also the Entertainment District, Residential District, and the Competition District... no matter where one looked, they would feel like they couldn't look away. No matter where they looked, they would sigh and marvel within their hearts.

However, right now was not the time for appreciation.

Heaven-shaking roars came from the north, drawing Ling Chen's attention. He looked over and saw a large expanse of yellow... the 20 kilometres of grassy plains had been treaded into dirt, and there was not a shred of green left, showing Ling Chen how devastating

the battle had been. A dark mass of attacking troops was rushing towards the north of the city, while there did not seem to be any defenders in front of it.

"Great, I wasn't too late... let's go, Snow Cherry!"

Ling Chen changed direction and rushed towards the battlefield. Suddenly, a clear voice filled with delight sounded in his ears, "Big brother! Wow!! It's really big brother!"

Ling Chen slowed down as the person who spoke flew over with her little wings in front of Ling Chen.

"Cai'Er, you..."

"Big brother, you're finally back! Please go and help the big sisters," Cai'Er rushed up and hurriedly yelled. "There are too many bad guys; big sisters can't hold them back anymore. Hurry and go, big brother, don't let those bad guys destroy our home... eh?" Cai'Er's gaze was drawn over to Shadissika who was smiling at her. "Who's this big sister? Wow, her hair is completely white! She's so pretty and cute!"

The pure white girl was quite eye-catching, and she had a natural charm that could steal anyone's soul – even Ling Chen had not been able to resist her. Ling Chen patted Cai'Er's little hand that was holding onto his clothes as he nodded and replied, "She's called Sha Sha, you can be good friends in the future. Cai'Er, help me tell the people in the Fairy Clan and the Dwarf Clan that the city will be fine, and that they can be at ease... let's go, Snow

Cherry!”

“Wait!”

A clear and cold voice sounded out behind Ling Chen. Ling Chen turned around and saw an elegant and beautiful face that looked like the face of a goddess. Ling Chen hadn’t seen Ying Xue in a long time. She was just as incredibly beautiful as before, but the layer of iciness on her face still had not melted. She took out a few small wooden bottles and gave them to Ling Chen as she said calmly, “This is Dew of Dawn and Dew of Dusk collected from beside Fairy Fountain; their effects are much more effective than normal Dew of Dawn and Dew of Dusk. Take them.”

After saying this, she did not give Ling Chen an extra look as she left.

[Fairy Dew of Dawn]: Pure dew that is formed on the flowers and grasses near the Fairy Fountain at dawn. It contains a great amount of life energy. After consuming, restores 15,000HP every second, which persists for 30 seconds. Can be used continuously, but effects do not stack.

[Fairy Dew of Dusk]: Pure dew that is formed on the flowers and grasses near Fairy Fountain at dusk. It contains a great amount of life energy. After consuming, restores 6,000MP every second, which persists for 30 seconds. Can be used continuously, but the effects do not stack.

The effects of the Dew of Dawn and Dew of Dusk are already

immensely powerful, but the Dew of Dawn and Dew of Dusk that were collected near Fairy Fountain actually gave effects that lasted for 3 times as long. There were 100 drops in each bottle, which would be able to last Ling Chen for a very long time. Ling Chen did not dally, and after saying a few words of comfort to Cai'Er, he once again rushed towards the battlefield.

The onslaught of 4 million players could shake the earth and move mountains. In front of such a force, even the wall of vines created by the Fairy Clan was easily destroyed. If these players rushed into the city, they would cause a massive catastrophe. However, there was nothing Li Xiao Xue and the others could do against them.

The attacking forces came closer and closer, and the front line was now within 100 metres of the new city. In 10 seconds or so, they would reach the final weak defence. By now, Li Xiao Xue and the others had given up all hope, and no one went down from the platform to stop them. With their strength in this sort of situation, they would simply be dying for nothing.

After sighing, Li Xiao Xue looked at the 3 Heavenly Kings and said apologetically, "Gu family's 3 uncles, if I had known that this would have been the result from the beginning, I wouldn't have dragged you in. In the end, we've still lost, and asked you to suffer possibly the greatest loss in your lives. This was all my fault. In the future, I will do all I can to compensate you."

However, Skyfall gave a hearty laugh as he waved his hand, "No need! We didn't come for you, but for our big sister. As such, you don't need to feel like you owe us anything. In fact, although we

lost, we sacrificed 3 million players to take down more than 10 million players! This will be our eternal glory! Tomorrow, even if the Skyfall Dynasty is annihilated, the entire world will not forget our glory, hahaha!”

Clang!!!

The attacking forces drew nearer and nearer, and soon, they were only metres away. At that moment, the clear sound of a sword being drawn sounded out. The Sword Emperor, who had sat silently under the platform, suddenly rose and charged forwards with 5 sharp swords, giving off icy lights as they circled around her.

In this massive battle, apart from Xiao Qi, the Sword Emperor had killed the most people. The players who fell under her swords numbered around 50,000-60,000, and she had not died a single time. Within the army of millions, wherever she charged to, corpses would litter the ground. The attacking players were all terrified of her, and whenever they heard that she was nearby, they would be scared out of their wits.

Seeing this terrifying deathgod rush towards them, the faces of the attacking players paled, their hearts trembling. However, before the Sword Emperor came close, a silver light exploded out, almost blinding their eyes.

The 5 swords by the Sword Emperor’s side rushed to the sky, flying almost 100 metres high. When everyone subconsciously looked up, their eyes widened… because there were not 5 swords in the sky, but hundreds… no, thousands… no, tens of thousands!

Countless sword lights filled the sky like stars, and no one knew just when they had appeared there. The sword lights hovered in the air for a few seconds before shooting downwards.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh...

The descending sword lights looked like a meteor shower, falling towards the attacking force's army. Countless attacking players screamed out, forming a terrible melody of death. The meteor shower of sword lights spanned over 100 metres, and countless red damage figures rapidly floated up... wherever the sword light passed, corpses fell to the ground without a single person left alive.

Everyone within 100 metres of the Sword Emperor instantly died without a single survivor. This sudden rain of swords caused the attacking force, which possessed an unstoppable momentum, to suddenly fall silent.

All of the players stared with wide eyes towards the mountain of corpses that had just appeared in an instant, their eyes filled with fear and shock.

"W-What sort of skill is this?!" Skyfall cried out in shock.

"My goodness, so powerful... is this the Sword Emperor's true power...?" Yun Feng muttered with his mouth wide open.

"Unbelievable." Even Xiao Qiu Feng was completely

dumbfounded. The Sword Emperor had once been at the top of the Heaven Rankings, and yet this Sword Emperor was tens, if not hundreds of times more powerful than the old Sword Emperor. Her increase in power seemed to have happened after she left the Yan Huang Alliance. No one could imagine just what she had experienced to go through such monstrous growth.

Just that single attack buried thousands of people and shocked millions.

Clang! Clang! Clang! Clang! Clang!

The 5 swords simultaneously fell and stabbed into the ground, but did not float back up. At this moment, the Sword Emperor's body violently swayed and half-kneeled on the ground.

Li Xiao Xue frowned as she said worriedly, "Crap! She used up all of her mental energy in that attack, and she might not even be able to think anymore! Winter, Hundred Miles, quickly rescue her!"

The Sword Emperor had silently joined this battle, but had put in more effort than almost anyone else. In these last moments, she was still not willing to give up. Irrespective of the past, the current Sword Emperor was their most powerful and reliable ally. Adding on Li Xiao Xue's guesses as to her identity... she simply did not want to see her die.

"It's... too late." Skyfall said in a low voice.

“Kill her!” Long Tian Yun gave the order in a low voice from behind the attacking army.

The attacking forces, which had frozen in shock, started to move again. The corpses in front of them caused them to shudder in fear, but the Sword Emperor looked completely defenceless, giving them the courage to advance. They roared as they quickly charged... Just the thought of killing the Sword Emperor alone caused them to tremble.

Although Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice were quite fast, it would be impossible even for them to save the Sword Emperor. They could only watch as the sea of players swarmed towards the Sword Emperor... her single figure among millions of players seemed extremely small.

When the attackers were just a few steps away, and the invincible Sword Emperor was about to fall at the hands of ordinary players... Li Xiao Xue sighed and raised her head, unwilling to see this scene.

“Screw off!!!!”

Just as the attackers’ weapons were about to fall on the Sword Emperor’s body, a blinding light suddenly flashed in everyone’s eyes as a deafening roar sounded in their ears. This roar came from a human, and yet it sounded like a peal of thunder, causing everyone’s blood to roil.

“Extinguishing... The... Heavens... And... Destroying... The... Earth... Tempest!! Hahhh!”

BOOM!!

A heaven-shattering and earth-shaking explosion sounded out, making everyone lose their hearing.

The ground exploded, and everyone on that massive battlefield could feel the earth trembling under their feet as stones and sand were blasted into the air, covering the entire region. Countless people cried out as they were tossed around like sand bags. Some were even blasted a hundred metres away.

This sudden attack caused the attackers, who had finally started moving again, to once again stop and fall silent. The players at the back all covered their ringing ears as they stared in front of them... after the sand and dust cleared and they could finally see what had happened, their pupils contracted as a wave of iciness crept up their spines. This coldness spread throughout their arteries and veins, causing their heart, muscles, and every other part of their bodies to tremble.

A 30-metre-wide crater had appeared in the ground, and no one could see just how deep it was or how many bodies were buried within it. Countless long gashes extended out from the crater... as if the ground had suffered a heavy impact, causing it to split... some of the fissures were almost 100 metres long and half a metre wide. The area in between the fissures was incredibly dark, and no one could see how deep they extended.

Chapter 590 – Slaughter (1)

What had just happened was completely beyond the imagination of any of the people present. There had been many experts in the virtual world, and everyone had always respected and admired these experts for how powerful they were. They would sometimes even imagine the limits of these experts' power. However, they would never imagine that a player could shake and shatter the earth with a single strike.

Shaking and shattering the earth was something that only nature could do, and a human should not possess such power... much less a player. Before, Xiao Qi's Dazzling Red Lotus had completely stunned everyone. Although this attack caused less casualties, it was even more shocking. This sort of attack would even be able to destroy a small mountain.

At the centre of the crater stood a white figure. Snow Cherry, in her normal form, was small and cute, while in her mount-state, she looked mighty and awe-inspiring. Her fur was completely snow-white without even a trace of impurity, and her 5 flame-shaped tails were close to her body. On her back was a person wearing a demonic, dark golden mask with the Twilight Spear and Great Ravager in his left and right hands respectively, giving off an intense sense of bloodlust. His sinister gaze passed through the Evil God's Mask, coldly falling on the large attacking force.

Everyone who met his gaze felt like they were suffocating.

"Big brother Ling Tian... it's big brother Ling Tian!" On the platform, Xiao Qi was the first person to yell out emotionally. She

ran to the edge of the platform as she yelled towards Ling Tian, “Big brother Ling Tian! Big brother Ling Tian! Su Su, big brother Ling Tian has come back! Hurry and wake up! He’s really back!”

“It really is Ling Tian!” Yun Feng rubbed his hands together in excitement, his dim eyes once again burned with fire as he looked at Ling Chen in the distance. He had not seen his mount or most of his equipment before, but that golden mask, the 2 unique weapons, and that domineering aura... how could it be anyone else?

“Ling Tian...” Yun Meng Xin clasped her hands together as her eyes became misty. She looked at the hazy figure as she said in a soft voice, “Great... Great...”

There were still 4 million attacking players while Ling Chen was by himself. Facing that gigantic army, he looked as small as a grain of sand in front of a mountain. However, looking at him, Yun Meng Xin felt all of her worries and fear disappear without a trace. It was as if with him here, no matter how powerful their enemies were or how grave the dangers were, even if the sky fell and earth shattered, he would protect them all.

“Really? Did he choose to arrive at this time to play the hero?” Li Xiao Xue smiled as she also slightly relaxed. Looking at his figure, as well as the crater and fissures below him, a strange light appeared in her eyes.

“Ling Tian, eh? After his adventures in the East Ocean Continent, there hasn’t been any news about him for a long time... hm? Could that white fox under him be that Cherry Blossom God Representative who he subdued in the East Ocean Continent?”

Skyfall said in a low voice. Before as the 3 Heavenly Kings, the 3 brothers had been quite interested in Ling Tian. A few months ago, he had caused a disaster in the East Ocean Continent by catching the Moon God Representative to be his pet. This had sent the entire world into a frenzy and had shocked all of the large guilds. All of the guilds that had offended Ling Tian in the past became deeply fearful, and the Skyfall Dynasty continuously tried to track Ling Tian's actions, wanting to befriend him. They never thought that they would meet him under such circumstances.

To Skyfall, Against The Sky, and Judging Sky, Ling Tian was like a myth or a legend. His arrival drew all of their attention, but after seeing Li Xiao Xue, Yun Meng Xin, and the others' reactions, they became quite surprised. Just then, they had been incredibly melancholic and depressed at their loss, but currently, Yun Feng, Xiao Qi, Yun Meng Xin, Mu Bing Yao, and the others all looked delighted, without a trace of fear or worry anymore on their faces. Even the calm and collected Li Xiao Xue was grinning, as if Ling Tian's appearance meant that the crisis was over.

Indeed, Ling Tian was incredibly powerful, but he was facing 4 million players! Even if they allowed Ling Tian to attack them without retaliating, he would not be able to kill them even in 3 days and 3 nights. Why did these people react in such a way?

"The true main character has finally arrived," Xiao Qiu Feng said as he folded his arms and calmly looked ahead of him. "Let me see if you'll show the world again just how terrifying Ling Tian is."

The attacking forces stood there in shock, looking at Ling Chen in fear and surprise. Not a single person dared to advance.

Ling Tian, who they thought would not appear, had arrived.

All of them knew just how powerful Ling Tian was. The strength he displayed in the East Ocean Continent was enough to shock the entire world. He had charged into the East Ocean Continent by himself and made an enemy of everyone there. However, he hadn't suffered any losses or taken any injuries and had instead annihilated their 3 top guilds by himself. He had even destroyed a main city and made the East Ocean Continent's Moon God Representative his pet!

Everyone in the world acknowledged him to be a heaven-defying player, and most people were now saying that he was comparable to the Eve of the west. With such a person standing in front of them, and adding on that earth-shattering attack he had just unleashed... although he was alone, no one dared to approach.

During this period of strange silence, Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice had rushed behind Ling Tian and stood next to the Sword Emperor, preparing to take her away. Suddenly, their bodies trembled as they suddenly looked up towards Ling Chen. At that moment, Ling Chen also quickly turned around and looked at Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice.

When the 3 people's gazes met, all 3 pairs of eyes started to violently tremble.

None of the 3 people said anything, but their hearts beat furiously.

“You’re… Ling Tian? Why are you…” Winter of That Year stared at Ling Chen, wanting to see through the Evil God’s Mask to see just what he looked like. Even the stony-faced Hundred Miles of Ice looked incredibly shocked.

“Take her somewhere safe first. We’ll talk about this after all of this is over. I’m sure there’s lots for us to talk about,” Ling Chen calmly said.

Hundred Miles of Ice and Winter of That Year looked at each other and gently breathed in. They didn’t say anything else as they brought the Sword Emperor towards the platform.

“Ling Tian, you’re finally back!”

Long Tian Yun’s cold voice sounded out from the back of the army.

“I’ve waited for you for a long time! I want you to see how your new city will be annihilated so that not even a speck of dust remains! Today, even if I can’t obtain the City Creation Token, I will completely destroy this city!” Long Tian Yun’s voice was filled with savageness and madness. The memory of Ling Chen gripping his neck with his bloody hands had left him with a great trauma, and he now had a deep-rooted fear towards Ling Chen. Only by defeating him and killing him could he get rid of this trauma! Otherwise, it would affect him for the rest of his life.

Long Tian Yun personally gave the order as he yelled, “Brave

warriors, we've already cleared out all obstacles, and victory is right in front of us. There is no longer anyone who can stop all of you. Let alone a single Ling Tian, even a hundred, or even ten thousand Ling Tians would not be able to stop you. Together with you are 4 million brothers and sisters! Charge!!"

After Long Tian Yun's command, the other leaders also gave the command to attack at full force. Although they completely feared Ling Tian, they had no other choice. In an instant, the silent army once again became filled with life as they gave roars that seemed to shake the earth and deafen those who heard them.

From above, the large army seemed to stretch as far as the eye could see, and Ling Tian, standing by himself, almost could not be seen in comparison.

"Is he really going to try to stop them?" Skyfall asked as he frowned. "And from how you look... it looks like you think he can stop them! He's not facing a few thousand, or tens of thousands of players, but 4 million players! Ling Tian is indeed ridiculously strong – I would believe it if you said he was going to fight with them for a day and a night. However, how can he stop them from attacking the city by themselves? Even if he kills 100 people every second, that sort of attack will simply be like tickling to them. How could he stop such a massive force from advancing?"

"I believe that he can do it." Yun Meng Xin replied without giving any sort of answer.

"Even if other people can't do it, big brother Ling Tian definitely can do it! Because he's big brother Ling Tian, there's nothing he

cannot do!” Xiao Qi’s words were incredibly earnest.

“I believe in him too.” Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled.

“Just wait and see,” Xiao Qiu Feng calmly said as he walked over to stand beside Skyfall.

Very few people could face a thousand players by themselves, and a single person facing millions of players... this was simply impossible. Who could face millions of players by themselves? Who would even try to stop millions of players by themselves? And yet, this sort of scene was unfolding in front of the new city. Watching the attackers come closer and closer, Ling Chen’s eyes narrowed as he muttered, “Xi Ling, burn them to your heart’s delight!”

Ling Chen’s body flashed as he seemed to turn into a streak of light and dove into the army. He was simply too fast, and the attacking players only saw a blur as a deathly wind blew towards them.

Boundless Desolation!

Within the pitiful cries, more than a hundred players were blasted into the air, and 2 empty areas appeared within the densely-packed ranks of the attacking forces. At the same time, a piercing bird’s cry sounded out from above as boundless flames descended from the sky, forming a sea of flames.

Chapter 591 – Slaughter (2)

In terms of individual fighting and self-protection abilities, Ling Chen was superior to Xi Ling. However, in terms of crowd fighting, even 10 Ling Chens would not be able to compare to Xi Ling.

The reborn Xi Ling's [Heaven-Burning Flames] is much stronger than before. The instant it was cast, the entire sky was dyed a crimson red colour. The firestorm enveloped an area with a diameter of 400 metres, devouring nearly 50,000 attacking players.

The crimson red flames elegantly burned while the 50,000 attacking players screamed in pain. However, they could only let out a single scream before they fell, becoming charred corpses.

Outside of the Heaven-Burning Flames, the other players were scared witless. They continuously tried to scramble away from the flames, regardless of which way they were supposed to be attacking. Their eyes widened as they stared dumbly at the corpses of their comrades burning. Suddenly, a bird's cry sounded out from above as more flames of despair descended from the sky.

After Xi Ling's [Wild Flames] were upgraded to [Heaven-Burning Flames], no matter if it was the strength or AOE, it was now comparable to all of Ling Chen's ultimate skills, and yet it had a cooldown time of merely 5 seconds. On this battlefield, in which the players were gathered incredibly densely, the [Heaven-Burning Flames] was like a terrifying meat-grinder. Every time it was released, it would sweep thousands if not tens of thousands of players into the sea of flames. Xi Ling was so powerful that she

could insta-kill Lord Bosses of a similar level, much less these normal players. Without a doubt, any players that so much as touched Xi Ling's flames were instantly killed without having the opportunity to even struggle.

Heaven-Burning Flames, Phoenix Arrow, and Vermillion Judgment were the 3 main attacks that Xi Ling continuously used, turning the area in front of the new city into an ever-burning sea of flames. The sky remained a deep red colour, and the attacking players continuously screamed and howled, the attackers suffering countless casualties every second.

Since Ling Tian had attacked... no, more precisely, since Xi Ling had started attacking, it was a one-sided slaughter. Many of the players who were far away were suddenly killed by flames that had descended from the sky without even knowing what had happened or how they had died. After Ling Tian had released a [Extinguishing The Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] at the beginning to attract everyone's attention and then used 2 [Boundless Desolations], he had not attacked since... this was because before he could even attack, the enemies in front had already been annihilated by Xi Ling... he had rushed forwards towards more enemies, but before he had even come close, Xi Ling's Heaven-Burning Flames had annihilated the 50 metres of players in front of him. Phoenix Arrows even caused players who were 200 metres away to cry out as they died.

With Xi Ling's attack efficacy, unless she stopped, it would be impossible for Ling Chen to kill even a single player.

As such, Ling Chen could only stop attacking and grin as he

watched Xi Ling's stunning performance. He couldn't help but think back... back then, he never had to kill monsters to gain EXP because as soon as Xi Ling attacked, she would kill all of the monsters in the area, not giving him a chance to even attack. Now that Xi Ling was back... it seemed that history would repeat itself.

"Wow! Xi Ling is indeed Xi Ling. Even though she has become a pet, she is still so powerful!" Xiao Qi excitedly jumped up and down. She knew about Xi Ling's background, and had seen Xi Ling being reborn by the Vermillion Bird's flames.

"This is no goddamn pet... even as a final boss, it would be too OP." Judging Sky and Against the Sky's mouths fell wide open as they stared.

"Ling Tian, Xi Ling, we'll leave everything to you. Please do your best." Yun Meng Xin softly said as she clasped her hands together.

Elsewhere, the leaders and bosses of the large guilds felt as if their eyes were going to pop out, and their mouths and stomachs felt as if they were filled with cold air. That ridiculously beautiful bird was an insane killing machine. In less than half a minute, it had killed tens of thousands of players. What's more, it was flying 50 metres above the ground, so even Archer professions were unable to hit it. However, if they tried to use flying-type pets to approach it... they would definitely be incinerated before they even came close.

Long Tian Yun's eyes looked as if they were shooting out flames. Ling Chen was already terrifying enough, now he had to deal with his pets who were even more overpowered than he was. This

caused Long Tian Yun to immediately feel scared as well as jealous. With this sort of situation, no matter how many people they had, they would be unable to kill Ling Tian. Long Tian Yun held up his communication device as he roared, “All teams disperse; extend the attack line to 3 kilometres! Ignore Ling Tian and that bird! Attack the new city at full force!”

After Long Tian Yun gave the order, the densely packed ranks of the attacking forces started to spread out, soon forming a square-looking formation. This change caused the faces of Li Xiao Xue and the others to fall.

“Crap,” Yun Feng’s face darkened. “Before, dispersing like this while fighting against the Skyfall Dynasty would have been incredibly stupid. However, right now... the Skyfall Dynasty and Battle Alliance have been cleared out, and only Ling Tian is there to defend. Adding on us, there are less than 10 people defending. How can we stop them in such a formation?”

“The army dispersing will reduce the efficiency of Xi Ling’s attacks. With them spread out like this, even with the range and AOE of Xi Ling’s attacks... unless there are 30 or so Xi Lings, it’ll be impossible to stop them. No matter how tough a stone is, it’ll only be able to stop a narrow flow of water; it’s impossible for a stone to stop a flow of water as wide as a river,” Li Xiao Xue said as she frowned. “However, we can only wait and see what Ling Tian will do... I’m sure he won’t disappoint us.”

“Defend? How is he going to defend? Can he make thousands or tens of thousands of clones of himself?” Skyfall anxiously asked.

Ling Chen also noticed the change immediately and frowned.

Currently, out of his attack skills, the skill with the largest AOE was [Moon Sacrifice] and then [Extinguishing The Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest]. However, even with Moon Sacrifice, he could only cover 500 metres. Facing the attacking force that was continuously spreading out, he would only be able to stop them for a short while. Moreover, if he defended against the middle, he would have to give up on the 2 sides; if he defended against one side, he would be giving up on the middle and the other side. If he blocked one place, the players elsewhere would quickly break through the wall of vines and reach the new city. Once that happened, there would be nothing that he could do... because Xi Ling's Rootless Flames contained a Destruction effect. If she used them recklessly, she would not only incinerate the attacking players, but also the new city!

Given enough time, Ling Chen was 100% certain that he could kill all of these attacking players without being harmed at all. However, this was completely different to stopping these people from attacking the new city.

The easiest way out of this situation would be to ask Xi Ling to use the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, which would kill everyone here. However, Xi Ling had severe restrictions, and although using it wouldn't kill her like before, it would reduce her maximum HP and level.

In that case...

"Snow Cherry, take me up!"

Snow Cherry rose into the air as high as she could go. The attacking forces continuously spread out until the attack line was 3 kilometres wide. They then started to charge towards the new city. The only thing that could stop them was Xi Ling in front of them. Not a single player could approach the 200 metres around Xi Ling and survive. However, that was only 200 metres, which was less than one tenth of their attack line. Although Xi Ling's attacks had a large range and AOE, she definitely couldn't stop an attack line that was 3 kilometres long.

The attacking forces came closer and closer, and very soon, they were less than 20-30 metres away from the wall of vines. In a few seconds, they would start attacking the wall of vines. Once that was destroyed, there would be essentially nothing standing in their way. Long Tian Yun's wild laughter sounded out from the back of the army, "Hahahaha, Ling Tian, prepare to watch this new city be crushed to dust!"

Ling Chen hovered in the air for a while as he watched the attacking forces come closer and closer. He could hear Long Tian Yun's arrogant laughter as well as Yun Meng Xin's anxious cries.

You forced me to do this...

Just as the attacking players were about to reach the wall of vines, Ling Chen's narrowed eyes fully opened as he raised his right hand, his palm facing the sky as a purple light erupted around his body.

“Nirvana Lightning!”

Crack!!!

Ling Chen’s roar seemed to break through the heavens, and as the lightning appeared around him, the sound of lightning sounded out from the sky. Everyone subconsciously looked up and found that the sky, which had been dyed red by Xi Ling’s flames, had suddenly become a dark purple colour as countless purple bolts of lightning shot down!

Crack! Crack! Crack! Crack! Crack...

Lightning was often seen in the real world, and there were also countless Lightning Mages within the virtual world. However, no one had ever seen such monstrous lightning before. The lightning seemed to cover the sky, and was extremely bright. It furiously descended towards different areas in the battlefield, and each lightning bolt brought about an explosion, killing hundreds of players.

The lightning fell at random intervals and at random places, but the range that they covered was simply terrifying. With Ling Chen at the centre, the lightning bolts spread out for 4 kilometres, continuously descending. Since the first bolt of lightning had descended to when the last explosion had sounded out, less than 5 seconds had passed. And yet, thousands of lightning bolts had descended, killing nearly 100,000 players.

This was the first time Ling Chen had used the power of the

Thunder God's Bulwark. The Thunder God's Bulwark could absorb Lightning and allow him to use it freely. Back then, when the White Tiger had given him the Thunder God's Bulwark, he had also given him part of the White Tiger's source energy. Moreover, Ling Chen had absorbed quite a lot of lightning within the Thunder God Barrier. However, he hadn't expected the effects to be so powerful.

The lightning that he had just released had used up less than 5% of the lightning stored within the Thunder God's Bulwark!

Ling Chen smirked as his body was once again covered with purple light. The sound of lightning once again sounded out as thousands of lightning bolts descended again.

Crack! Crack! Crack! Boom! Boom!

After a pause of a few seconds, the second wave of lightning descended. It was even more ferocious than the first wave. The sky was filled with countless lightning maelstroms that mercilessly shot down purple lightning. The explosions caused by the lightning were simply deafening, drowning out the cries of terror and pain from countless players. Under the might of the god of nature, they could only run around in terror and howl, sounding like millions of wolves.

After the second wave was the third wave, followed by a fourth wave, then a fifth wave... a sixth wave...

The grassy plains in front of the new city was turned into a

lightning purgatory. Every second, the light from the lightning of destruction would flash, looking like countless ferocious beasts that mercilessly devoured masses of lives. As Ling Chen continuously released the [Nirvana Lightning], the lightning within the Thunder God's Bulwark was quickly depleted. After the ninth wave, only about half of the lightning was remaining, and the lightning finally stopped descending.

After the ninth wave of [Nirvana Lightning] that spanned a whole 4 kilometres, there were less than 20% of players remaining within the 4 kilometres in front of the new city. The survivors were so terrified that they couldn't even walk anymore, and those who had reached the wall of vines with great difficulty had forgotten how to even attack. Their lips were ashen and their faces were paled as they trembled on the ground, not daring to even move. Their eyes were wide as they stared up at the sky, afraid that a bolt of lightning would descend and strike their heads.

After the lightning stopped, a terrifying silence filled the land. No matter if it was the attackers or the defenders, everyone held the breathes, staring at Ling Chen as if they had become stone... in their eyes, although he was a human on the outside and was a player, he could not be called a human anymore... he was a demon, a demon god!

Below, Long Tian Yun's face was incredibly red, his entire body filled with fury. He felt a surging within his chest that made him feel like vomiting up blood, and he was unable to speak a full sentence. His hands continuously trembled, as if he was having a convulsion, and he looked as if he had just been violated by 10 burly men. There was no doubt as to why he was like this – that terrifying lightning had just annihilated 1 million players... a

whole 1 million players!!

The overwhelming numbers advantage they had had filled him with immense confidence. He didn't doubt that Ling Tian was powerful, but he was confident that even if there were 1,000 Ling Tians, they would not be able to kill these 4 million players before they destroyed the new city.

However, even if they had twice their numbers, they could afford to lose 1 million players.

Chapter 592 – Deity Curse!

Long Tian Yun's reaction was extremely unsightly, and the other leaders almost fell over in shock.

Judging Sky's eyes opened wide as he muttered, "This... This is impossible right... someone tell me that I'm dreaming... ah!!! Why the hell did you pinch me?"

"I'm helping you confirm whether this is a dream. Looks like it isn't," Against The Sky innocently shook the hand that had been slapped away by Judging Sky.

"Even the legendary Lightning Forbidden Curse wouldn't be so powerful, right? And yet, Ling Tian has such a terrifying lightning attack... this... this is unbelievable," Yun Feng said, feeling stunned.

Let alone other people, even Ling Chen himself was given a big fright by how powerful the Thunder God's Bulwark was. In these 9 short waves of lightning, he had killed over 1 million players! This was an absolutely terrifying number, however, thinking back to the fact that this power belonged to the guardian beast White Tiger, he understood why it was so powerful. After using about half of the lightning stored in the Thunder God's Bulwark, he finally stopped... since the Thunder God's Bulwark was so powerful, it would definitely play a great role in times of crisis. How could he use it all on these cannon fodder?

Moreover, there were simply too many attackers. Even if he used

up all of the lightning, he wouldn't be able to kill them all.

Moreover, defeating these attacking players didn't necessarily mean killing them all.

After the 9 waves of Nirvana Lightning, 99% of the attacking players were scared out of their wits, and the remaining 1% barely had their minds intact. No one dared to take a single step in the direction of the new city, temporarily resolving the crisis. Seeing this opportunity, Ling Chen stopped attacking and Snow Cherry charged forwards like a meteor, locking onto Long Tian Yun and the other leaders.

In order for ease of communication, Long Tian Yun and the other leaders were at the same place, surrounded by many layers of elites.

"Ling Tian!! Ling Tian's coming!!"

Panicked cries sounded out from the players around the leaders. The terrifying lightning attacks had made them completely terrified, and to them, Ling Tian's name became a synonym for the devil. Upon seeing him charge over, all of them felt as if their souls were scattering, and the entire area was sent into a frenzy. The players all shakily raised their weapons, pointing them towards Ling Chen... however, given the height at which Ling Chen was flying, they could not hit him at all and could only watch as he came closer.

Long Tian Yun looked up and detected Ling Tian's gaze, causing

his heart to tremble. The other leaders' faces all fell. Before they could even think of what to do, a white light flashed above them as Ling Tian, who was a hundred metres away, suddenly appeared above them while looking down at them.

"I'll give you a final chance..." Ling Chen's voice was domineering and emotionless like he was a king giving his prisoners of war an opportunity to live, "Take your people and screw off and I'll pretend none of this happened. Otherwise..."

The final word was spoken extremely coldly and sinisterly, causing everyone who heard it to feel as if a demon's sharp teeth were on their necks. After Ling Chen stopped speaking, every one of them felt his gaze sweep across them like an icy blade being dragged across their bodies, causing shivers to run through their bodies.

"Heheh, hahahaha..." Long Tian Yun started to laugh, his laughter filled with darkness, madness and savageness. After that night at the Long family's residence, he knew that the enmity between him and Ling Tian would never be resolved. The only option he had was to kill Ling Tian; no matter what, he could never compromise or ask for peace. "Ling Tian, are you scared? That lightning you let out was the last trick up your sleeve, right? You used your lightning to kill 1 million players, but we still have 3 million! With enough time, we'll immediately reassemble. When that happens, do you think you'll be able to stop us? Keep dreaming!"

As soon as Long Tian Yun said this, the other leaders toughed up a little. The things Ling Tian had done in the East Ocean Continent

had completely shocked everyone, and they couldn't help but fear him. However, after coming so far, they could not turn back, nor were they willing to turn back. Moreover, although Ling Tian's lightning attack was incredibly shocking, they still had the advantage... how could Ling Tian block 3 million players? They didn't believe that Ling Tian could do such a thing again.

"The winner is the king and the loser is the bandit! Even if you kill us all, our Golden Age Alliance will never run away." Mo Gu Lin valiantly said as he took a step forwards.

Ling Chen's eyes narrowed as he looked at the other leaders before asking calmly, "Is that how you all feel as well?"

No one said anything, but no one turned to leave either.

"Very good," Ling Chen said. "Since it's like this, don't blame me for not giving you a chance. From now on even if you kneel down to beg for mercy, I'll make you regret appearing here for the rest of your lives!"

"Kneel?" Long Tian Yun reacted as if he had heard the funniest joke in the world. He tilted his head back as he roared with laughter, "In this lifetime, I've only had people kneeling down to me, and yet you want me to kneel down to you? Hahahaha..."

"Is that so?" Ling Chen also started to laugh in amusement as he mockingly looked at each of the leaders. A strange light flashed in his eyes as he locked on to Long Tian Yun and 24 other people who held the highest statuses... Ling Chen's Comprehension was

currently 25, so he could only choose 25 targets.

"Ding... the Libra Orb's effects have activated, [Deity Curse]'s cooldown time has been reset."

Immediately, all of the leaders reacted as if they had been struck by lightning and froze on the spot. They all looked up with their eyes wide open, staring at Ling Chen... their eyes started to flash, and soon they were filled with tears!

They were tears of excitement and joy, as if a long-lost son had found his father!

With a 'puchi', as everyone else watched with wide eyes, Long Tian Yun knelt down towards Ling Chen with his hands in front of him, prostrating himself in worship. He stared at Ling Chen through his tears, his expression and posture filled with sincerity.

"Ling Tian... you... you're so powerful and mighty; so heroic and amazing! You're definitely a representative from the heavens. You're the most amazing person in this world; no one can compare to you and your incredible holiness. I've offended you many times in the past and should receive divine punishment for my offences."

Long Tian Yun lay prostrate on the ground, his face full of worship and guilt. As he spoke, tears and snot ran down his face, looking as if he wished to crawl over and lick Ling Chen's feet.

The world instantly fell deathly silent.

Cang Yan was dumbfounded. All of the Yan Huang Alliance players were dumbfounded. The 3 Heavenly Kings were dumbfounded. Li Xiao Xue was dumbfounded. Yun Meng Xin was dumbfounded. Xiao Qi's mouth was wide open. Xiao Qiu Feng's eyes bulged. Yun Feng's jaw dropped to the ground... all of the attacking players stared at Long Tian Yun as their minds exploded.

The Long family's sole heir, the Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance, was a majestic figure, whether in real life or in the virtual world. No one could compare to him, and yet he had kneeled to Ling Tian, someone he hated irreconcilably! His words were filled with worship and adoration, making it difficult for everyone to believe their ears.

Puchi!

Puchi!

Puchi!

.....

Even more knees fell to the ground. It was as if all of the other leaders had planned to kneel down together and dropped down simultaneously. The sound was so loud that it was as if they were trying to bury their knees in the ground. 24 people with the most power in the virtual world looked as if they had seen God's trusted apostle, looking up at Ling Chen with tears streaking down their faces.

“Ling Tian, I never thought that I’d be able to witness your glory; this is the greatest moment of my life. You’re as bright as the dawn in the darkness, warmly nurturing my soul and illuminating my body and future. You’re even more resplendent than the stars. You are holier and purer than the moon and even brighter than the sun…”

“Wuu… Wuu… I’m a beast who’s worse than a dog or a pig; I offended you time and time again. My crimes are incredibly grievous, and I deserve death. I can’t even forgive myself, wuuu….” Black Flames Wild Gale howled as he smacked himself.

“Glorious Ling Tian, being able to kneel down to you is my great fortune! To be able to worship you at such close distance makes me feel like I can die without any regrets. Even if I die immediately, it’ll be worth it, wuu… I’m so… moved… so moved…”

“Ling Tian, please punish me as you wish. I actually tried to attack the city you’re protecting; this is an unforgivable sin. I’m scum and trash. I’m worse than animals. Please punish me, otherwise I’ll forever be buried in my guilt…”

……

……

The 25 leaders, including Long Tian Yun, were kneeling around Ling Chen, kowtowing and worshipping him with tears and snot running down their faces. Some shouted out all the phrases of

praise and admiration they knew, and they seemed incredibly emotional. Others lowered their heads and beat their chests, condemning and cursing themselves for the things that they had done to Ling Tian. While others slapped themselves, some even took out their weapons, wanting to kill themselves...

3 million pairs of eyes stared at this scene directly... hundreds of millions of Chinese players watched the broadcast... 25 of the players with the most power and influence, including the Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master...

Had gone crazy!

They felt as if the entire world had gone crazy!

Chapter 593 – Irreconcilable Hatred Curse

The Feng Chen Curses were only good for screwing people over and tricking them. They had no real uses – that was what Ling Chen had originally thought about them. However, this view had greatly changed over time. The might of the Feng Chen Curses had been displayed through various applications. The Cherry Blossom God Representative was incredibly powerful – if Ling Chen was to directly fight against her, even 10 of him would not be enough to deal with her, and yet, under the Utter Despair Curse and Soulstealing Curse, she had become Ling Chen's pet.

The Ice Demon Beast was incredibly powerful, and yet she had committed suicide because of the Utter Despair Curse.

As for these normal players, the Feng Chen Curses were even more effective against them. 1 million troops? They were nothing in front of the Feng Chen Curses.

This was the first time Ling Chen had used the Deity Curse. He looked down at the leaders kowtowing and worshipping him, feeling incredibly delighted. He grinned as he looked at Long Tian Yun and said arrogantly, "Long Tian Yun, now you know that you're trash and scum, right?"

Trash and scum... no one had ever dared to call Long Tian Yun these things before. Even the Gu family's 3 brothers didn't dare to say such a thing. To humiliate him like this, no matter how large their backing was, Long Tian Yun would definitely make it so that they would not be able to live within China anymore. However, Long Tian Yun's body froze as he lowered his head and hurriedly

replied, “Yes… Yes… In front of you, I’m merely trash and scum. Please forgive me…”

Crash… countless glasses fell to the ground.

Upon hearing Long Tian Yun say this sort of thing, Flame Shadow and Cang Yan felt as if they had been struck by lightning. Flame Shadow scrambled over as he hollered, “Young master! Young master, what happened to you? How could you say such things? Did he cast some sort of witchcraft on you? Young master, please wake up!”

Just as he finished yelling, Long Tian Yun suddenly turned to look at him, his eyes filled with anger, killing intent and coldness. “Flame Shadow! I’ll say whatever the hell I want to; what gives you the right to tell me what to say? Piss off, and if you dare to continue to utter nonsense, I’ll rip apart your mouth!”

That expression, aura, tone and attitude were undoubtedly Long Tian Yun’s. It didn’t look like he was being forced to do this at all. Flame Shadow’s mouth dropped open as his face paled, not daring to say anything. Long Tian Yun turned and when he faced Ling Chen again, his expression became incredibly excited and emotional, as if he had met his long-lost father.

“And what about all of you?” Ling Chen looked to the other leaders.

“Yes, yes, yes… we’re all trash and scum… ah no, we’re worse than trash. Please… a person of great moral stature doesn’t quibble

with those of lower moral stature. Please forgive us and give us a chance to change our ways. We definitely won't do such stupid things again."

"I'm a bastard; I'm worse than pigs or dogs. I'm the worst scum..."

"No, no! That's me... I'm the worst scum; I've commit such blasphemy... I don't have any face to continue living in this world anymore."

"Ling Tian, I was wrong. I was deranged and am an imbecile, wuu... as long as you forgive me, I'm willing to use the rest of my life to atone for my sins."

25 guild leaders yelled out in mournful voices, crying pathetically. Each of them fought to curse themselves more, their tears of repentance formed great puddles on the ground.

The grassy plains fell completely silent, and only sobbing and self-deprecating cursing could be heard.

"Is that so?" Ling Chen immediately released a second Deity Curse as he yelled, "Since you know you're in the wrong, tell these people to piss off!!"

As if they had heard an imperial edict, the leaders kneeling on the ground trembled as they desperately grabbed their communication devices and yelled their orders into them.

“Yan Huang Alliance, heed my orders… everyone who’s still here get the hell out of here! Piss off as far as possible right away! If I see anyone here within 5 minutes, I’ll destroy his entire family!” Long Tian Yun roared with a dark expression.

“Hear that? All of you scram! Not a single one of you is to stay! Go!”

“… I’ll give you all 5 seconds to all return to the Black Flames Alliance’s headquarters… what are you all standing around for? Hurry up and piss off!”

“All troops retreat! Got it?”

……

The yells from 25 leaders filled half the grassy plains, and this was the strictest order that all of the troops had heard. Looking at the high and mighty figures kneeling subserviently in front of Ling Tian, even kowtowing and weeping, all of the players felt that their entire alliance’s face had been completely trampled upon. Hearing these orders, looks of derision and condescension appeared on countless players’ faces. They simply couldn’t watch their leaders act so shamefully. Countless white lights flashed on the grassy plains. Within 10 seconds, the 3 million attacking players had all left. Only the 25 leaders were left kneeling on the grassing plains.

Upon seeing their players leave, they showed expressions of

satisfaction and relief as they looked up towards Ling Chen in the sky.

The grassy plains that had been filled with a sea of people was instantly vacated, and the people on the platform were dumbfounded. Skyfall, Against The Sky and Judging Sky grabbed the railings on the platform as they leaned forwards, their eyes larger than even a cow's.

"Am... Am I seeing things?" Skyfall whispered as he rubbed his eyes.

"We're definitely seeing things," Judging Sky replied as he sucked in a breath.

"Would anyone believe that we're not seeing things?" Against The Sky said as he stared.

"What's... going on?" Xiao Qiu Feng glanced at Yun Feng. He definitely didn't believe that the leaders of these guilds would be willing to kneel down to Ling Tian and act so shamefully. While Ling Tian is indeed ridiculously powerful, even if he was 10 times more powerful and could wipe out all of the attacking troops in a second, suppressing them to such an extent that they couldn't breathe just isn't possible... they would rather die.

"No idea, no idea at all," Yun Feng said as he shook his head.

"Feng... Chen... Curse."

Yun Meng Xin subconsciously muttered this, but Li Xiao Xue heard this with her acute senses and asked as she looked over, “Feng Chen Curse? What’s that?”

Yun Meng Xin smiled as she replied, “Ling Tian mentioned it to me before. He has a skill that can affect other people’s minds. Back then, I didn’t pay it much mind, but now I’ve seen just how powerful it is… we’ve gone through so much pain and effort to defend the new city until now, suffering countless casualties. In the end, we still would not have been able to protect the new city. And yet, he… without shedding any blood and with just a few words not only destroyed the other sides’ reputation, he also sent those 3 million players packing.”

“Ling Tian has such an ability?” Li Xiao Xue asked in shock. She turned and looked at the figure in the distance as she said, “I suddenly pity them. I’m sure that they’ll regret appearing here for the rest of their lives… moreover, based on my understanding towards Ling Tian, this is not his true revenge. The true revenge, their nightmares, has not yet begun.”

After the attacking players all left, the crisis of the new city was averted. Although Ling Chen and Xi Ling’s attacks were incredibly powerful, they could not do much in protecting the new city. What was truly useful was the Feng Chen Curse.

A single Feng Chen Curse sent 3 million players packing – in fact, it would have been just as effective against 30 million players. This was just how terrifying the Feng Chen Curses were for even the apex experts to be terrified of them.

With the crisis averted, Ling Chen didn't feel like watching these leaders continue to make fools out of themselves. The Deity Curse's time was also nearly up. Ling Chen tapped his chin as a sinister smile appeared on his face. He flicked a finger, cancelling the Deity Curse as he activated an Irreconcilable Hatred Curse.

The expressions of all the bosses and leaders froze. After the Deity Curse was cancelled and they thought back to what they just did, they felt incomparable shame. Logically speaking, they should have felt so angry towards Ling Chen that they wanted to rip him into shreds... that's right, they were furious to the extreme, and their eyes became red like those of a savage beast's. However, they were not glaring at Ling Chen. It was almost as if Ling Chen did not exist.

"Long Tian Yun!! You bastard!! I want to rip off your skin, tear your tendons, and rip you apart to feed the dogs!!!" Mo Gu Lin shrieked as he sprang towards Long Tian Yun, his hands gripping onto Long Tian Yun's neck. He then opened his mouth and bit his shoulder, causing Long Tian Yun to howl in pain.

"Black Flames Wild Gale! You dared to screw me over in poker last game! I'll friggin' kill you! I'll definitely kill you today!"

"Mo Gu Lin! Do you remember the 30 cents you owe me for ice cream from 28 years ago? You've owed me for 28 years, and I've hated you for 28 years. Today, you'll be paying it back with your life! Go die!!"

“Bastard! Why’s your wife prettier than my wife? If I don’t cut you into 8 pieces and grind your bones to dust, I’m not a human!!”

“You bastard!! I personally heard you saying that Mars Gravity isn’t handsome! You dare to say that Mars Gravity isn’t handsome? I’ll fight you to the death!!”

.....

25 leaders furiously fought each other like rabid dogs, using their hands, feet, and teeth... finally, they took out their weapons and started swinging them around. Their expressions were all extremely savage, their movements incredibly brutal. Their throats were all hoarse from yelling, as if everyone around them were their archenemies who could not be forgiven no matter what.

Chapter 594 – The World Fell Silent

“Yola, let’s go.” In the distance, the woman in red turned around, revealing a seductive figure.

“Go? To where?” Yola asked.

“It’s time for us to go back. You should know that there’s a time limit when crossing World Boundaries. Plus, there isn’t much for us to watch anymore,” the woman in red replied.

“Go back? But you spent so much effort finding him; aren’t you even going to meet him?” Yola walked over as she asked in confusion.

The woman in red pursed up her lips as she leisurely replied, “Indeed, I was quite eager to meet that bastard, but it seems that now is not the right time. It’s already been 3 times, and if I lose to him again… you should know that the consequences will be severe.”

Yola’s beautiful eyebrows were raised as she said in surprise and amusement, “Does that mean you don’t possess the confidence to beat him? No way? You’re already so strong, and I’m quite certain that you haven’t even shown your full strength to us yet.”

“Before, I possessed absolute confidence in defeating him because I possess within my hands an invincible power.” The woman in red lifted up her sleek, snow-white right hand. On her index finger, middle finger, and ring finger were red, yellow and blue rings,

respectively. “However, when he appeared, they reacted strangely, causing me to think of an interesting legend.”

“What legend?” Yola asked.

The woman in red’s expression became serious as she looked at the 3 rings and spoke slowly, “At the place where I obtained these rings, there were records stating that in the west and east of the Mystic Moon world, there were godly items left behind from the ancient times by True Gods. Because they were so powerful, although all of the True Gods disappeared and that era ended, they continued existing. The item in the west is my ‘Lachesis’, while the one in the east is called the ‘Lunar Scourge’.”

“Lunar Scourge?” Yola repeated.

“The Lachesis is incredibly arrogant, and I’m currently unable to wield even 10% of its true power. The only thing that could cause it to have such a reaction is something of the same level. The only thing in this world of the same level is another godly item.”

“You’re that… that item… is on him?” Yola asked in a low voice.

“That should be the case,” the woman in red wrapped her arms around her bountiful breasts as she said in frustration. “That’s why I don’t possess absolute certainty in beating him. While I’m unable to completely control this item’s power, he might have already completely controlled his item. Aiya, I really hate that bastard.”

“Maybe he really is your greatest rival,” Yola said as she looked at Ling Tian in the distance with amusement.

“I don’t want to lose that bet, so I’m going to wait until I can fully control Lachesis before confronting him.”

The woman in red spread apart her slim and long fingers. The yellow ring on her middle finger let out a warm yellow light, covering her and Yola. By the time the light had disappeared, the two of them were also gone.

The battle royale between the 25 leaders gradually drew to a close. The battle strength of the leaders was on a spectrum of 2 extremes: on one end of the spectrum, the leaders never participated in battle and only managed the guild. These sorts of leaders died after being hit a few times. The other type focused on their personal strength. With their status and resources, they had the best equipment and opportunities, making themselves much stronger than normal players. As such, those who did not have any battle power quickly died, leaving behind 10 or so experts who were covered with splendorous equipment and releasing magnificent skills...

“Ling Chen, why are they fighting amongst themselves?” Shadissika asked as she leaned against Ling Chen’s chest. Her incredibly cute face was filled with curiosity as she smiled.

“Hmm... it’s a bit complicated.” Ling Chen rubbed his nose as he pointed towards the people below them as he started to explain, “That man in yellow owed the man in black 30 cents from 28 years ago... and that man in green clothes thinks that the man in white

has bad taste in clothes... that man in purple thinks the man in red is too ugly... the man in grey thinks the man in cyan's name is too unpleasant... so they all started fighting... hmm the worst one is the one who said that Mars Gravity isn't handsome! That guy deserves to die!"

"Hahaha..." Shadissika started laughing, her face looking like a blooming beautiful flower. She looked up as she suddenly spoke, "Ling Chen, can I ask you a question? You need to answer seriously, because the answer is very important to me."

Another 5 or 6 people fell, and there were 6 people remaining. Their killing intent, savageness, rage, and roars were no weaker than before. Ling Chen met Shadissika's eyes as he asked, "What is it?"

"I met Ling Chen in that snow-white world. From then until now, we've known each other for less than a day." Shadissika looked into Ling Chen's eyes and spoke slowly, looking incredibly earnest. Her eyes looked so bright that even the stars in the night sky would seem dim in comparison.

"Ling Chen saved me and took me out from that place, so it should be me repaying Ling Chen and doing things for Ling Chen... but, but... I haven't done anything for Ling Chen... on that mountain, when we encountered that scary leopard, why did you tell the little fox to escape with me while you stayed back by yourself? And when you finally avoided it, why did you attract its attention when it was going to attack us... why would you protect me? You evidently couldn't beat it, so wasn't that just committing suicide? After you saved me, it should be me repaying you, so why

do you treat me so well to the point that you would give up your own life?”

Shadissika’s words caused Ling Chen to pause in surprise. As a man, protecting a delicate girl was something that he subconsciously felt that he should do. As a young girl, being protected by a man was something normal, and yet Shadissika was asking this question about something that everyone would think was extremely normal.

Ling Chen stroked Shadissika’s arm as he smiled and replied, “Because I brought Sha Sha out from that mysterious world, so it’s my responsibility to protect Sha Sha. Moreover, Sha Sha’s a girl while I’m a man. It’s a man’s duty to protect girls. Is that answer good enough?”

Shadissika’s eyes stared at him, looking like there was something trembling within them. She then relaxed and rested her head against Ling Chen’s chest as she softly spoke, “Ling Chen will you continue to protect me like you did today? I mean… until… a long time… a long, long time…”

Shadissika’s voice became as soft as the wind, containing some sort of hidden meaning that Ling Chen couldn’t decipher. These words made Ling Chen think of the words Shui Ruo had spoken into his ears the first time they had kissed. As those memories flashed in his mind, he couldn’t help but reply, “of course… until the day I die…”

Shadissika happily closed her eyes as she continued to lean against his chest, a gentle and satisfied smile on her face. Wouldn’t

it be great if this sort of heart-warming feeling and blissful feeling would last forever…

However, all of this was temporary, like a bubble. Although it was beautiful, it wouldn't last forever… it would soon disappear without a trace.

I've chosen you… what… should I do…

"Arghhh!"

As cries sounded out, Long Tian Yun and Black Flames Wild Gale fell. Although they lay on the ground, their eyes were still filled with flames of fury, as if they were unreconciled with their deaths. Finally, only a single person was left – the Alliance Master of the Golden Age Alliance, Mo Gu Lin. He was in the top 5 in the Earth Rankings and was the strongest out of all the leaders.

By now, the Irreconcilable Hatred Curse's effects had ended. Mo Gu Lin regained his normal state of mind, and his entire body trembled. Seeing the corpses around him, his face became incredibly pale as his entire body erupted into cold sweat. His pupils rapidly dilated and contracted as if he had just experienced a terrifying nightmare. He looked up as his body trembled and he stumbled backwards, "Ling Tian… you… you…"

Thinking to the shameful display from before, his mind buzzed. He felt like he was going to faint.

“Congratulations Alliance Master of the Golden Age Alliance, you’ve won this dogfight. You’re truly invincible and awe-inspiring. However, after watching that interesting performance, I don’t want to see your ugly faces anymore…” Ling Chen’s tone suddenly became cold, “So it’s time you also piss off.”

Ling Chen had never had any conflict with the Golden Age Alliance before, but because they had attacked the new city out of greed, he didn’t show any courtesy to Mo Gu Lin. He looked down and squeezed Shadissika’s small hand as he said, “Sha Sha, do you want to see what it’s like when a cat meets something it’s scared of?”

“Sure, sure!” Shadissika became quite excited.

Ling Chen smirked as he looked to Mo Gu Lin and released a [Scaredy Cat Curse].

“Ling… Ling Tian, what did you do to us… ahh!!”

Mo Gu Lin, who had stretched out his hand to point at Ling Chen, suddenly cried out in shock as his face twitched and trembled. Following this, his entire body, including his hands and the weapon held within them, started to shake. His eyes widened as he was filled with extreme fear… as if he had seen the most terrifying thing in the world.

“Hmm? What did you just say?” Ling Chen sinisterly asked as his eyes narrowed.

Mo Gu Lin reacted as if he had heard the devil's voice. He screamed in fear as he scrambled backwards, even losing his balance and falling on his bottom. The weapon in his hands fell to the ground with a loud clang. Mo Gu Lin stared at Ling Chen in terror and couldn't even get up. He didn't even bother to pick up the Gold grade weapon, which he viewed to be as precious as his life, as he did his best to move backwards as he trembled. His eyes looked as if they were going to burst from their sockets when he screamed hysterically, "Don't... Don't come over here... Don't come over here!!!"

Mo Gu Lin's screams were filled with utter terror, and he somehow mustered up enough strength to crawl away... he looked like a dog as he scrambled away.

The world finally fell silent.

Chapter 595 – Long-Awaited Reunion

“This scene reminds me of what happened to that number 3 expert in the East Ocean Continent, Cruelty Ichinawa,” Li Xiao Xue said in a low voice. “Meng Xin, I guess that this is also one of those ‘Feng Chen Curses’ that you mentioned earlier.”

“It should be,” Yun Meng Xin replied as she nodded with a smile on her face. The crisis had been averted, and their hopeless situation had been completely turned upside down. Within her heart, she felt as if the dark clouds had been dispelled, revealing the beautiful sky. Looking at Ling Tian, who was flying towards them, her beautiful eyes became slightly moist as she muttered, “This is great… this is great…”

The Yan Huang Alliance and all of the other factions had left, but no one could accept how this had happened. Everyone on the platform felt as if their minds had taken a severe blow. After watching the 25 leaders fight like mad and then watching Mo Gu Lin run off like a frightened dog, they simply couldn’t believe their eyes… they would rather believe they were watching some kind of movie.

“Thank goodness… we didn’t become enemies with Ling Tian…” Skyfall said.

Against The Sky and Judging Sky rapidly nodded.

“Luckily, we listened to big sister and laid in wait this entire time, waiting for an opportunity. Otherwise…” Thinking to what

had befallen even the Yan Huang Alliance, Skyfall felt cold sweat trickle down his body.

Against The Sky and Judging Sky once again rapidly nodded.

“Great! Great! Great!” At this moment, Yun Feng finally recovered and started cheering, and almost started jumping up and down in excitement, “3 uncles, Ol’ Xiao, Meng Xin, Qi Qi, big sister Bing Yao, big miss Li... and Winter and Hundred Miles, we won! We won!!”

“That’s right, we won; we created an unbelievable miracle.” Li Xiao Xue turned and smiled. Within her heart, this was truly a miraculous outcome. Moreover, this miracle wasn’t solely because of Ling Tian-they had somehow persisted until the saviour had arrived.

“Heh!” The 3 Heavenly Kings also smiled. Although the battle had been incredibly tough and harsh, losing all of their players, they couldn’t help but feel delighted at such an outcome. Moreover, their Skyfall Dynasty had made a great contribution to the survival of this new city.

“Big miss Li is correct, this was an unbelievable miracle.” Even Xiao Qiu Feng’s stony face relaxed.

“That Ling Tian is stupidly overpowered.” With Winter of That Year’s personality, everyone thought that he would start yelling and jumping. However, he had a complicated expression on his face as he continuously stared at Ling Chen.

Hundred Miles of Ice was also the same.

“Hmph! No he’s not; big brother Ling Tian has always been really strong! He’s the strongest person in the world!” Xiao Qi harrumphed in dissatisfaction before she ran to the edge of the platform as she jumped and waved at Ling Chen and Xi Ling, “Big brother Ling Tian! Big brother Ling Tian! Eh?”

Xiao Qi’s gave fell towards Ling Chen’s chest… after Ling Chen appeared, he had faced the vast attacking forces, so his back had been facing them the entire time. As such, none of them saw Shadissika. At this moment, as Ling Chen came closer, they found that there was a little girl sitting in front of Ling Chen… she was completely white as if she was made of snow.

“Who is that girl?” Li Xiao Xue asked Yun Meng Xin beside her.

Yun Meng Xin shook her head, “I don’t know; I’ve never seen her before either.”

A gentle wind blew over, and as Snow Cherry flew at her fastest speed, Ling Chen quickly arrived at the platform. Looking at the emotional and passionate gazes, he couldn’t help but smile. He hugged Shadissika as he jumped off from Snow Cherry’s back and landed on the platform.

“Big brother Ling Tian!” Xiao Qi leapt over with tears in her eyes.

“Welcome back, Ling Tian,” Yun Meng Xin smiled gently.

“Long time no see; you’ve finally remembered to come back?” Li Xiao Xue smiled, with a slight hint of blame.

“Ling Tian! You were so cool just then! How the hell did you do that?” Light seemed to shine out of Yun Feng’s eyes.

Xiao Qiu Feng nodded towards him and then looked at Xiao Qi.

Xiao Qi had leapt towards him and hugged him tightly. She couldn’t stop her tears of joy from flowing out. She happily jumped up and down as she hugged Ling Chen, “Great, great, I finally get to see big brother Ling Tian again. I thought… wuu… I thought I would never be able to see you again… wuu…”

“Haha!” Ling Chen smiled as he patted Xiao Qi’s shoulders. “Don’t be silly; we’ve only separated for a short while to do the things we need to do. How could we never see each other again?” He held Xiao QI’s arms as he looked at her tear-stained face and said softly, “I’m very happy… that you’ve returned safely.”

Xiao Qi vigorously wiped away her tears as she smiled. Seeing how cute she was, no one would think that she was the ‘Flame Empress’ who had annihilated 2 million players in a single attack. “I have such a good big brother and dad, as well as good sisters and my favourite big brother Ling Tian. Of course I’d return safely. In future, nothing will happen to me either.”

Ling Chen smiled. Back then, he had told Xiao Qi to go to the Lava Purgatory as he felt that there was a slight hope for her. And now, although Xiao Qi should have been dead by now, she was standing here, making him feel like a huge weight had been taken off his heart.

“Aiya, can’t you two be lovey-dovey another time? You’re ignoring all of this,” Li Xiao Xue said with an expression of mock-sadness.

Xiao Qi’s face became red and she let go of Ling Chen and returned to Yun Meng Xin’s side. Ling Chen’s gaze fell on each person as he spoke, “I’m sorry I came late. Meng Xin, Xiao Xue, you must have gone through a lot. Yun Feng, Alliance Master Xiao, thank you for your assistance.”

“No need to thank me, no need at all. Meng Xin’s my little sister, after all,” Yun Feng hurriedly said.

“Same goes for me,” Xiao Qiu Feng said.

“And these 3 people should be the Skyfall Dynasty’s 3 Heavenly Kings, right? Who are these 2 people?” After looking at the 3 Heavenly Kings, Ling Chen’s gaze fell on Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice. Ling Chen was quite surprised that the 3 Heavenly Kings would be here-their presence here meant that they had helped defend the new city, but after thinking about it, Ling Chen simply couldn’t think of why they would do that.

“Haha, Ling Tian this should be the second time we’ve met and

the first time we've spoken." Skyfall said as he laughed. "I'm Skyfall, you can directly call me by my name. These two are my little brothers, Against The Sky and Judging Sky."

"I'm called Winter of That Year and this is my boss, Hundred Miles of Ice." Winter of That Year spoke, a strangeness in his voice as he continued to stare at Ling Chen.

Ling Chen's gaze lingered on Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice for a while longer before nodding.

"Qi Qi's back, Su Su's back, and now you're back as well." Yun Meng Xin spoke in a soft voice, her gaze joyful, "I hope that now that all of you are back... you won't leave again. Especially you, Ling Tian. Although Heart's Dream has been destroyed, as long as we're still here, Heart's Dream still exists. Moreover, you've always been the soul of Heart's Dream... unless one day you're unwilling to stay with us."

"We can talk about all of this later, and you can talk about it for as long as you want," Li Xiao Xue smiled as she cut off Yun Meng Xin. Her gaze fell downwards as she looked at the white-haired girl in Ling Chen's embrace, "Ling Tian, you still haven't introduced this little sister. Where did you find her?"

Ling Chen looked down at Shadissika as he smiled, saying, "She's called Sha Sha, and I... met her at the top of a tall mountain before I brought her here."

"Hehe hi everyone, I'm called Sha Sha!" Shadissika waved her

little hand at everyone, a look of joy and delight on her cute face. She didn't look scared or nervous at all unlike most young girls.

"Wow! She's so cute! I'm going to die from cuteness!" Xiao Qi's eyes shone... the girl's hair was white as snow, and her skin was waxy and smooth. Her face was cute and perfect, looking thousands of times cuter than even the most exquisite doll. This made her simply irresistible to girls who loved cute things, and Xiao Qi couldn't resist as she sprang over and hugged Shadissika, enjoying how soft she felt. This gave Sha Sha a small fright, but she didn't resist. She instead began to smile even happier as she said in a soft voice, "Big sister is very cute as well."

Ling Chen knew that as soon as Xiao Qi saw Sha Sha, she wouldn't be able to resist hugging her. Just as he was about to say something, he suddenly noticed something, feeling incredibly confused.

He clearly remembered that when he had first seen Sha Sha... he felt as if his consciousness had been hit by something, to the point that his mind went blank. Within that white world, he forgot to breathe and couldn't feel his heartbeat; it was as if he was separated from the world... within his eyes, heart, mind and soul, there was only Sha Sha's snow-white face...

And that feeling had persisted for a long time.

The first time he had seen her, he had almost lost his mind and self-control. It was as if the instant he saw her, his soul had been stolen by her beauty. She was so cute and beautiful that no matter how much he thought, he couldn't think of words sufficient to

describe her. This was because no matter how beautiful and elegant words were, they would be a sacrilege to her beauty. If Qi Yue's beauty was to the point that it couldn't exist in the real world, Sha Sha's beauty... was something that could not even be imagined.

But... But...

When Li Xiao Xue, Yun Meng Xin, Yun Feng, Xiao Qiu Feng Mu Bing Yao, and the others looked at Sha Sha, their eyes were filled with appreciation and liking, but they didn't seem overly emotional, much less show the emotions he had felt when he had first met Sha Sha.

Ling Chen's mind was much more powerful than normal people's minds, and he was certain it was much stronger than those of everyone present. However, their reactions when looking at Sha Sha were so normal... if he had been so moved by her beauty, they should have been even more so!

"Meng Xin, Xiao Xue... don't you think Sha Sha is very cute?" Ling Chen asked.

"Of course she's very cute," Li Xiao Xue looked at him in amusement, "It's no wonder you brought her back with you. If it was me, if I saw such a cute girl all by herself, I'd want to take her home... and enjoy keeping a cute loli all to myself."

Ling Chen: "....."

What was going on.

Perhaps everyone’s perception of beauty was different. Maybe Sha Sha’s appearance perfectly fit his definition of beauty which was why he had reacted in such a way... but evidently, this didn’t apply to all people.

That was most likely why.

That was the only reason Ling Chen could find.

Chapter 596 – The Departed Sword Emperor

“Ling Tian after not seeing you for a while, you’ve become so strong! Strong to the point of incredulity! We had so many people, yet we couldn’t stop them. We all fell into despair. When you came back, you scared them witless and sent them packing in an instant. You’re even more overpowered than a legendary Mysterious God grade Boss! If you didn’t come back in time, the new city would have been destroyed by now!” Yun Feng said emotionally. Before, everyone had thought that in those last moments, even if Ling Tian returned, he wouldn’t be able to change the result. After all, the other side had a whole 4 million players… in the end, Ling Tian really had appeared, and the conclusion was truly shocking. Without expending much effort, he had killed many, scared off others, and had even caused the leaders to completely lose all of their face.

None of them could have thought that despite being a player, Ling Tian could have done such a thing. This had completely exceeded the capabilities of players.

“That’s not the whole story.” Before Ling Chen could reply, Li Xiao Xue spoke first, “If Yun Feng hadn’t brought the Disillusion Alliance, we wouldn’t have been able to stop the Yan Huang Alliance’s initial wave. If it wasn’t for Qi Qi returning and the Disillusion Alliance and Snow Moon Loulan being wiped out, the new city still would have fallen. If it wasn’t for Alliance Master Xiao bringing the entire Battle Alliance, the attacking forces would have long since charged to the city. If it wasn’t for the 3 Heavenly Kings bringing the Skyfall Dynasty to help, we wouldn’t have been able to contend with those attacking forces at all.

“Also, if it wasn’t for little Su Su, we definitely couldn’t have lasted for so long. And there was also Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice – if you hadn’t stood guard in front of the Azure Forest Village for so long and chased away all of the players who went there, the new city would have been discovered long ago. Without any of the people here, the new city would not have been able to survive.”

Following this, Li Xiao Xue told Ling Chen everything that had happened in detail – all of the fear and shock, all of the brutal battles, all of the twists, as well as all of the despair and hope. She told him about Xiao Qi’s amazing attack, Su’Er’s miraculous formation, the Battle Alliance’s arrival, and the Skyfall Dynasty’s surprising reinforcement… hearing about all of this, Ling Chen was quite surprised. When he had arrived, he faced 4 million players, but he had never thought that in total, more than 20 million players had attacked the new city! This number caused even him to break out into a cold sweat.

And yet, they had persisted until he had arrived with just the Disillusion Alliance, the Snow Moon Loulan, the Battle Alliance, and the Skyfall Dynasty. This was indeed a miracle.

Li Xiao Xue charmingly rolled her eyes at Ling Chen as she continued, “Finally, the role of the saviour was snatched by the man who arrived late. I know you’ve been busy with something important and didn’t have any time for the new city. In fact, the only connection you have with it is the City Creation Token that you provided to help Meng Xin. However, in the end, the new city came from the City Creation Token that you provided, so you count as one of the parents of the new city. As such, you still have some responsibility to protect the new city. The crisis of the new

city this time was when you were needed the most, and yet you took such a long time to come. If all of these ‘outsiders’ hadn’t paid such a price, can you imagine what the result would have been?”

Li Xiao Xue’s words turned Ling Chen, this ‘saviour’ who should have been thanked, into a irresponsible latecomer who should feel guilty. Thinking to how they couldn’t contact Ling Chen no matter what they tried and that he had only arrived at the last moment, a slight look of displeasure appeared on Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi’s faces. Ling Chen gave a courteous laugh as he quickly said, “Indeed, it’s my fault that I didn’t come as soon as I was needed. Everyone, I’ll remember the favour you’ve done for us today.”

Ling Chen wasn’t surprised that Yun Feng had come. Yun Feng’s temperament was hot-blooded, and he deeply loved Meng Xin. As long as Yun Meng Xin said the word, he would move out the entire Disillusion Alliance without even a trace of hesitation. Xiao Qiu Feng was the same, although if Xiao Qi hadn’t come back, notwithstanding his friendship with Yun Feng, he wouldn’t have come. However, Ling Chen simply couldn’t understand why the Skyfall Dynasty had come to help. With the scale of the attacking forces, even if the Skyfall Dynasty helped, they would only be able to stall for a short while and definitely wouldn’t have been able to save the new city.

Moreover, their forces being wiped out would cause the overall strength of the Skyfall Dynasty to plunge downwards. Furthermore, if the Yan Huang Alliance took the opportunity to attack them, it would be possible that the Skyfall Dynasty would never be able to recover... the Skyfall Dynasty had broken off its partnership with Li Xiao Xue, and they didn’t have any relationship with Yun Meng Xin or himself, so why had they

helped protect the new city without any hesitation?

"Come to think of it, there's someone important who I almost forgot," Li Xiao Xue said. "If it wasn't for her causing the collapse of the Yan Huang Alliance's cavalry at the beginning, the Snow Moon Loulan and Disillusion Alliance definitely couldn't have held back the Yan Huang Alliance's first wave for so long..."

At that moment, a wild gale burst forth as a grey shadow flew out from under the platform into the distance. The Lightning Falcon was simply too fast, and in the blink of an eye, it was already nearly 100 metres away.

"Oh?" Li Xiao Xue paused as she looked at Ling Chen and said in a low voice, "It looks like she's not interested in meeting up with us."

The Sword Emperor departed without any hesitation. Up until she had appeared to now, she had not uttered a single sentence, nor had she even looked at one of them in the eyes. The entire time, she had focused on killing the attacking players and resting. The number of players she had killed... was simply innumerable. It was as if she didn't want the new city to be destroyed and possessed a desire stronger than anyone else to protect it.

She had fallen unconscious for a short period of time, and after she had woken up, she had left unhesitatingly without saying any goodbyes. Seeing her suddenly leave, Ling Chen's mind and heart tightened as an inexpressible emotion crazily spread throughout his entire body as he yelled, "Wait!! Don't go!!!"

The departing figure didn't seem to hear him and continued to fly even further away.

Ling Chen did not hesitate as he rushed to the edge of the platform. Just as he moved, a small hand grabbed his arm as Shadissika's anxious voice sounded out, "Ling Chen are you going to chase after her? I want to come with you."

Ling Chen didn't have time to think. He wrapped an arm around Shadissika and jumped off the platform, landing on Snow Cherry's back. Snow Cherry instantly flew at her fastest speed, turning into a white shadow and speeding off.

The remaining people on the platform looked at each other, not knowing why the Sword Emperor's departure had evoked such a big reaction from Ling Chen. Only Li Xiao Xue slightly frowned before she lightly sighed to herself, "If I was her... what would I do..."

Snow Cherry's speed when mounted was incredibly fast, and there was almost nothing in the Mystic Moon world that could outrun her. However, the Lightning Falcon was also extremely fast – after all, as something with 'Lightning' in its name, speed was its specialty. Although it was carrying someone on its back, its speed was still as fast as lightning. Although Snow Cherry flew at her fastest speed, she was still unable to close the gap between them.

Ling Chen had already used up his 5 Broken Shadows for the day and could only rely on Snow Cherry to desperately give chase. He

held Shadissika against him as he yelled, “Don’t go! I want to talk to you! Hurry up and stop!!”

The Sword Emperor did not look back, as if she had not heard Ling Chen’s voice, nor did the Lightning Falcon slow down. Instead, it cried out, as if it was trying to speed up. As they flew at their fastest speeds, they had flown quite a distance away where there were no humans and only high-levelled monsters.

“Dia Wu! DIa Wu! I know it’s you… I’m Tian Ya!”

In this place where there were no other people, Ling Chen finally yelled out the 2 names he had suppressed within his memories.

He was certain that the Sword Emperor was Xuanyuan Dia Wu… the ‘Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance’ that only he and Xuanyuan Dia Wu knew. That night, she had saved him at the Long family’s residence, her betrayal of the Long family and the Xuanyuan family, as well as her defence of the new city… apart from Xuanyuan Dia Wu, who could she be? If she wasn’t Dia Wu, why would she do all of this?

Evidently, Dia Wu recognised him but… after she left the Long family and the Yan Huang Alliance, she hadn’t come to find him and seemed to be avoiding him. Now that they could be reunited, why did she suddenly leave? Moreover, she \left so suddenly and decisively without saying a word to him.

“Dia Wu! I’m Tian Ya!!”

“You’re Dia Wu, and I’m Tian Ya. We were born on the same day, in the same month, in the same year… we met when we were 5 years old… we celebrated our 6th birthdays together… we ate cake together under the peach blossom tree and there were many pretty peach blossom petals on it… at that time, we both cried… do you remember all of this… Dia Wu!!”

“You taught me how to read, how to do maths, and how to play the violin… for me, you desperately trained with your sword… whenever you learned a new move, you would show it to me… we even created a beautiful style that belonged on to us called Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance…

“I’ll never forget any of this, and I know you’ll never forget it either… Dia Wu!!”

“Dia Wu! Please stop! Why do you have to go?!”

Ling Chen yelled out with all of his strength, and he was sure that Dia Wu could hear him. However, the figure in front of him continued to speed away without stopping.

“Dia Wu, why…” Ling Chen wondered. Did she hate him? But if she hated him, why did she save him on that night? Why would she leave the Long family and Xuanyuan family for him and protect the new city… but if she didn’t hate him, why was she desperately running…

“Snow Cherry, go faster if you can… Xi Ling, help me lock onto her and don’t let her leave our sight.” Ling Chen said in a daze. Xi

Ling's attack range was 200 metres, which meant that she could lock onto targets within 200 metres of her. Once locked on to, the Sword Emperor would be unable to use teleport scrolls or log off.

Chapter 597 – If You're Not Dia Wu...

Snow Cherry was already flying as fast as possible, but after chasing for so long, she still couldn't close the gap between them. Evidently, the Lightning Falcon was just as fast as Snow Cherry. Ling Chen stopped calling out and forced himself to calm down. He instantly thought of something and took out the Twilight Spear while using [Moment of Elegance] to charge forwards.

Swish!!

"Ding... the Libra Orb's effects have been activated, [Moment of Elegance]'s cooldown time has been reset."

Like a bolt of lightning, Ling Chen flashed 15 metres forwards.

[Moment of Elegance] instantaneously shot him forwards, and because Ling Chen was already travelling at high speeds, he closed the gap between the Sword Emperor and himself by 10 or so metres. Ling Chen didn't hesitate to use [Moment of Elegance] again, once again closing the gap.

[Moment of Elegance]'s cooldown time was only 10 seconds, and adding on the Libra Orb's continuous activation, Ling Chen had used it more than 10 times in less than a minute, placing him around 10 metres behind the Sword Emperor... the grey-cloaked figure standing on the Lightning Falcon was right in front of him, and with one more [Moment of Elegance], he would be able to catch up to her.

“Dia Wu! Please stop!! If you’re determined to leave, can you at least give me a reason?” Ling Chen yelled at the Sword Emperor’s back.

Upon hearing this, the Sword Emperor finally reacted. Her right hand, wrapped with grey cloth, swept behind her as a silver light shot out towards Ling Chen’s head.

The piercing light grew larger within Ling Chen’s eyes, and he subconsciously turned his head, the icy sword light passing by his throat. Following this, he felt strange ripples behind him as he looked back and saw that the sword that had just passed by him turned around, piercing towards his back.

This was… Sword Manipulation!

Ling Chen was dumbfounded… when he was younger he had heard Xuanyuan Dia Wu mention that the highest level of the Xuanyuan sword arts was Sword Manipulation. Sword Manipulation was not some sci-fi or fantasy idea, and it truly existed within the Xuanyuan family’s sword arts. When one’s sword intent reached a certain level, they would be able to manifest it to control a sword to the point that they could use it to kill an enemy thousands of miles away.

It was difficult to find a genius who could accomplish this even once in a hundred years. For the rare ones who could accomplish this, they were already old in age by the time they achieved it. Xuanyuan Dia Wu was the same age as he was, and yet she could already use Sword Manipulation!

Ling Chen was utterly shocked, but this was not the time to dwell upon such things. He tilted his body, avoiding the sword that pierced towards him from behind as he locked on to where the Sword Emperor and released another [Moment of Elegance]. His body turned into a ray of light, coming behind the Sword Emperor in an instant. He was now only a palm away from her.

Without thinking about it, Ling Chen let go of the Twilight Spear and Shadissika as he spread out his arms and hugged the Sword Emperor tightly from behind.

“Dia Wu… you can’t run anymore.”

The Sword Emperor stiffened as if she had been struck by lightning. The sword that had been flying in the air lost its sword intent and powerlessly fell down. Everything fell silent for 3 seconds before the Sword Emperor started to vigorously struggle. 4 silver swords chaotically rose into the air around her, stabbing towards Ling Chen from different directions.

Although the Sword Emperor’s attack power couldn’t compare to Ling Chen’s, it was still quite terrifying. On the battlefield, not even the Shield Bearers could avoid being insta-killed by her. Although Ling Chen couldn’t be killed so easily, if he was hit by these 4 swords… the first 2 would be blocked by the Evil God’s Mask, but he would be killed by the next 2.

However, it was as if Ling Chen hadn’t noticed these swords. Despite the swords flying closer and the Sword Emperor’s

struggling, he continued to hug her tightly, unwilling to let go. He pressed his chest against her back as he softly spoke into her ears, “Dia Wu... Dia Wu... I never thought that I would be able to hug you again in my life...”

The 4 swords stopped right before they pierced into Ling Chen, seeming as if they simply couldn’t stab into him. When Ling Chen’s words sounded in her ears and the warmth spread throughout her body, she felt as if all of the strength had left her body, making her feel incredibly weak and causing the swords to fall.

“Let me go!”

The Sword Emperor spoke. The Sword Emperor, who never spoke, actually said something. It was a man’s voice, and it was incredibly hoarse and dry, sounding even worse than an old man’s voice.

“I’m not the Dia Wu you’re talking about... let me go! Otherwise... I’ll kill you!”

Anyone who heard this voice would feel incredibly uncomfortable and imagine a withered demon in their mind. However, Ling Chen smiled and hugged her tighter as he closed her eyes and smelled her, warmly speaking...

“If you’re not Dia Wu, why did your swords stop just then?”

“If you’re not Dia Wu, why don’t you use the system’s lightning to smite me to death for hugging you like this?”

“If you’re not Dia Wu, why would you be able to use [Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance] that day?”

“If you’re not Dia Wu, why would you desperately save me that night, betraying the Long family and Xuanyuan family?”

“If you’re not Dia Wu, why would your heart be beating so quickly?”

“If you’re not Dia Wu, why would you have Dia Wu’s smell? Although we’ve separated for more than 10 years and Dia Wu has grown up, I’ll never forget Dia Wu’s smell.”

“If you’re not Dia Wu, why would I feel so at peace while hugging you?”

“If you’re not Dia Wu… why would you be secretly crying?”

Ling Chen’s hands touched the Sword Emperor’s face, feeling a trace of wetness on the cloak.

Ling Chen’s questions caused the Sword Emperor’s tears to fall. She bit her lips and desperately shook her head, forcing back her sobs. However, she was unable to say anything.

“Dia Wu…” Ling Chen softly spoke, “I know I can’t be forgiven – you gave up so much for me, and despite recognising you back then, I chose to retreat and didn’t go to find you. Instead, I was with another girl…” After taking a deep breath, boundless guilt filled Ling Chen’s chest as he continued, “However, at least give me a chance to make it up to you, alright…”

“I swear to the heavens that over these years I’ve never forgotten about Dia Wu… that night, I was taken by people and buried alive in a remote place. I thought I died, but I was unexpectedly taken by someone to an incredibly terrifying place. There, they cured me of the Isrock Disease, but used my body to do cruel experiments…”

Upon hearing this, the Sword Emperor’s body violently trembled. Just these few sentences caused her to think of a place scarier than hell. She didn’t dare to imagine just what sort of pain and suffering the man behind her had experienced over the years.

“During those years I saw many people die, but I continued to struggle to keep living because I wanted to take revenge… and because I couldn’t let you go. I still wanted to meet you again… 7 years later, I finally escaped from there. After returning to China, the first thing I did was search for you, but I was told that 7 years ago you fasted to death… back then, I went crazy… I charged into the Long family and killed everyone I saw because I wanted to take revenge for my Dia Wu…”

Ling Chen’s hands slightly tightened. After suddenly receiving news that Dia Wu had died, the pain and despair he felt made him do the craziest thing… thinking back, whenever he had gone mad, he had attacked the Long family. Once was because of Dia Wu, and

the other was because of Shui Ruo.

The Sword Emperor's body completely froze as she mumbled, "6 years ago, that person was you... and you did it because..."

"Fate really played a cruel joke on us. You thought I was dead, and I thought you were dead. Although we lived near each other for so many years, we didn't know the other person was still alive. However, these years have been more painful for you. After escaping from the Long family that year, I met a girl called Ruo Ruo. She was like an angel given to me by the heavens who was able to heal my soul. She gave me a new life and a true home.

"During those years, while bearing the pain of losing you, I stayed with her and vowed that I would protect her for the rest of my life so that I wouldn't lose her like I lost you... half a year ago after I fought with you, I saw you use our [Heaven's Edge, Butterfly's Dance]. It made me realise that you were my long-lost Dia Wi... I was delirious with joy, but I also felt afraid... if that wasn't you, the pain after feeling hope would rip apart my heart again. However, if it was you, I wouldn't know how to face you... because if you were my Dia Wu, I would want to hug you tightly for the rest of my life, but I also made a promise to stay with Shui Ruo forever..."

"No one will ever see my eyes again; no one will ever hear my voice..."

When he realised that Sword Emperor could be Xuanyuan Dia Wu, her attire made her think of the words she had said while crying that night...

She thought that he had died, and had sealed herself off. She didn't allow anyone to see her eyes, nor hear her voice... when Ling Chen realised this, he felt like his heart was torn apart. These years, he had been with another girl... Dia Wu's feelings for him had never changed, and yet he had fallen in love with another girl. As such, he felt that there was no way for him to face Dia Wu and love her again.

Chapter 598 – If…

“Although we’ve been apart for 13 years, my feelings towards Dia Wu have never changed. I’ll use the rest of my life to pay back what I owe you, so… even if you hate me and want to punish me… that’s completely fine; just don’t leave me again. I’ve already lost Ruo Ruo, and I don’t want to lose you as well.” Ling Chen hugged the Sword Emperor tighter and tighter as he spoke.

The Sword Emperor was Xuanyuan Dia Wu – this was something that he was certain about. Ling Chen thought that Xuanyuan Dia Wu had avoided him every time they had met and had left so decisively today because he had broken her heart… After all, for her, who had given up everything for him, seeing him with another girl would have crushed her passionate heart. It would not have been surprising for her love to turn into hatred.

When the new city had fallen into crisis, Xuanyuan Dia Wu had come immediately and did her best to protect the city, which meant that she did not completely hate him. Ling Chen had thought that after hearing these words from him, Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s heart would soften, and she would no longer be so determined to leave. However, she began to struggle even more so than before.

“I’m not Xuanyuan Dia Wu… She’s dead… I’m not her!”

She desperately struggled as she screamed. The voice still sounded incredibly hoarse, but it now contained a sense of broken-heartedness and despair that could not be covered up.

Shadissika silently watched them from Ling Chen's side. From the things Ling Chen had said, she had guessed the relationship between them. Ling Chen's words were warm and sincere, and were enough to make any girl's heart melt. She had thought that the Sword Emperor would give in, but she began to unexpectedly struggle even more. Shadissika raised her face in curiosity, looking at that struggling figure... suddenly, her eyebrows jumped as a look of deep shock appeared on her face. Her eyes remained fixed on the Sword Emperor for a long time...

"Dia Wu! How could I not recognise you?!"

"I'm not her... She already died... 13 years ago, she already died... I'm called Feng Xie Yu, not Xuanyuan Dia Wu!"

"Dia Wu..." the Sword Emperor's resistance made Ling Chen feel at a loss as to what to do. Xuanyuan Dia Wu loved him deeply, and even if she resented him, after being apart for 13 years, she shouldn't be like this! Ling Chen continued to hug onto the Sword Emperor, not allowing her to escape as he said sorrowfully, "I know I let you down, and I understand that you must hate me, but..."

"She doesn't hate you!" The Sword Emperor vigorously shook her head as the cloth covering her face became wetter, "Back then, hearing about your death was the cruellest thing that could happen to her, while finding out that you hadn't died was the happiest thing for her. Regaining what she lost; seeing someone 'dead' come back to life, apart from thanking the heavens, what would she hate you for? She only feels endless gratitude towards that girl called Ruo Ruo because she has been with you this entire time. Seeing

you and her live happily together, she only feels peace and happiness… she gave up everything for you, and even if she hates the whole world, she would never be able to hate you. But… I'm not Xuanyuan Dia Wu, she's really… dead… I'm not her!!"

Ling Chen felt shocked, and gradually lost the strength in his arms.

Dia Wu didn't hate him… indeed, it had just been him feeling guilty this entire time. With Dia Wu's gentle personality, no matter what he did, she would not blame him or hate him.

Even if she hates the whole world, she would never be able to hate you…

Was she really not Dia Wu…

No! She was definitely Dia Wu – he was completely sure about this. So why… why…

"Are you really not… Dia Wu?" Ling Chen's arms fell powerlessly by his side as he looked at the Sword Emperor.

After finally escaping Ling Chen's embrace, the Sword Emperor did not try to leave again and instead resolutely shook her head, "I'm not…"

"Then who… are you?"

“I’m called… Feng Xie Yu.” The Sword Emperor tried to suppress the trembling in her voice.

“Then do you know who Dia Wu is to me?” Ling Chen softly asked her.

“……”

“She’s my wife.” Ling Chen spoke incredibly softly and slowly, his eyes filled with warmness.

The Sword Emperor’s body trembled as her tears fell like rain.

Ling Chen looked up, his eyes distant, as if he was speaking to the sky, “13 years ago, Dia Wu hugged me as we were bathed in the moonlight. We sat by the small creek for a long time. She kept comforting me, telling me that I couldn’t lose hope in myself and that she would do her best to save my life… in fact, although I was doomed to die, she took out a red string and bound one end to my right hand’s pinky finger and the other to her left hand’s pinky finger.”

Ling Chen’s gaze became hazy. He could still remember everything that happened that night clearly… he would never forget until the day he died.

“This piece of red string is a symbol that the god of marriage has bound us together. One end is attached to you, and the other end is

attached to me. Big brother Tian Ya, do you know what this means? Hehe... it means that from now on, I, Xuanyuan Dia Wu, has become big brother Tian Ya's wife, from now till forever. Big brother Tian Ya is my husband, and we'll always be together. No matter what happens, we'll never be separated."

"I, Xuanyuan Dia Wu, am willing to become big brother Tian Ya's wife. We were born on the same date in the same month and year, and I'm willing to die with him on the same date in the same month and year. My entire life will only belong to big brother Tian Ya. Heavens, please be the witness of everything I've said. If I go back on any of my words, let me suffer eternal punishment. Please bless big brother Tian Ya and myself so that no matter what happens, we can always be together."

Ling Chen repeated the words that Xuanyuan Dia Wu had said. Although 13 years had passed, he still remembered every single world. This was because they were the most beautiful words he had ever heard in his life, and were memories that could never be destroyed. They were what supported him in surviving his time in 'Heaven' and 'Hell'.

The Sword Emperor's arms violently trembled, desperately trying not to cry out loud.

"Back then, Dia Wu was still a child, but she spoke with sincerity that far surpassed her age. She made a promise towards me, who was fated to die. She bound her life, which had just started, to me, someone who could die at any moment. I will never be able to fully return her feelings in my lifetime. To have a wife like this, even if I suffer ten times more pain and suffering, I'll still thank the

heavens.”

Ling Chen lowered his head as he looked at the Sword Emperor affectionately, a slight smile on his face, “‘Please bless big brother Tian Ya and myself so that no matter what happens, we can always be together’ – those were the words Dia Wu had said and promised. She’ll definitely keep that promise, right?”

“But… I…” the Sword Emperor held her right hand against her chest, sobbing so much that she could barely speak.

“Dia Wu and I have even faced each other’s death,” Ling Chen continued to smile as he stretched out his hand and gently hugged the Sword Emperor. “Even death was unable to keep us apart; what can stop us from being together? I’m not dead, and Dia Wu hasn’t died. However, Dia Wu keeps trying to avoid me. I’m sure that being such a kind girl, Dia Wu must have a reason for avoiding me. She must be facing some sort of trouble, or something has happened to her and she’s afraid of burdening me… is that right?”

“N-No…” the Sword Emperor shook her head as she weakly tried to stumble away.

“Then, is it that Dia Wu isn’t willing to be my wife and be with me?”

“No! It’s not like that!” the Sword Emperor’s voice became more frantic, sounding even more heartbroken.

“If whatever happened to you happened to me, would you want me to leave you or face it together with you? Would me leaving hurt you more, or me facing it together with you hurt you more?” Ling Chen asked.

“I… I…” the Sword Emperor didn’t know what to say and couldn’t help but sob.

“Even death was not able to separate us; do you really think that this thing, which might be incredibly small, can separate us again? Is that really what you want? Do you want both of us to live in sorrow for the rest of our lives?” Ling Chen asked gently. He slowly released the Sword Emperor and faced her, “If you’re determined to say that you’re not my Dia Wu and that you’re not willing to be my wife, you can turn around… but if you are my wife, my Dia Wu… come back to my side.”

The air seemed to freeze and was filled with a sense of sadness. The Sword Emperor’s shoulders continuously trembled, and the grey cloth covering her face was completely wet… finally, under Ling Chen’s gentle and longing gaze, the defences in her heart finally crumbled. To her, it seemed like only this figure that she had yearned for day and night remained.

“Big brother… Ling Tian!”

This cry was filled with lament as well as countless complex emotions, causing Ling Chen’s heart to almost shatter… however, this voice was one of a young woman’s – it was no longer the fake voice from before. She leapt towards Ling Chen, grabbing onto him as she sobbed emotionally as if her heart had crumbled.

Who could understand just how much pain and despair she had felt when she thought that Tian Ya had died? Who could have known just what she had gone through? Who could sympathise with just how joyful, pained and complicated she felt when she learned that he was still alive…

Ling Chen gently placed his hands on her back as he closed his dampened eyes and smiled peacefully. His Dia Wu was finally back. No matter what happened to her, as long as she was willing to come back to him, he didn't care at all.

Shadissika also gently smiled and seemed even happier than Ling Chen.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu's sobs seemed as if they could shock the heavens and move the earth, as if all of the emotions she had stored within her for 13 years had been released altogether. After crying for a few minutes to the point her voice became hoarse, Ling Chen's clothes became completely wet. Ling Chen continued to gently hug her without speaking or moving, allowing her to let out those feelings… to be able to hug Dia Wu like this again, Ling Chen felt as if he was living in a dream.

Finally, Xuanyuan Dia Wu, tired from crying, gradually calmed down. She leaned against Ling Chen's chest as she listened to his heartbeat, putting her weight against his body… to her, this was something that could only happen in dreams.

"Cried enough now?" Ling Chen patted her back as he lowered

his head and smiled. He stretched out his hand and stretched out his hand to touch the cloth covering her face... 13 years... a whole 13 years had passed. He wanted to see just how beautiful Dia Wu would be after 13 years had gone by.

Just as he touched the edge, his hand was grabbed by her cloth-wrapped hand in terror.

“Dia Wu, can I look at you?” Ling Chen held her hand as he spoke in a soft voice.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu did not get up off his chest and spoke in an airy voice, “Big brother Ling Tian, after not seeing you for so many years... you’ve become even more attractive. No wonder there are so many pretty girls by your side. But... But... if I became an ugly monster, would you... still want me?”

“Haha!” Ling Chen laughed, and asked, “If I became an ugly monster, would Dia Wu still be willing to be my wife?”

Xuanyuan Dia Wu immediately nodded, “Of course I would be willing, I... I...”

“Exactly, my answer is the same as Dia Wu’s.” Ling Chen held Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s small hand and said, “We’re husband and wife – for better or for worse, for richer or for poorer, in sickness and in health, till death do us part. Even if my Dia Wu became an ugly monster, beggar, quadriplegic, or an unforgivable evildoer, she’ll still be my Dia Wu, my wife. No one will be able to replace her within my heart.”

Xuanyuan Dia Wu's shoulders began to heave again as the tears that had finally stopped once again poured out again.

"Moreover, my Dia Wu was so pretty when she was younger; after growing up, I'm sure she's become a beauty who can topple countries and not an ugly monster," Ling Chen said as he smiled. After he said this, he felt Xuanyuan Dia Wu's body suddenly shake as a wave of sadness erupted from her body.

Ling Chen's heart thumped as a terrifying thought emerged in his mind...

Could it be that Dia Wu... she...

Could it be that she was avoiding him... because...

Chapter 599 – Devastating Beauty

“Dia Wu,” Ling Chen suppressed the terrifying thought he just had as he slowly stretched his hand towards her face, trying to lift the cloth. “After all these years, my Dia Wu has grown up. Can you let me see the grown up Dia Wu?”

“No!” Xuanyuan Dia Wu grabbed onto Ling Chen’s hand, looking both frightened and worried. She lowered her head as she said in sorrow, “Don’t look, it’s very ugly… worse than a demon…”

For her to say in front of her lover that her face was even worse than that of a demon’s, Ling Chen could almost hear Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s heart breaking.

In that moment, Ling Chen finally understood why Xuanyuan Dia Wu had been avoiding him all this time. He lowered his head as he spoke in his softest and gentlest voice, “Dia Wu… what happened to your face?”

Xuanyuan Dia Wu held onto Ling Chen’s hand tightly and didn’t raise her head. She simply couldn’t allow Ling Chen to see her face. She bit her lips and closed her eyes as she softly spoke, “13 years ago after I heard that you died, I fell into utter despair. I promised to be with you in life and death, so I wanted to fast to death and be with you…”

“However, I am my father’s single daughter, and my mother passed away when I was still young. I hadn’t repaid my father yet, and it would be too selfish of me to die then. As such, Xuanyuan

Dia Wu died and departed with my big brother Ling Tian and I lived on with a different identity... afterwards, my only reason for living was to repay my father for all that he had done for me, and live up to the nurturing that the Xuanyuan family had provided me with. I dedicated myself to training with my sword, and spent all of my time training... perhaps it was because my heart had died and I didn't have anything to distract me, my sword intent progressed incredibly quickly. By the time I was 14, there was no one within the same generation in the Xuanyuan family who could compete with me.

"When I was 15, because I was improving so quickly, there was no one who could even put up with me in the same generation. The family decided to make me the young master of the Xuanyuan family, and I became Long Tian Yun's personal bodyguard both in the real world and the virtual world, following him wherever." Xuanyuan Dia Wu's voice paused for a moment and continued to speak with a slight tremble in her voice, "As someone from the Xuanyuan family, how could I know what sort of person Long Tian Yun was? He's much more lascivious than most men, and before he was 20, he had toyed with countless women. Since I had to stay by his side, I was afraid that... so... so... I used my sword... to cut my face tens of times..."

"Don't say anymore!" Ling Chen yelled.

He used all of his strength to hug Xuanyuan Dia Wu, the pain in his heart suffocating him. He felt as if he was going to burst into tears. When Xuanyuan Dia Wu mentioned that she was chosen to be Long Tian Yun's personal bodyguard, he had a bad feeling. From his memories, he remembered that Xuanyuan Dia Wu was incredibly beautiful, and if she stayed by Long Tian Yun's side, it

was inevitable that he would set his sights on her... when she spoke of the cruel things she did to herself, Ling Chen felt as if he had been struck by lightning.

She had cut her own face... a girl's face had been cut tens of times... tens of gouges, tens of scars would completely ruin her appearance and make her incredibly ugly. She had wanted to maintain her purity for the 'dead' Tian Ya and would not allow anyone to taint her.

To almost all women, the most important thing to them was their beauty. If a woman's beauty was destroyed, it was almost equivalent to their entire life being destroyed. No ordinary woman wouldn't care about their appearance... Xuanyuan Dia Wu had desperately wanted to meet Ling Chen, but because her looks had been ruined, she didn't have the courage to stand in front of him. She felt that she was no longer good enough to be by his side, and would be a blemish by his side... at the same time, no woman would want their lover to see her looking incredibly ugly. At the very least, if she didn't reunite with him, he would still have that beautiful image of her.

Ling Chen immediately realised that his reaction had been quite intense, and he was afraid that it would upset Xuanyuan Dia Wu. He hurriedly calmed himself and held her shoulders as he looked at her, "It's fine, it's all fine. That's all in the past. As long as my Dia Wu can return to my side, nothing else matters. No matter what my Dia Wu looks like, you'll still be the most beautiful girl in my heart, forever."

Xuanyuan Dia Wu didn't say anything and continued to grip Ling

Chen's hand. She understood Ling Chen's heart, and she understood that his feelings were just the same towards her. However, with her face, a face more terrifying than a demon's, would he really not care at all? Would the people by his side not care at all? Could she not care at all?

It was impossible… completely impossible.

No matter how deep one's feelings were, when facing an incredibly ugly face, they would naturally feel repulsed and disgusted. This had nothing to do with love – it was something natural for all creatures.

Humans could control their emotions, but they couldn't control their nature.

The beautiful Xuanyuan Dia Wu and the ugly Xuanyuan Dia Wu could never be the same.

"Dia Wu, can you let me look at you?" Ling Chen had a warm and gentle smile on his face. There was no nervousness or worry on his face, only a sense of heartache and comfort. "Trust me, no matter what Dia Wu looks like now, I'll still like you now and forever."

No matter how scared she was, or how much she tried to run, she wouldn't be able to hide her face from him forever… now that they had finally reunited, was there any reason for her to continue hiding her face… even if she hid it, it wouldn't be able to go back to what it was like before.

“Mm...” She absentmindedly replied. Since Ling Chen had said those things, she couldn’t hide her face forever. She raised her face and put her hands on the cloth covering her face. As both her hands trembled, she slowly took off the cloth as if it took all of the strength in her body.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s face after 13 years was revealed to Ling Chen. In that instant, Ling Chen’s pupils couldn’t help but contract as his vision became blurry... what he was afraid of wasn’t seeing Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s destroyed looks, but that when he saw her face, his heart would ache to death.

Finally, his vision cleared as Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s face was revealed in his eyes as he stared for a long time...

It was a very, very white face, like a piece of white jade. It was even more resplendent than snow under the sunlight. The whiteness of her face was partially because she had covered it up for so many years, but it was also because of her natural looks.

Her slim eyebrows were like beautiful crescent moons, and her eyes were clear and deep like a mountain stream. Droplets of tears hung from her long eyelashes, and her cheeks were glossy and tender as well as slightly red from crying, making her look incredibly beautiful. All of these were arranged perfectly on an equally perfect face. Her long hair was dark and glossy, and fluttered in the wind, making her beautiful white skin seem all the more striking. Her watery eyes looked like the bright stars in the dark night sky, which looked at him with an expression of anxiousness.

So beautiful… within all of Ling Chen's emotions, 2 words floated around in his mind. This incredibly beautiful face reminded him of Xuanyuan Dia Wu's face when she was younger, but was much more beautiful than Ling Chen had imagined… in fact, she was comparable to even Yun Meng Xin.

"Am I… very ugly… and terrifying…" Xuanyuan Dia Wu bit her lips as she said in fright… however, she couldn't tell what Ling Chen was thinking from his expression.

"No!" Ling Chen shook his head and smiled in an incredibly relaxed manner as if all of the pain and gloom in his heart were swept away by a gust of wind. Ling Chen stretched out his hand and touched Xuanyuan Dia Wu's face, carefully caressing her skin as if she was the most perfect work of art in the world. "My Dia Wu turned out to be such a devastating beauty after growing up."

"Big sister's so pretty!" Shadissika also cried out as she gave a cute smile. "It's the first time I've seen such a pretty big sister."

"Eh?" Xuanyuan Dia Wu was stunned. She had thought that Ling Chen's words were meant to be words of comfort, but this little girl… such a young girl wouldn't be able to say such things with such an expression. Normally, little girls would react negatively to ugly appearances, but this girl did not cry out in shock or fear and instead praised her… what was going on?

"Dia Wu, you need to believe that there are miracles in this world." Ling Chen was reluctant to take his hand off Dia Wu's face. He took out a small mirror from his bag and showed it to Xuanyuan Dia Wu and smiled as he looked at her.

Within the mirror was a ridiculously beautiful young woman who was almost too beautiful for words. The instant Xuanyuan Dia Wu looked into the mirror she was sent into a daze, and after a brief pause she cried out and brought her hands to her face.

The girl's face in the mirror was covered by a pair of cloth-wrapped hands.

"Is this me... Is this me... Is this me..." Xuanyuan Dia Wu was so emotional that she was at a loss for words, and when she felt around her face, she could not find those scars. Instead, she could only feel smooth, supple skin.

Ling Chen saved the mirror as he smiled, "This is a real mirror; your big brother Tian Ya bought it for a whole 6 gold coins, so I can confirm it's definitely real. What you're seeing in that mirror is definitely yourself."

"But... But... why's it like this... I..." Xuanyuan Dia Wu was once again at a loss for words. She was filled with joy and shock, but couldn't believe that this was real.

Chapter 600 – Not The Right Time Or Place

Ling Chen hugged Xuanyuan Dia Wu and laughed warmly, “I knew that the heavens would bless such a kind girl like Dia Wu with beauty and happiness. Everything before was only a shattered bubble of ugliness. Haha… the reason is quite simple. Look at me, I was almost killed twice at the Long family’s residence and suffered hundreds, if not thousands of wounds. I even had tens on my face, but now, none of them remain. This was because after many years of special training, my body’s constitution changed, and the wounds quickly healed. Since Dia Wu has learned sword manipulation, your sword intent has definitely reached an amazing level. Perhaps after reaching this level, your body’s constitution changed as well, healing your body’s wounds… if that was possible for me, it’s definitely possible for Dia Wu too.”

Of course, what Ling Chen said wasn’t what he was inwardly thinking. Indeed, his wounds had healed extremely quickly because of his body’s constitution; however, his body’s constitution didn’t come from training, but from being bathed in the medicinal baths prepared by the Mad Scientist in ‘Heaven’ for 3 years. Did Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s wounds really disappear without a trace because of her accomplishments in the way of the sword? Ling Chen didn’t know, but thought that the chances were unlikely. However, this was the only thing he could think of that could convince both himself and Dia Wu. He himself was the best example of what he had just talked about.

“Wuu… wuu….” Lying in Ling Chen’s embrace, Xuanyuan Dia Wu once again started to cry. Just like that, the mighty and awe-inspiring Sword Emperor openly wept. However, this time her tears were not filled with sadness, but deep shock and joy. She wiped her tears away and confirmed that all of this was real and

not just a dream.

Ling Chen let out a long breath and looked up as he smiled, feeling that the entire sky had brightened.

There were only vast grassy plains beneath them, and there was no one to disturb them. After separating for 13 years, they each talked about what they went through over the past 13 years. Although much time had passed, they were still the same people, and their feelings for each other were still the same as well. Although they were both now 13 years older, they didn't feel like strangers around each other and only felt happiness and bliss together.

"This is just like a dream," Xuanyuan Dia Wu mumbled. She held Ling Chen's hand as she felt an ache in her heart. "You've suffered too much over the years."

"No, you've suffered more, and it's all my fault... back then if I had believed that you hadn't died, I would have been able to find you 6 years ago," Ling Chen said in self-blame. He had told Xuanyuan Dia Wu about everything, including Heaven, Hell, the Reapers, Shui Ruo, Tian Tian, Heart's Dream... to this girl, who had not left him even in the face of death and hadn't given up after thinking he had died, what was there for him to hide?

"But if it wasn't for that, you wouldn't have met Ruo Ruo," Xuanyuan Dia Wu said somewhat mischievously. In front of Ling Chen, she still acted like the girl from 13 years ago.

If he hadn't met Ruo Ruo... that was something Ling Chen could not imagine or accept. He shook his head, changing the topic as he asked, "Dia Wu, how did your sword intent progress so quickly? Even your father must have been left behind by you, right?"

"I don't know either," Xuanyuan Dia Wu looked perplexed. "Back then, because my heart had died, I desperately trained like a puppet without any stray thoughts. Maybe that's why. Back then, there was still some distance between myself and father, and sword manipulation seemed like just a dream. However, that time at the Long family, I realised that the intruder was you, and after rescuing you, I didn't return to the Long family and the Xuanyuan family. I secretly looked for you, wanting to protect you in secret, but I never found you. After hearing that you were safe, I hid away.

"After hearing that you were safe, I was so happy that I wasn't able to sleep for a few days. When I couldn't sleep, I would train with my sword. Whenever I trained, I would think about you; that's all I could think of... in fact, sometimes I even forgot that I was training with my sword... when I came back to my senses, I realised that I was still using my sword, but the sword was no longer in my hands but in the air dancing around."

"Could this be the 'attaining enlightenment through passion' of the legends?" Ling Chen sighed in amazement. "As one's emotions fuse with their sword intent, the deeper their emotions, the deeper their sword intent will be. The way of the sword is truly remarkable."

"Perhaps it's like that." Xuanyuan Dia Wu's face was slightly red

as she continued to speak in an affectionate tone, “Afterwards, I continued to train like this... actually, even if I didn’t want to, that’s all I could do because I spent every second thinking about you. That’s something I would not be able to stop doing. Just like that, my sword intent continued to grow, and now I can simultaneously control 5 swords.”

“My Dia Wu is not only a good wife, but a true genius as well,” Ling Chen said in amazement.

“Hehe...” Xuanyuan Dia Wu happily laughed. Without a doubt, this was the happiest day in these recent years. Moreover, this sort of happiness would continue on forever.

There were still a few teardrops left on her face, and her snow-white skin looked extremely glossy. What was even more moving were her clear and watery eyes, looking like 2 stars bathed in water. They were extremely bright, and simply blinking could cause one to feel ripples in their heart. Being reunited with her most loved one made Xuanyuan Dia Wu seem even more beautiful, and every smile she gave was an enchanting scene.

With this sort of atmosphere and in this sort of place, if Ling Chen didn’t know what to do, he would have lived for nothing for the past 20 or so years. He dampened his lips and leaned forward, bringing his face closer to Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s. The approaching manly scent caused Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s heartbeat to become wild, and before she could think of what to do, her soft lips had already been kissed by Ling Chen.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s body slightly trembled, her cheeks turning

extremely red. She opened her mouth, allowing Ling Chen's tongue to delve deeper in her mouth as she shyly avoided his tongue with hers.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu's eyes became extremely misty as her long eyelashes trembled, looking extremely alluring. This was not their first-time kissing – when they were younger, they would often kiss and touch each other in places when no one else was around, and they were familiar with each other's smell. Very soon, their kiss became more and more passionate. As their tongues intertwined, they felt each other's body temperature rising.

"Big brother Tian Ya... g-gentler..." Soon, Xuanyuan Dia Wu was unable to bear it anymore and moaned.

This voice sounded heavenly, and was able to awaken any man's bestial side. Ling Chen's lips left Xuanyuan Dia Wu's lips and slid downwards, kissing her jade-like neck. As Ling Chen kissed and licked his way downwards, Xuanyuan Dia Wu felt her body grow weak as her breathing became more erratic. Her eyelashes trembled as she closed her eyes. Her cheeks felt like they were burning, and her ice-cold skin became hotter and hotter.

There was no one else here, and this place was quite remote. It was unlikely anyone would pass by, and was a perfect place for them to rekindle their love for each other. Moreover, they had just reunited... it was the perfect time and place.

Moreover, they weren't restricted to just expressing their love in mere words. However, the problem was that...

“Ling Chen, does this pretty big sister smell nice?” Shadissika blinked as she asked in a clear voice.

Ling Chen, who was just about to go further, suddenly froze as he inwardly screamed, “Crap! I forgot about Sha Sha! She was beside us this whole time!!!!”

While the 2 of them were stuck together, Sha Sha had been silently standing next to them and watching, making them forget about her existence. Upon realising that she was right there, the 2 people shot apart like lightning.

“You… You… You’re bullying me.” Xuanyuan Dia Wu said with her head lowered, her face extremely red as she embarrassedly looked at Ling Chen. She seemed angry, yet not angry at all, giving her an extremely moving look.

“Ahem.” Ling Chen also felt quite awkward and squeezed Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s small hand as he smiled at Shadissika, “That’s right, that’s right, your big sister Dia Wu smells very nice.”

“Oh, no wonder Ling Chen likes smelling her so much and even secretly licked her.” Shadissika nodded. Her eyes then lit up as she yelled in a cute voice, “I smell nice as well; Ling Chen can come and smell me and lick me if he wants. Don’t just smell that pretty big sister.”

“Hahaha…” Xuanyuan Dia Wu couldn’t help but laugh.

“Err… ah, of course Sha Sha smells the best.” Ling Chen walked over and picked up Sha Sha, giving her a light kiss on her cheeks before bringing her over to Snow Cherry’s back. He held Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s hand and said, “Let’s go, we should go back now. After leaving for so long, they’re probably worried about us.”

With Shadissika as a third wheel, they simply couldn’t get a good atmosphere going. And going further… was even more impossible.

“Go back? Go back… to where?” Xuanyuan Dia Wu suddenly felt quite complicated, and those beautiful figures appeared in her mind… Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su’Er, Li Xiao Xue, Mu Bing Yao… all of the women by Ling Chen’s side were outstanding beauties, and he seemed to possess good relationships with all of them. That was partially why she had left in a hurry earlier.

“Of course, I want to introduce my Dia Wu to my friends.” Ling Chen wrapped his arms around Xuanyuan Dia Wu and placed her on Snow Cherry’s back. After going into her mount form, it was no problem for Snow Cherry to carry 3 people. Ling Chen hugged Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s slim waist and looked forwards, “In the future, Dia Wu can just be Dia Wu, not Feng Xie Yu. In the future, don’t wear these clothes anymore; with how beautiful my Dia Wu is, she should be making all women feel jealous and making all men lose their souls, hahaha!”

Ling Chen loudly laughed as Snow Cherry beat her wings and sped off.